

Visitation ***The Palmer  
Family of Roydon and  
Chelsea***

Mr Ralph Palmer Senior of Chelsea © Pierpont Morgan Library, New York City

***An Account by David Man: This Being a Rough  
Draft***

*May 2015*

### Table of Contents

Table of Contents.....	1
Preamble.....	0
Introduction.....	0
Mathew Palmer (1550? – 1605).....	1
Mathew Palmer’s Will.....	0
Raven Family.....	1
Thomas (1589 – 1631), the eldest son of Mathew and Anne (Raven) Palmer. ....	2
Ralph (1602 - 1633?), the youngest son of Mathew and Anne (Raven) Palmer. ....	3
Edward, (?1598-1677) being the second son of Mathew and Ann (Raven) Palmer ....	5
The Career of Edward Palmer .....	9
The Death of Mr. Andrew Downes.....	9
The Vavasor Family of Waltham Abbey .....	12
The Death and the Will of Edward Palmer.....	15
The ‘Sentence’ of Edward Palmer .....	17
Mathew (1631-1665), the son of Edward Palmer .....	20
Andrew (1595-1658), the third son of Mathew Palmer.....	23
A Note on St. Giles Cripplegate.....	27
Andrew Palmer’s Will .....	28
The Children of Andrew and Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer.....	30
Baldwin Palmer (1635-1651) .....	30
Elizabeth, (circa 1637 - 1657).....	31
Ralph Palmer (I) (1636–1715/16).....	34
The Will of Ralph Palmer (I). ....	39
A Note on St. Luke’s, Chelsea .....	41
Elizabeth Palmer (1664-1686) .....	44
The Palmer – Verney Marriage Negotiations.....	45
The Wedding Takes Place and Visits are made.....	52
After the Nuptials: Visits and Setting up a New Home .....	56
1686: The Death of Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney .....	66
1690 John Verney Becomes his Father’s Heir.....	68
John Verney’s Two Other Marriages.....	69
John Verney’s Early Life.....	75

John Verney's Mercantile Career.....	79
1717 The Death of John Verney.....	82
Cornelia Palmer (1668/69 – 1717) .....	86
The Dunk or Dunck family .....	91
Sir Thomas Dunk's Will: Dated 8 <sup>th</sup> July 1718.....	93
Alice Palmer (1670 – 1745). .....	96
Alice Palmer's Will 1737.....	96
Ralph Palmer (1667/68–1746/47) .....	97
The Marriage of Ralph Palmer (II) to Katherine Ernle .....	100
The Palmer-Verney Correspondence.....	106
The Deaths of Ralph and Katherine (Ernle) Palmer.....	115
The Will of Ralph Palmer II .....	116
The South Sea Bubble .....	118
Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's Receipe Book.....	124
Ralph Palmer III (1712-1755).....	126
Richard Peacock's Will .....	131
George Pecock.....	132
The Murder of Ralph Palmer (III)'s brother in law: George Peacock.....	134
Hamey Palmer (1716 – 1771) .....	143
Hamey Charles Palmer (175? – 1811) .....	148
Julia-Maria Palmer (1753 - 1791).....	150
Note on Nathaniel Gundry, Snr. ....	154
Conclusion .....	155
<b>Ralph Palmer (I)'s Verney grandchildren.....</b>	<b>155</b>
Elizabeth (Betty) Verney (1681 - 1767) .....	155
The Will of Elizabeth (Betty) Verney.....	156
Ralph Verney (II) (1682/83 - 1752).....	159
The Deaths of Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney .....	180
The Will of Ralph Verney II .....	180
Mary Verney (1682 – 1769).....	181
Notes on the Lovett Family.....	188
The Death of Colonel John Lovett .....	192
Mary Lovett Disposes of her Lighthouse. ....	193

The Eddytone Lighthouse Picture .....	196
Mary (Verney) Lovett Visits Liscombe House .....	198
Verney Lovett (1705 – 1771) .....	200
John Lovett, RN (1707 – 1758) .....	205
Elizabeth Lovett and Queen Anne’s Healing Touch.....	207
Margaret Verney (1685-1774) .....	213
The children of Thomas and Margaret (Verney) Cave: Being the great grandchildren of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer.....	227
Verney Cave, 4 <sup>th</sup> Bart. (1705 – 1734) .....	227
Elizabeth Cave (1706 – 1755) .....	229
Penelope Cave (1709 – 1786) .....	232
Penelope Thomson (1742 – 1762).....	234
Notes on Sir Thomas Hallifax (1722-89) .....	236
Thomas Cave, 5 <sup>th</sup> Bart. (1712 – 1778) .....	238
A Note on Lucy Sherard who married Sir Thomas Cave 7 <sup>th</sup> Bart.....	248
The Sons and Daughters of Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney.....	251
Elizabeth Verney (1710 – 1756) and her sister Katherine (Kitty).....	251
John Verney (II) (1711-1737) .....	255
Ralph Verney III, (1714 – 1791); the last male Verney. ....	261
Mary Verney (1737 – 1810.....	278
The Palmer-Verney Houses in Chelsea and the Chelsea Connection.....	283
The Great Storm of November 1703.....	294
The White, Churchill, and Chaloner families and how they are related, maybe.....	298
The White Family of Steeple Claydon .....	303
Helen (White) Starkey (1660 – 1743) .....	304
The Reverend William White (1663 – 1733).....	307
Francis White .....	312
Jack White .....	312
The Churchill Family of Steeple Claydon .....	313
The Will of Henry Churchill.....	313
The Chaloner Family of Steeple Claydon .....	316
The Struggle for the Chaloner Lands at Steeple Claydon .....	320
The Children of William and Christian (Freeston) Chaloner: .....	333



1. Chaloner: Charles (167? – 1727).....	333
The will of Catherine Chaloner, widow of Steeple Claydon .....	338
Will of William Webb of Steeple Claydon.....	339
Will of Charles Harper Gentleman.....	339
William Chaloner, the Parson (1676 – 1736).....	342
The Will of William Chaloner.....	344
Lieutenant Edward Chaloner, RN (1690 – 1766).....	345
Summary of the Will of Edward Chaloner.....	347
The Hamey Family. ....	351
Baldwin Hamey, Snr. The great grandfather of Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney .....	352
Baldwin Hamey, Jnr., (1600-1676) the uncle of Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney.....	357
The Will of Baldwin Hamey, Jnr.....	371
The Portraits of Baldwin Hamey, Jnr.....	373
The Dutch Relatives of Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer .....	376
James Demetrius and Marie Le Grande .....	376
Susannah Demetrius .....	380
James Oeils: the uncle of Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer.....	387
Burials of the children of James and Anne (Gore) (Rustell) Oeils .....	391
The Will of Anne (Gore) (Rustell) Oeils.....	395
The Two Surviving Daughters of James (Jacques) and Ann (Gore) (Rustell) Oeils.....	395
Johanna/Joanna Oeils who married Pere Williams.....	395
William Peere Williams (1664/65 – 1736) .....	396
The children of William Peere and Ann (Hutchins) Williams.....	398
William Peere Williams (c. 1730-1761).....	400
William Peere Williams (1701 – ).....	402
Frederick Williams (1708 - 1805).....	404
George James Williams (1718 – 1805).....	406
Anne Williams ( - 1793).....	407
Mary Williams.....	408
Mary Oeils (1640-1720) and George Johnson .....	414
James Johnson, Rector of Long Meford.....	416
James Johnson Bishop of Worcester .....	417
Baldwin Johnson, the son of George and Mary (Oeils) Johnson .....	418

Marie (de Pettin) Plante: The Sister of Anne/a (de Pettin) Hamey.....	421
The Family of Katherine (Ernle) Palmer.....	422
The Ernle Family.....	423
Earlier Ernle Family History.....	426
Brief Synopsis of the Descent of the Money-Kyrle Estates.....	428
The Alington Family: Being Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's Mother's Family .....	435
The Children of Giles and Dorothy (Cecil) Alington.....	442
Anne Alington (1607-1628).....	442
Susan Alington and the Crane Family .....	444
Dorothy Alington (1603).....	445
Katherine Alington who married Zouch Tate.....	448
William Alington: Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's Grandfather .....	450
William Alington the 3 <sup>rd</sup> Bart.: Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's uncle.....	452
OTHER CONNECTED FAMILIES: TOLLEMACHE, HOPTON, HOWE, SEYMOUR, AND CRANE.....	462
The Tollemache Connection.....	462
The Hopton Family .....	473
Mary Hopton, the daughter of Owen and Anne (Etchingham) Hopton.....	477
Anne Hopton: the daughter of Sir Owen and Anne (Etchingham) Hopton.....	484
Cicely Hopton the daughter of Owen and Anne (Etchingham) Hopton.....	488
Robert Hopton the son of Arthur and Rachel (Hall) Hopton and his children.....	489
The Children of Arthur Hopton (I) and Rachel Hall .....	494
Sir Arthur Hopton (II).....	494
The Sisters of Philadelphia (Ernle) Hopton.....	495
1. Dorothy Hopton (c.1570-1629): The Sister of Philadelphia (Ernle) Hopton.....	495
2. Margaret Hopton: The Sister of Philadelphia (Ernle) Hopton. ....	499
Honora Rogers (1562-1615) .....	501
3. Frances Hopton: The Sister of Philadelphia (Ernle) Hopton. ....	504
4. Willoughby Hopton: The Sister of Philadelphia (Ernle) Hopton.....	506
5. Jane Hopton: The Sister of Philadelphia (Ernle) Hopton. ....	508
6. Anne Hopton: The Sister of Philadelphia (Ernle) Hopton.....	510
The Howe Family.....	515
John Grubham/Grobham Howe.....	515
THE SEYMOUR FAMILY .....	523

The marriage of Elizabeth Alington to Charles Seymour .....	523
The Children of Charles and Elizabeth (Percy) (Cavendish) (Thynne) Seymour .....	530
Introduction.....	530
Algernon Seymour 7 <sup>th</sup> Duke of Somerset (1684 – 1749) .....	530
Catherine Seymour, the daughter of Charles and Elizabeth (Percy) Seymour .....	531
The Children of Charles and Charlotte (Finch) Seymour .....	534
Honora Seymour .....	535
THE FOUR CRANE SISTERS .....	537
Anne Crane .....	537
Susan Crane (1630 – 1667) and the Walpole Family .....	543
Mary Crane .....	545
Elizabeth Crane.....	547
Two of Cromwell’s Generals .....	548
EARLY PALMER FAMILY HISTORY .....	551
Leonard Palmer and his wife Katherine Sloper .....	553
William Palmer.....	554
A Note on Andrew Ormsby/Ormsbie who married two Palmers .....	557
Elizabeth Palmer who married John Sharp(e) and their descendants.....	559
John Sharp MP (1678 – 1727) and the Prowse Connection.....	560
Thomas Sharp, Archdeacon of Northumberland.....	563
The Children of Thomas and Judith (Wheler) Sharp .....	566
William Sharp Sharp (1729 – 17 <sup>th</sup> March 1810).....	566
Granville Sharp: Abolitionist and Philanthropist.....	569
James Sharp: Engineer and Ironmaster .....	569
Elizabeth Prowse (1749 – 1826).....	570
Hannah Palmer the wife of Sir William Rawlinson .....	571
Ann Rawlinson - the daughter of William and Hannah (Palmer) Rawlinson .....	572
Elizabeth Rawlinson the second daughter of William and Hannah (Palmer) Rawlinson .....	576
The Palmer – Le Hunt Family .....	581
The Cracroft Family.....	587
The Bolle Connection .....	592
The Langton – Palmer Family.....	595
Anthony’s son Peregrine Palmer.....	603

Edmund (Mun) Verney and his wife Mary Abell .....	603
The Marriage and Madness of Mary (Abell) Verney .....	606
The Wiseman Connection .....	610
The Pamphlet Wars: Vintner Abell and the Citizens of London .....	614
Early White History .....	617
The 'Divine Sons' of Peter White .....	622
Dr. Robert White, Archdeacon of Norfolk.....	622
Francis White (1564–1638).....	623
John White (1570 – 1615) .....	627
John White's Will .....	630
Francis Whyte (? -1692).....	632
Even Earlier White History.....	633
White - Devis Connection.....	635
Subsequent Churchill History.....	636
Fleetwood Churchill .....	641
The 'Historical' Letters of Ralph Palmer (II) .....	642
The Correspondence Regarding Jonathan Richardson's Portrait of Hans Sloane.....	643
The Letters of Jonathan Richardson and Ralph Palmer (II) on Various Topics.....	646
More Letters to Ralph Palmer (II). .....	658
The Bird Family.....	663
Will of Baldwin Bird of Woodford in Northamptonshire.....	664
Will of Palmer Bird.....	664
Jeremy Bird .....	669
Ralph Palmer's Friend Moses Goodyear or Goodeare.....	672
Hester Goodyear: The Sister of Aaron and Moses Goodyear.....	676
Peregrine Bertie, Ralph Palmer's brother in law.....	677
Bibliotheca Palmeriana .....	681
A Note on the Stone Family of Brightwell .....	685
Thomas Burwell who married Elizabeth Palmer, Hester (Palmer) Cradock's sister .....	689
The Will of Elizabeth Palmer, widow of Edward Palmer .....	691
A Note on John Browne.....	695
A Note on John Packer .....	698
A Note on Henry Chaloner .....	698

The Pamphlet Wars: The White Brothers Versus Catholicism.....	701
A Note on the Nicholson/Nicolson Family.....	703
James family.....	705

## Preamble

This document examines the lives of the descendants of Mathew and Ann (Raven) Palmer using parish records, wills, newspapers, and published books and articles.

The time period covered is mostly from the middle of the seventeenth century to the end of the eighteenth.

The font used here is 'New Courier' but for a direct quote or where the text is taken from some other source, and captions for images, the font is 'Cambria'. As a result we forgo, in most places, the use of quotes as the change in font to **Cambria** will substitute for this.

Female family members who marry are written: First Name (Maiden Name) Married Name e.g. Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney. If married twice then First Name (Maiden Name) (First Married Name) Second Married Name, e.g. Mary (Nicholson) (Verney) Calvert.

The word 'baptised' or 'baptized' has two spellings. Earlier English records use *baptized* which is current in American English whereas present day British English records use *baptised*. Both forms will be found here reflecting British usage over time.

This paper contains some narrative and a lot of numeric and calenderal data and descriptions of genealogical relations and so it is more a work of reference to be dipped into on occasion rather than read for anything like pleasure. Since it has a unique perspective, much of what is gathered here has never before been seen or if it has then not displayed in a similar context.

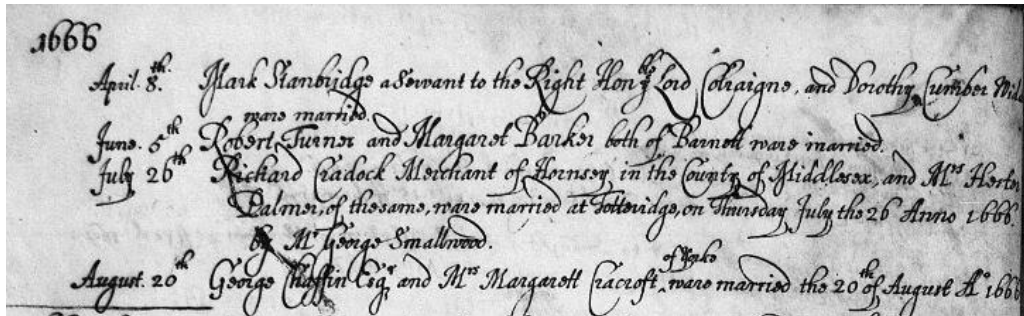
The genealogical charts are intended to display connections among families in order to support and clarify the text and are not intended to be exhaustive depictions of each and every family membership. Furthermore, the order in which siblings appear may not always reflect their actual chronological relationship. Thus a younger sibling may appear before an older one and some individual family members may be omitted. All this is done in order for connections to be more easily discerned.

## Introduction

In about 1635 Tobias Cradock (1603-1671), barrister at law of Gray's Inn, married Susannah Bourne (1605-1697/96) and they had

at least two children: Susannah (1637-1710) and Richard (1640-1712).

Richard Cradock married Hester Palmer on 26<sup>th</sup> July 1666, at St. Andrew, Totteridge in Hertfordshire.



July 26th Richard Cradock Merchant of Hornsey in the County of Middlesex, and Mrs Hester Palmer, of the same, were married at Totteridge on Thursday July the 26 Anno 1666  
by Mr Thomas Smallwood

This was preceded by a marriage allegation dated 23<sup>rd</sup> July between:

Richard Cradocke, of Hornsey, Midd., Mercht, Bachr, abt 31, & Mrs Hester Palmer, of the same, Spr, abt 20, at own disp., her parents being dead; at St Mary Le Bow, Lond., or Totteridge, Herts.

We do not have a baptismal record for Hester but we know that, based on her father's will, she was the youngest daughter of Andrew and Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer and the granddaughter of Mathew and Ann (Raven) Palmer.

Richard and Hester (Palmer) Cradock had a number of children (all baptised at St. Mary's, Hornsey) among whom were two daughters: Sarah (1667-1748) and Susannah (1668-1743) and two sons: William (1676-1746) and Richard (Jnr.) (1684-1748). Details on the lives of these children can be found in [The Families and Descendants of Susannah and Sarah Craddock](#).





St. Mary's Hornsey where all the Cradock children were baptised  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

The main focus of this paper is on the Palmer family and in particular Hester (Palmer) Cradock's brother Ralph Palmer and his daughter Elizabeth, who married John Verney, and their descendants.

The connection between the Palmer family and the Man family is somewhat circuitous and is as follows: Richard Cradock's sister, Susannah, married Dr. Henry Barnes (1631-1701) and they had a daughter Susannah (1663-1737) who married John Balchen (1658-1721). John and Susannah (Barnes) Balchen had a son Richard (1692-1738) who married Martha Hitchcock (1698/99-1766) and they had (among other off spring) a daughter Mary (1721-1798) who married John Man (1718-1783) (i.e. Cradock > Barnes > Balchen > Man, see chart).

Because this 'paper' has been prepared by a descendant of Richard Cradock's sister Susannah, note will be made of a Cradock connection which would probably not, in the context of the Palmers, otherwise have been made.

As a family history mostly concerned with the births, marriages, and deaths of its members, the target audience is limited. Occasionally, events of a public nature in which some family member or other was involved are included. And, in the case of the Palmer family, we are fortunate in that many of their letters have been preserved and can be found among the Verney archives of Claydon House in Buckinghamshire, the Bodelian Library at Oxford, and other archives and rare book libraries.

The following is from: *The Genealogical Gaze ...* by Eric Ketelaar in *Libraries & the Cultural Record*, (2009), Vol. 44, Issue 1:

A famous cache [of family papers] was discovered in 1826 at Claydon House in Buckinghamshire, home of the Verneys. Sir Harry Verney (1801-94) found "a wainscoted gallery at the top of the house, forty feet long, full of boxes on tressels containing bundles of letters, acres of parchment" -- the papers of fourteen generations between 1495 and 1810. The Verney archive contains probably the largest unbroken body of family letters from seventeenth- and early-eighteenth-century England. More than thirty thousand personal papers from 1643 to 1754 are available on microfilm.

The discovery in 1826 was an accident, but not so the preservation of the archive: each generation taught the next to protect the papers that recorded their family history. Sir Ralph Verney (1613-96) had deep feelings about his family's importance, and it was he who began saving every scrap of correspondence, including the 638 letters he wrote and the 1,194 he received. His son John (1640-1717) [who married Elizabeth Palmer] ... compiled volumes of genealogical material [and spent], countless hours rereading letters and adding the titles, marriages, occupations, and social status of people who were mentioned in them.

As a result historians have come to consider this collection of family letters as among the most important from the sixteenth, seventeenth, and eighteenth centuries. Previous scholars and authors who have consulted the archives have produced books such as: Randall Davies (1904) *Chelsea Old Church*; Verney, F.P. & Verney, M.M. (1892) *Memoirs of the Verney Family During the Seventeenth Century* (Four Volumes); Verney, M.M (1930) *Verney Letters of the Eighteenth Century from the mss. at Claydon House* (2 Volumes); and Whyman, S.E. (1999) *Sociability and Power in Late-Stuart England: The Cultural Worlds of the Verneys, 1660-1720*, and various articles written by John Broad and others. So far this writer has been unable to consult the archives directly himself and has had to rely mostly on these secondary sources for what appears below.

The reasons that such writers have consulted the Verney letters have been to find out how lives in general were lived back then and about the Verney family in particular. None of these writers have looked at the collection with the aim of this writer namely as to what light the letters might throw on the Palmer and related families such as: Craddock, White, Chaloner, and Churchill.

However, despite the lack of direct access to the archives and a difference in purpose as to their use by those who have, this writer has managed to gather enough material from those already published sources to flesh out some details of the Palmer family and these are presented here.

We are also fortunate in that Ralph Palmer (II), Hester (Palmer) Cradock's nephew, enjoyed writing, *When ... writing my pen is never weary*.<sup>1</sup> [Whyman, p.6] which resulted in over a hundred letters from him among those collected at Claydon and elsewhere. So, although many of the persons noted here left scant if any evidence of themselves, we have been able to recover enough about them to give, in some cases, an idea of their lives.

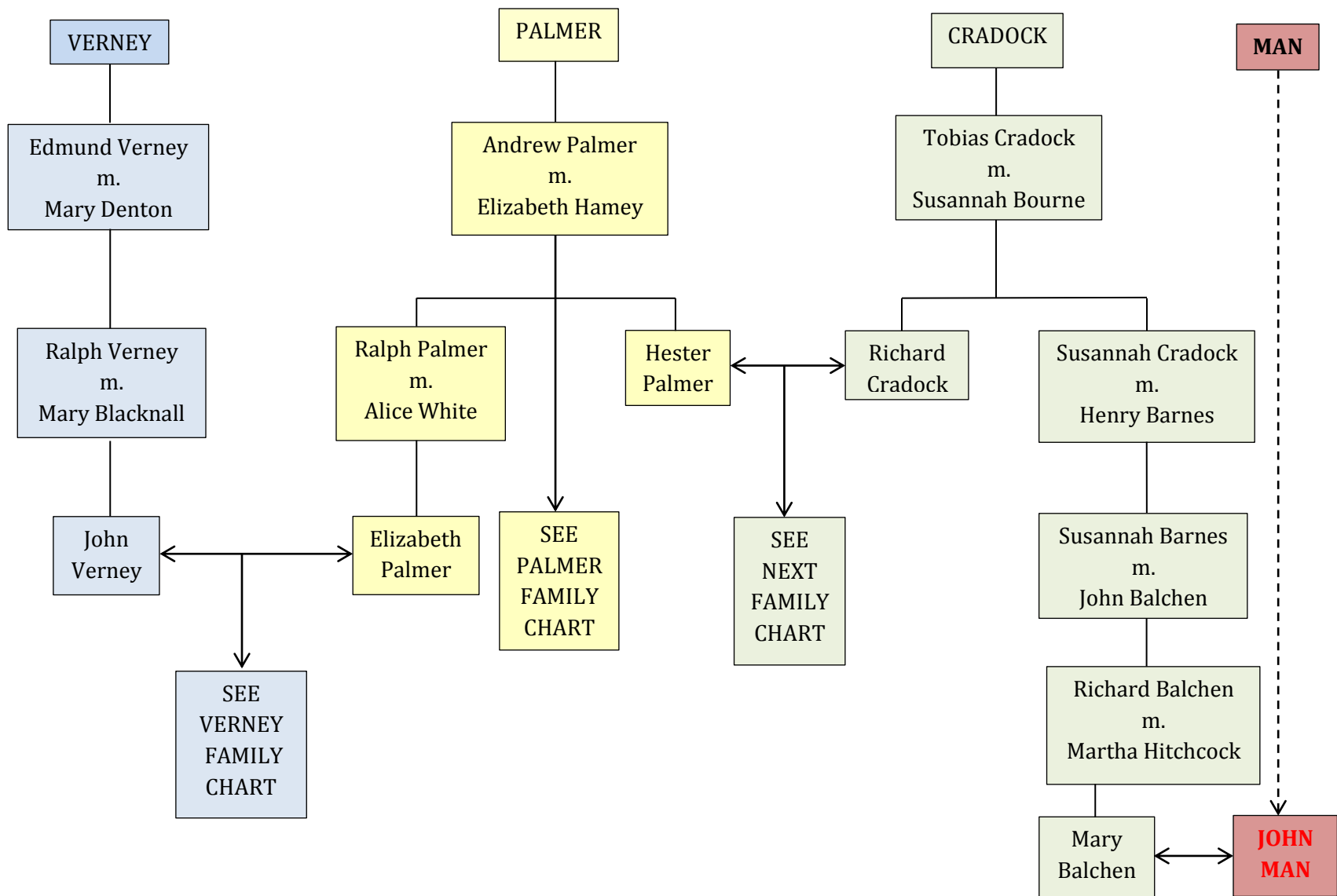
The use of (I) and (II). In three consecutive generations of both the Verney and Palmer families there are three Ralphs: Ralph Verney the father of John, John's son Ralph Verney and Ralph's son Ralph. Likewise among the Palmers there is Ralph Palmer the father of Elizabeth who married John Verney, Ralph Palmer the son of Ralph and brother of Elizabeth, and Ralph the son of Ralph. To distinguish among these various Ralphs we shall refer to Ralph (I), (II), and (III). If however the context makes it very clear which one of these three Ralphs is being referred to, then we suspend the use of Roman numerals.

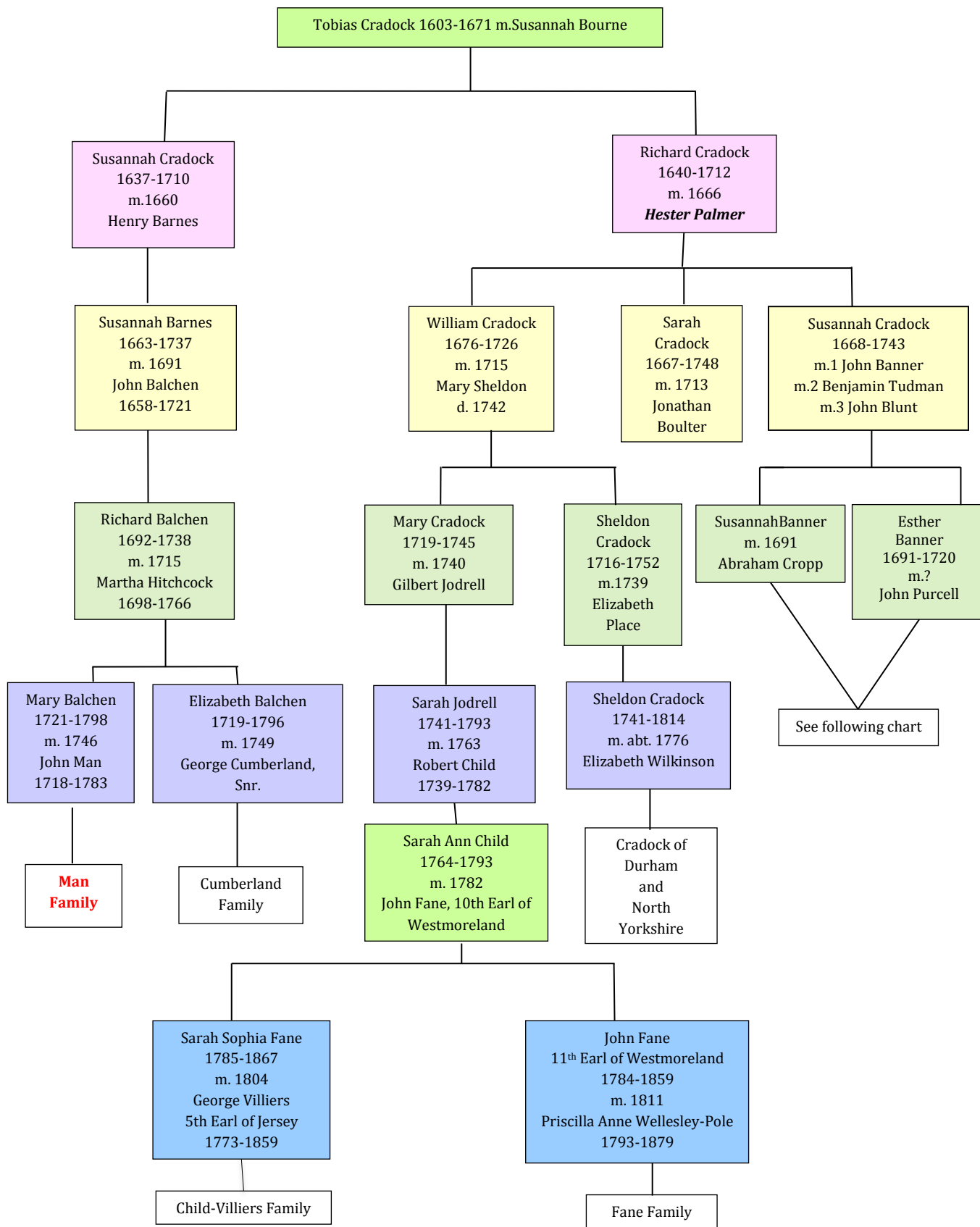
Certain events in John Verney's life such as his upbringing in France, his twelve years as a merchant in Aleppo, and his standing for parliament and career as an MP, are only mentioned briefly because the focus of this paper is on the relationship between the Palmer and Verney families.

If a family member has extensive biographical information available elsewhere in such sources as Wikipedia, The Internet Archive, the Dictionary of National Biography (DNB), The History of Parliament, etc., the reader is referred to these rather than their material being included here as this is for the most part a genealogical not a biographical study.

---

<sup>1</sup> Letter to his nephew Ralph Verney (II) dated 23<sup>rd</sup> September 1715.





### Mathew Palmer (1550? – 1605)

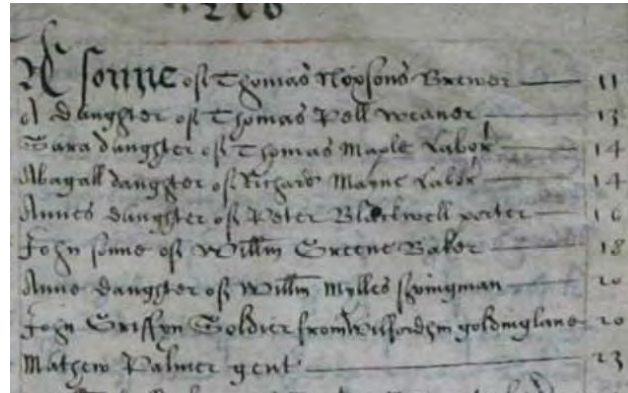
Mathew Palmer was the son of Christopher and Helen (Bowes) Palmer. Records of Mathew's birth and baptism have not yet been recovered.

His mother was the daughter of John Bowes of Miningsby in Lincolnshire. Beyond this we know nothing of Mathew's mother's side.

Mathew married Anne Raven the daughter of Roger Raven of Long Melford, Suffolk in about 1588-89.

Mathew and Anne had five children all baptised at St. Giles, Cripplegate: Thomas baptised on 14<sup>th</sup> December 1589, Edward, Elizabeth baptised on 16<sup>th</sup> December 1590, Andrew baptised on 9<sup>th</sup> December 1595, and Ralph baptised on 20<sup>th</sup> October 1602 (IGI Batch Number C02243-2).

Mathew died on 18<sup>th</sup> May 1605 in the parish of St. Giles, Cripplegate and was buried there on 23<sup>rd</sup> May 1605 (last line).



Mathew Palmer gent 23

Ann died toward the end of June 1630 and she too was buried at St. Giles, Cripplegate on the 30<sup>th</sup> of that month. However, a search of the parish records has so far failed to retrieve her record.

Soon after his decease a monument was placed on the north wall of St. Giles in memory of Mathew and his family. However a visit to the church in 2012 established that the monument no longer

exists having been destroyed in the bombing that the church and its surroundings (the Barbican) sustained during World War Two.

Below is a description of Mathew's monument found in: *An Account of the Church and Parish of St. Giles without Cripplegate ...* by Sir John James Baddeley.

A monument to Mathew Palmer and his family is placed under the clock in the north aisle, and consists of the recumbent figures of the deceased and his wife, and in the panel below their five children, kneeling; immediately below which is the original inscription and a well-designed Cherub. Underneath all is a tablet with the inscription added in 1712. The whole monument is small compared with others of the same date, but the figures are beautifully sculptured and in an excellent state of preservation.



The memorial to Mathew Palmer at St. Giles without Cripplegate. Below the recumbent figures of Mathew and Anne (Raven) Palmer are their five children kneeling. On the right is their only daughter Elizabeth and left are their four sons – first the eldest Thomas followed by Edward, Andrew, and Ralph on the far left.

The original inscription was as follows:—

Here lyeth the body of *Mathew Palmer*, Esqr. who died ye 18th of May, 1605, together with *Anne*, his wife, who died ye laste day of June, 1630, by whome he had four sonnes and one daughter, viz.:—Thomas Palmer, his eldest sonne, deceased, the fifth of May, 1631, and here also buried, Elizabeth, Edward, Andrew, and Ralfe, who, when it also pleaseth God, desire this place for the custodie of their bodies, likewise, till their assured and glorious resurrection.



There seems to be no mention in the parish records (excepting in the Register of Burials) of Mathew's name, or of any work done by him for the parish or church that received his remains, but he was evidently of some note. [By his will he bequeathed five shillings to the poor of the parish]

The following was added to the inscription in 1712:

This is a very ancient family, and originally of Winthorp, in Lincolnshire, bearing for their arms — Argent three pilgrims' staves sable, ye heads and points or, and for their crest, being placed above an helmet, a man's arms couped, ye sleeve azure, cuff argent, and hand proper holding a palmer's staff, sable, garnishd or.

He whose monument this is was of Cotes, in Nottinghamshire<sup>2</sup>, and had an honourable employment in ye Exchequer. His wife was Anne, ye daughter of Roger Raven, Esqr. whose arms were argent, a raven rising proper, by whome he had issue ye Children above mentioned, Edward lyes here interred, as likewise does Mathew Palmer, Esqr. of ye Middle Temple, ye son of that Edward. Andrew Palmer, Esqr- (a person of approved loyalty), of Hertford, was bury'd here too, who by Elizabeth, sister to Baldwin Hamey, of London, M.D., left one son, Ralf Palmer, Esq., of Little Chelsey, in ye County of Middsx - who by Alice (of ye family of that learned prelate Dr- Francis White, sometime Ld - Bp- of Ely), had issue Ralph Palmer Esqr - of ye Middle Temple, who repaired this monument of his ancestors, A.D. 1712, having at that time a son born, Ralph Palmer, by Catherine sole issue of Sir John Ernle, Kt - (sometime Chancellor of the Exchequer), by his second lady, Elizabeth, relict of Charles Ld- Seymour. His [Mathew's] youngest son, Ralph Palmer, Esqr. died a bachelor, and lyes interred in a porch of his own erecting at Broxborne Church, in the county of Hertford.

The 'honourable employment' in the Exchequer mentioned above refers to Mathew's position as one of the clerks of the pipes. [Wikipedia](#) describes the pipes as:

.... the records of the yearly audits performed by the Exchequer of the accounts and payments presented to the Treasury by the sheriffs and other royal officials; and owed their name to the shape they took, as the various sheets were affixed to each other and then rolled into a tight roll, resembling a pipe, for storage. They record not only payments made to the government, but debts owed to the crown and disbursements made by royal officials. Although they recorded much of the royal income, they did not record all types of income, nor did they record all expenditures, so they are not strictly speaking a budget.

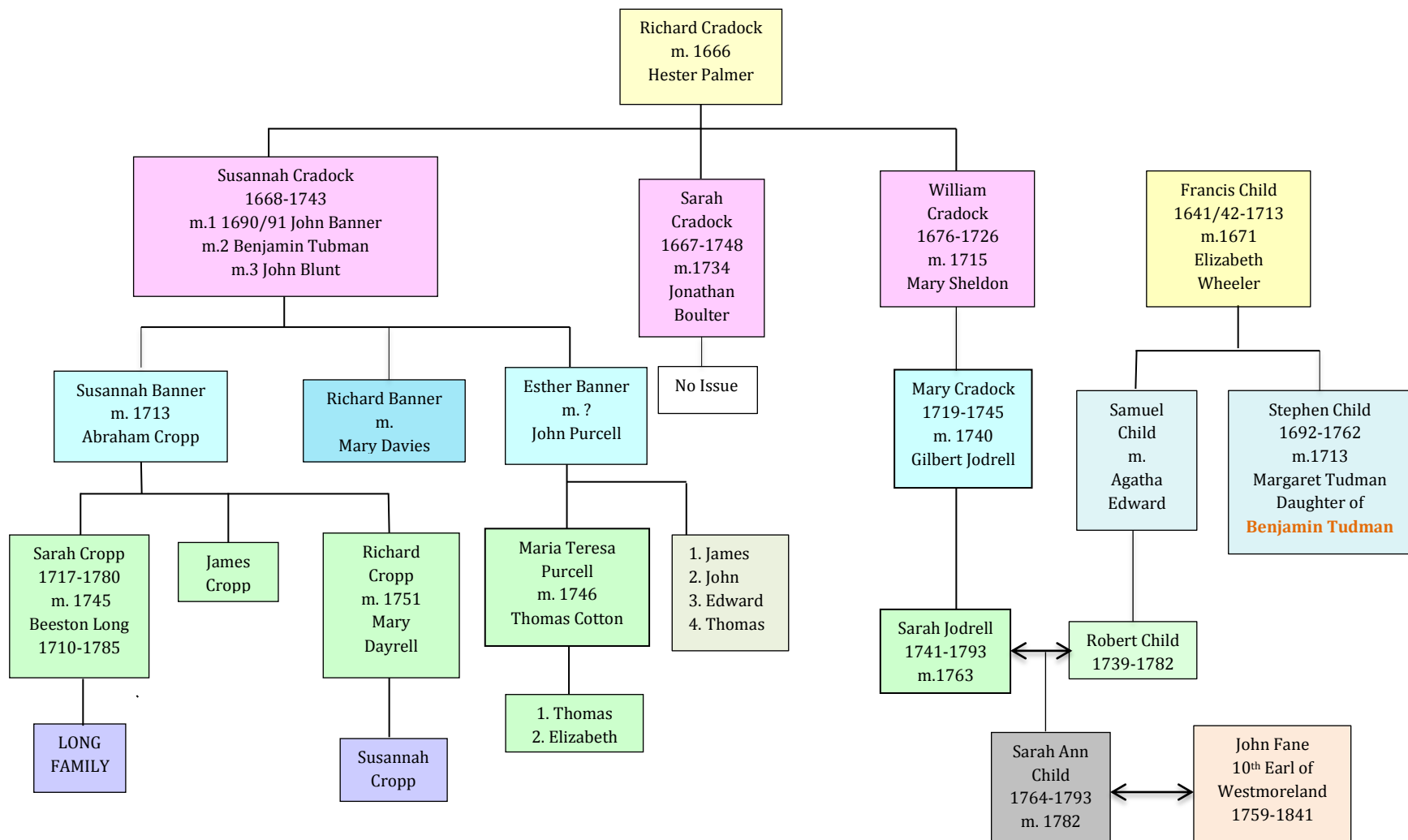
---

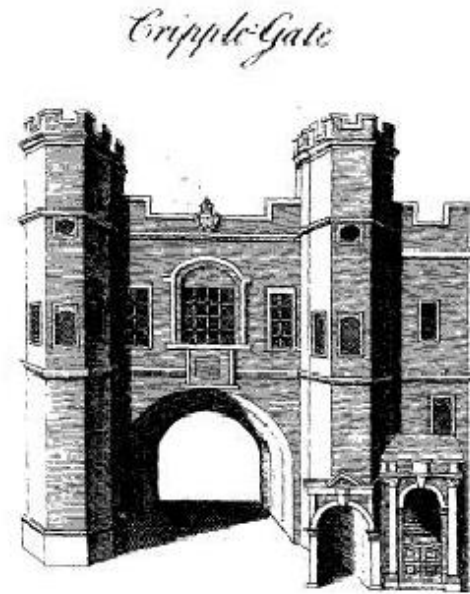
<sup>2</sup> Coates is about 15 miles north of Lincoln

The somewhat obscure reference to Andrew Palmer as a 'person of approved loyalty' will be revealed in Andrew's section.



The graveyard at the back of St. Giles, Cripplegate with part of the old London Wall  
© The Trustees of the British Museum





The Cripple Gate  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

### Mathew Palmer's Will

On 28<sup>th</sup> September 1603, Mathew Palmer of London, Gent, wrote his will in which he states that Anne his wife shall have an annuity or 'yearly note of one hundred pounds' payable out of the Manor of Yoilsby [?] and other lands there in the county of Lincoln for and during her natural life. He does not mention his eldest son Thomas who was still living perhaps because Mathew had already settled land on Thomas before writing his will. The will then goes on:

I give to Edward Palmer my second son and his heirs all my lands hereditaments whatsoever in Coates [Cotes] in the County of Nottingham. Item I do give to Andrew Palmer my third son and to his heirs all those my demeane of the manor of [?] in the county of Nottingham. Item I do give to Ralph Palmer my fourth and youngest son and his heirs all those my two farms called Nearsopp and Eolland withal and singular the lands tenements and hereditaments in North Leverton in the said county of Nottingham. Item I do give unto my daughter Elizabeth Palmer toward her maintenance and preferment in Marriage five hundred pounds in money And to my brothers in law Miles [Myles] Raven, John Raven, and William Raven, and to their sister Audrey five pounds each. And to every of my maid servants xx. And to the relief of the children in Christ's Hospital in London forty shillings and to the poor of the parish of St. Giles without Cripplegate.



**St. Giles, Cripplegate**  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

Mathew's lands in Nottinghamshire were the subject of two court cases - one in 1597 and again in 1598 and were brought against Palmer by Michael Wentworth. These cases involved a claim by purchase of a tenement known as The White house and other land in North Nottinghamshire, Leverton, North Leverton, Applestropp (alias Happlestropp) and Cotes, the inheritance of Peter Roos, esq., Marmaduke Kendall and Percy Kendall (his son) lands that Michael Wentworth had purchased from the Kendalls. (See: [Calendars of the Proceedings in Chancery in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth](#) ..., Volume 3). However what this case was about exactly, why it was brought, and what its outcome was is not known. These parcels of land are mentioned in various latter Palmer wills and are passed down through several generations.

### Raven Family

As noted above Mathew Palmer married Anne the daughter of Roger Raven of Long Melford in Suffolk; although we know little about this family. A marriage record for a Roger Ravens [sic] and Ann Sperpoint dated 1564 at Long Melford has been found.

Anne (Raven) Palmer's birth probably occurred in approximately 1569. According to Mathew's will his wife Anne had three brothers: Miles, John, and William.

A Miles Raven appears on one of the surveys of London dated 1569. Miles' household consists of his wife Anne (Scriven) Raven

and son William against whom the initials MTS appear (Merchant Taylor's School). Anne Scriven had first married Thomas Ballander of St. Antholin on 14<sup>th</sup> May 1547 but he died on 13<sup>th</sup> August 1548. A son of that marriage Timothy was born 1549, baptised on 2<sup>nd</sup> March and was buried on 17<sup>th</sup> March. Anne (Scriven) Ballander then married Miles Raven on 13<sup>th</sup> July 1549. A record of William Raven entering the Merchant Taylor's School on 2<sup>nd</sup> September 1569 has been located:

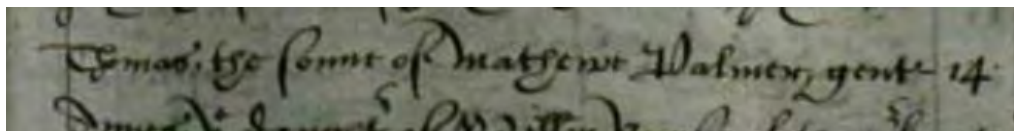
<i>Merchant Taylors' School Register.</i>	13
<hr/>	
Christopher Senyor, s. of <i>Edward</i> , clothworker.	
John Fawcet, <sup>1</sup> s. of <i>Miles</i> , clothworker.	
2 Sep	William Raven, s. of <i>Miles</i> , merchant taylor.

It was probably this William Raven who witnessed his cousin Edward Palmer's marriage settlement (see page 7).

However we are unable to state precisely how this Raven household connects with 'our' Raven family.

Thomas (1589 – 1631), the eldest son of Mathew and Anne (Raven) Palmer.

Thomas Palmer, the eldest son of Mathew and Anne (Raven) Palmer, was baptised on 14<sup>th</sup> December 1589 at St. Giles, Cripplegate.

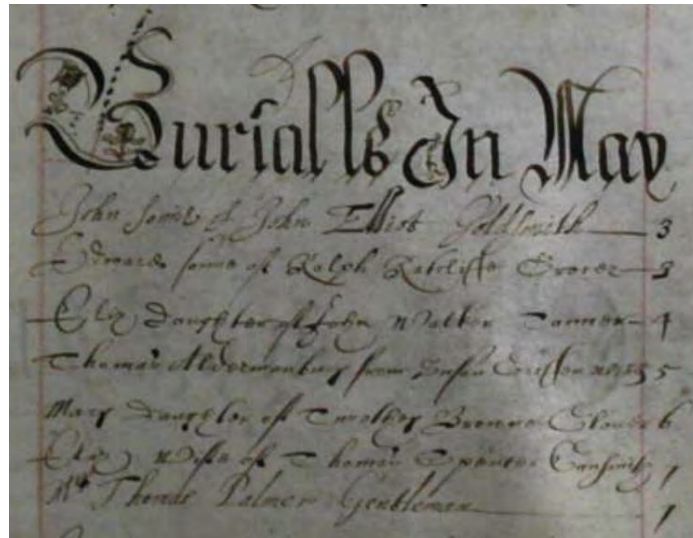


Thomas ye sonne of Mathew Palmer, gent 14

Thomas died on 5<sup>th</sup> May 1631<sup>3</sup>, aged 41 years, and was buried on 7<sup>th</sup> May 1631 at St. Giles [last line]. So far, no record of a marriage has been found and it is assumed that Thomas never married.

---

<sup>3</sup> According to the wall monument at St. Giles noted above.

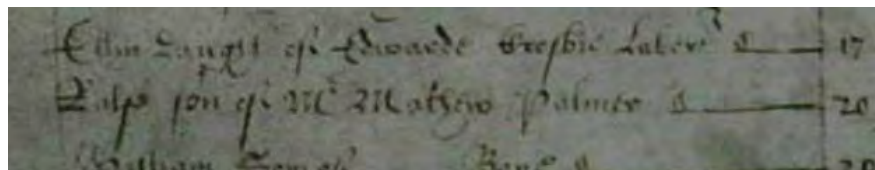


Mr Thomas Palmer Gentleman 7

As noted above Thomas is not mentioned in his father Mathew's will, but he made a will and had land to dispose of as this is referred to in his younger brother Edward's will. So far the search for Thomas's will has not been successful.

Ralph (1602 - 1633?), the youngest son of Mathew and Anne (Raven) Palmer.

Ralph (or Rafe or Ralf) was born in October 1602 and baptised on the 20<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. Giles, Cripplegate.



Ralph son of Mr Mathew Palmer ..... 20

According to his father's wall monument, Ralph died a batchelor and was buried at Broxbourne in Hertfordshire ... in a porch of his own erecting.





Broxbourne Parish church where Ralph Palmer was buried.  
© Trustees of the British Museum

There are two references to the Palmer family in connection with Broxbourne church. The first in [\*A History of Hoddesdon in the County of Hertfordshire: Being a Survey\* ... by J. A. Tregelles, et. al.](#) describes the porch erected by Ralph but refers to him as being the son of Andrew which is somewhat confusing since the Cripplegate monument refers to the Broxbourne Ralph as the son of Mathew. Thus the *A History of Hoddesdon* states that:

The south porch, a well-designed piece of Renaissance work, bears on a shield the arms of Palmer with a martlet for difference, and the manor court rolls show that about the middle of the seventeenth century there was living in Broxbourne, Andrew Palmer, "armiger." He was succeeded by a son Ralph, and it was doubtless one of these who gave the porch to the church in place of that, possibly of timber, which is shown as standing in 1573.

The second Palmer-Broxbourne reference is to be found in [\*Transactions, Volume 1 by East Hertfordshire Archaeological Society\*](#):

The church plate, which is very fine, comprises a chalice with cover dated 1605, and a second dated 1824. There are two massive flagons, a plate, inscribed as 'the Gift of Mr. Raphe Palmer to ye Parish Church of Broxborne and Hodsdon, 1633'

Ralph did not marry and his elder brother Thomas appears not to have done so either and although Edward, Andrew, and Elizabeth did marry and have children, only Andrew has descendants.

This Ralph is not included in the numbering system we have adopted for the other three Ralph Palmers. Instead, we begin this system with his nephew, Ralph (I) the son of Andrew.



Broxbourne and the River Lea  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

Edward, (?1598-1677) being the second son of Mathew and Ann (Raven) Palmer  
Edward Palmer was the second son of Mathew and Anne (Raven) Palmer. A baptismal record has not yet been located, but we assume he was born circa 1598.

In 1629 Edward married [Millicent Vavasor](#) at All Saints, Theydon Garnon in Essex<sup>4</sup>. She was the youngest daughter of Nicholas Vavasor (or Vavasour or Vavasseur) of Waltham Abbey and Philipa Copleston daughter of Anthony Copleston of Weeke/Wyke near Torrington in Devon. A baptismal record at Waltham Abbey for *Millesaint* Vavasor is dated 13<sup>th</sup> October 1593.

Edward Palmer was Millicent's second husband, she being the widow of Edmond Winch/Winche of Woodford.

---

<sup>4</sup> Boyd's Marriage Index 1538-1840

According to *A History of Waltham*, the name of Palmer can be found in the register of that parish as far back as 1568. Another source states that the family of Palmer had resided for centuries in the parish of Nazeing, and there is a fine brass of Thomas Palmer in Epping old church.

However this writer believes that the Palmer family of Waltham / Epping / Nazeing as mentioned in *A History of Waltham* and other local accounts is not the same as 'our' Palmer family as 'ours' originated in Lincolnshire and was only in Essex and Hertfordshire at the very end of the sixteenth century.

In the parish register of Waltham the following notices occur of the children of Edward and Millicent (Vavasor) (Wyke) Palmer:

Matthew baptized on 29<sup>th</sup> December 1631; Thomas baptized on 7<sup>th</sup> February 1632/33; Millicent baptized on 14<sup>th</sup> August 1634; Mary baptized on 19<sup>th</sup> December 1636. [See also IGI 004298752]

Millicent (Vavasor) (Wyke) Palmer died in June 1656 and was buried on the 30<sup>th</sup> of that month at Waltham Abbey (IGI Film No 1526972).

Thirteen years after Millicent's death Edward married Elizabeth Staunton of Broxbourne in Hertfordshire. Elizabeth was considerably younger than Edward and they did not have children.

As we have already noted, Edward and his first wife, Millicent, had four children; however only the eldest, Mathew, survived and went on to marry, although he does not appear to have had children. Thus there do not appear to be any descendants of Edward by either marriage.

During the course of May 1669, by which time Edward was almost seventy years old, a series of legal documents were drawn up which were intended to smooth the way to Edward and Elizabeth's marriage. These documents, which are at the [National Archives](#), include a revocation of a deed poll and an indenture.

Revocation by deed poll by Edward Palmer of Broxbourne, Hertfordshire, esquire of trusts of a deed dated 24 January 1667-1668 between himself and Sir John Monson KB and Baronet of Burton next Lincoln, Sir John Monson, KB, his son, and William Raven, Citizen and weaver of London; 3 May 1669. Concerning messuages and lands called Coates [Cotes]

near the Trent in the parishes of North Leverton and Habbleshthorpe, the inheritance of Matthew Palmer, deceased, father of Edward and messuages and lands in Sawbridgeworth, Hertfordshire, which came to Edward from Thomas Palmer, his brother, deceased, messuages and lands of Edward Palmer in Little Hadham, Hertfordshire and fee farm rents in Sussex and Kent, the use of all henceforth to be to Edward Palmer.

The reference to Edward inheriting land from his elder brother Thomas would suggest that Thomas wrote a will but none has yet been found.

Also on 8<sup>th</sup> May 1669:

By Edward Palmer of Broxbourne, Herts, esq., to Sir John Monson senr. of Burton next Lincoln, K.B. and a bart., with Elizabeth Staunton of Broxbourne, gentlewoman, as a party of the 3rd part - in consideration of an intended marriage between the said Edw. Palmer and the said Elizabeth Staunton - of messuages, lands and tenements in Sawbridgeworth, Herts, freehold premises in Hadham, Herts. And also a fee farm or yearly rent of £16.4s.1d. issuing out of the Manor of Bexhill near Hastings, Sussex. And a fee farm or yearly rent of £6.17s.8d. issuing out of the Manor of Heathfield, Sussex. Also a fee farm rent of £7.13s.4d. issuing out of the Manor of East Peckham, Kent. And a messuage, lands and premises called Nidles also Neagles in Sawbridgeworth (described). To hold upon the trusts in the deed declared. [Signatures of all parties and tags, seals gone].

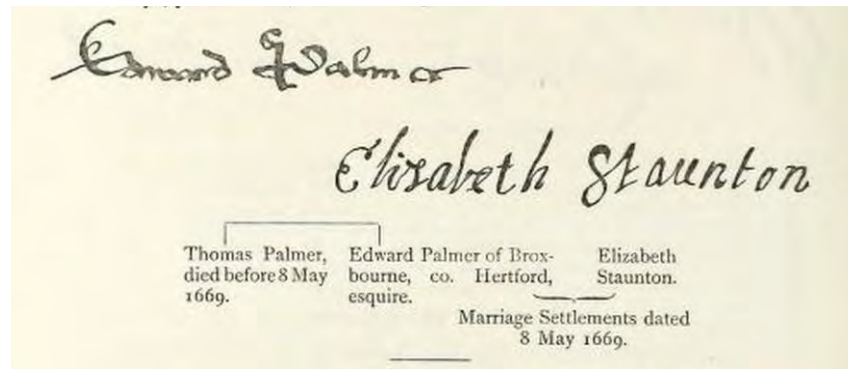
Palmer and Staunton. INDENTURE made 8<sup>th</sup> May, 1669, between (1) Edward Palmer of Broxbourne, co. Hertford, esquire, (2) Sir John Monson, baronet, K.B., and (3) Elizabeth Staunton of Broxbourne, gentlewoman. In consideration of his intended marriage with Elizabeth Staunton, Edward Palmer grants lands in Sawbridgeworth and Little Hadham, co. Hertford (some of which descended to him as heir of his brother, Thomas Palmer, deceased), to the use of them and their issue. Signatures of Edward Palmer, John Monson, Elizabeth Staunton.

Witnesses: Robert Raworth, **Wm. Raven**<sup>5</sup>, Tho. Raworth, Michael Glyd, John Gilberd, Pen: Staunton, Robert Coulson.

Edward and Elizabeth's signatures (below) were reproduced in Arthur Crisp's [\*Fragmenta Genealogica\*](#). Vol. XIII.

---

<sup>5</sup> William was Edward's first cousin



Edward and Elizabeth were married on 21<sup>st</sup> May 1669 although the parish in which this occurred has not been located.

MARRIAGE LICENCES AT THE FACULTY OFFICE 1669 21<sup>st</sup> May, Edward Palmer, of Broxborne, Herts, Esq., Widower, & Elizabeth Staunton, of same, Spinster, above 21 & at her own disposal, her friends dead; alleged by Sir John Monson, K.B.; at Saint Clement Danes, St Giles in the Fields, or St Martin in the Fields, Middx.

The document summarized below dated 11<sup>th</sup> October 1671 is held at Nottinghamshire Archives. It suggests that Edward's son Thomas was somehow 'incapacitated' and that Edward was protecting his son by ensuring that there was enough income to allow for his maintenance.

Edward Palmer of Broxburn, co. Herts., esq. to Alexander Denton of the Middle Temple, London and John Venables of Lincoln's Inn, co. Middlesex, esqs:-- messuages and lands called Coates [Cotes] near the Trent in North Leverton and Hablestrappe [Habblesthorpe] all other property in Notts<sup>6</sup>; specified property in Sawbridgeworth and Little Hadham, co. Herts; rents from manors of Bexhill and Heathfield co. Sussex and E. Peckham, co. Kent--: (i) The Notts property to use of Edward Palmer, for life and then to use of Elizabeth his wife and her heirs during lifetime of Thomas son of Edward Palmer, providing for maintenance of T.P. if remaining incapacitated with remainder to T.P. and his heirs in tail male if he should marry with the consent of E.P. provision for maintenance of T.P. for life only if otherwise married (ii) The Herts and Kent property to the use of E.P. and heirs with remainder to E.P. and heirs (iii) Certain copyhold property at Nazing, Co. Essex to the same use as (ii) Witness Henry Pollexfen, Ven. Staunton, Richard Hals, James Nash.

As noted Edward was about seventy when he married Elizabeth Staunton, who must have been a little over twenty. Edward died

---

<sup>6</sup> Applethorpe, or Apesthorpe, or Habblesthorpe, or Hablestrappe, is a parish in the East Retford district of Nottinghamshire on the southern verge of the county, bordering on Lincolnshire and about a mile east of Leverton. It contains the hamlet of Coates



in 1677 eight years after his marriage. Elizabeth lived more than sixty years on, never re-marrying, and dying in 1727.

### The Career of Edward Palmer

Below from: [\*Annals of the Clergy of Waltham Holy Cross\*](#) By William Winters

Edward Palmer may have had his residence at Seawardstone, a hamlet of Waltham. [Harleian MS., 6065, states that he was "of Hoddesdon, co. Herts," which lies about five or six miles from Waltham Abbey.] He studied at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he was admitted a scholar in 1610, and obtained a fellowship in 1617. He was an excellent Greek scholar, and on the death of Andrew Downes who held the Greek chair at Trinity Edward became a candidate for the professorship of that language in 1625.

Below from [\*The History of the University of Cambridge, and of Waltham Abbey\*](#) by Thomas Fuller, James Nichols.

### The Death of Mr. Andrew Downes.

Andrew Downes, Fellow of St. John's College, one composed of Greek and industry, dieth. Five were candidates for the Greek-Professor's place, void by his death; namely, **Edward Palmer**, esq. Fellow of Trinity College; Abraham Wheelocke, Fellow of Clare Hall; Robert Creighton, of Trinity; Ralph Winterton, of King's; and James White, Master of Arts, of Sidney College. How much was there now of Athens in Cambridge, when (besides many modestly concealing themselves) five able competitors appeared for the place. All these read solemn lectures in the Schools on a subject appointed them by the electors; namely, the first verses of the three-and-twentieth book of Homer's Iliad. But the place was conferred on Mr.

Robert Creighton.

Below left a title page from a book (1593) by Andrew Downes and right his monument at Coton Church in Cambridgeshire.



Andrew Downes (1549-1625)

Edward Palmer was a friend of the historian Dr. Thomas Fuller and Edward is mentioned in a biography of Fuller's ([The Life of Thomas Fuller, D. D. by John Eglington Baile](#))

Edward Palmer, Esq., of Waltham, another of Fuller's parishioners, was likewise an intimate friend. He was of Trinity College, Cambridge, where he acquired a fellowship (1614). He was an accomplished Grecian; and in 1625, on the death of Andrew Downes, he had, though a layman [i.e. not a member of the clergy], been a candidate for the vacant Greek fellowship. Thomas Fuller afterwards dedicated a section of the History of Cambridge to Palmer; and referring to the learned names in connection with Trinity College, he says, with an evident pun on his patron's name, "Inter quos ob summam Græcarum literarum peritiam, te *palmam* ferre meritissime agnoscit." (Among them, all for your skill in Greek, you take the prize and are recognized as the most deservedly) Fuller, addressing his friend Palmer as "Vir Atticissime," alludes to his [Fuller's] own carefulness in preaching consequent upon the presence of scholars [such as Palmer] in his congregation: Palmer is the first of the "loving parishioners" mentioned in the *Infants Advocate*.

In her will of 1726, Edward's widow Elizabeth bequeaths to Trinity College: the picture of Edward Palmer late of Broxbourne in the county of Hertford Esq who was a worthy member of that College to be hung up and kept there in memory of him.



Below is Fuller's dedication to Edward Palmer from his *History of Cambridge*.



Thomas Fuller

EDVARDO PALMER',

DE WALTHAM ARMIGERO.

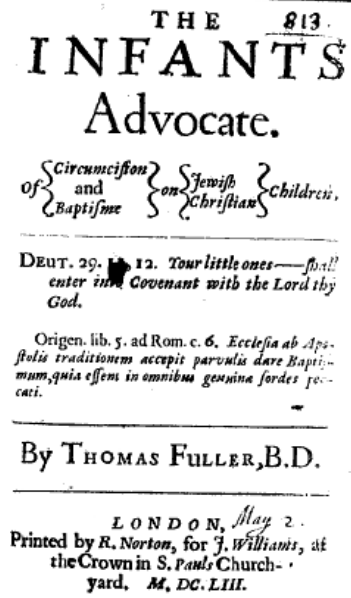
VIR ATTICISSIME,

*Fratres meos, verbi ministros, sæpius audiui sollicitos, ne mentes suæ sensim torpescerent, eo quod rusticis viculis damnati, sibi solum sit consortium cum crassis Minervis, quibus inter crudum et coctum nihil interest.*

*At mea longe dispar conditio, cui, Deo gratias, emunctioris nasi parochiani contigerunt; e quibus tu, limato tuo judicio, me inter prædicandum hebescentem, instar coticulæ, aliquoties exacuisti.*

My Google Translate Version: A Atticissime Frartres my ministers of the word; I do not mind the dictates of concern because it often occurs gradually to represent country villages condemned to be the only company with gross Minerva between raw and cooked food makes no difference. But I have very different condition, which, thank God, emunctioris nose parishioners have taken place from which you trimmed your judgment, I have preached several times to sharpen dull, like test. (?)

Below Fuller's dedication from *The Infants Advocate* to Edward Palmer including John Vavasor, Edward's brother in law, both of whom were Fuller's parishoners at Waltham Holy Cross.



To the Right Worshipfull,  
Edward Palmer, Henry  
Wollaston, and Matthew  
Gilly, Esquires; John Vava-  
sor, Francis Bointon, Gent.  
with all the rest of my Lo-  
ving Parishioners in Wal-  
tham Holy-Cross.

Unlike his younger brother Andrew, Edward backed the Parliamentary forces during the English Civil War and, as a known opponent of the monarchy he had to make reparation at the restoration of Charles II in 1660.

Below from: *Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series, of the Reign of Charles II*: [Revocation by deed poll by Edward Palmer of Broxbourne](#)



1660, June 4<sup>th</sup> - Declaration  
by Edward Palmer of  
Broxbourne, Hertfordshire,  
that he avails himself of the  
King's general pardon.  
Signed by Sir Harbottle  
Grimston, Speaker of the  
House of Commons.

Sir Harbottle Grimston;  
© National Portrait Gallery, London

### The Vavasor Family of Waltham Abbey

Edward's first wife, Millicent (Vavasor) (Wyke) Palmer, belonged to the family of Vavasor of Yorkshire, a branch of which settled near Waltham Abbey in 1564. And, as noted above, this family

occupies a large space in the parish register of Waltham (See [\*Transactions of the Royal Historical Society, Volume 8\*](#)). [\*All Saints Otley\*](#) (?)

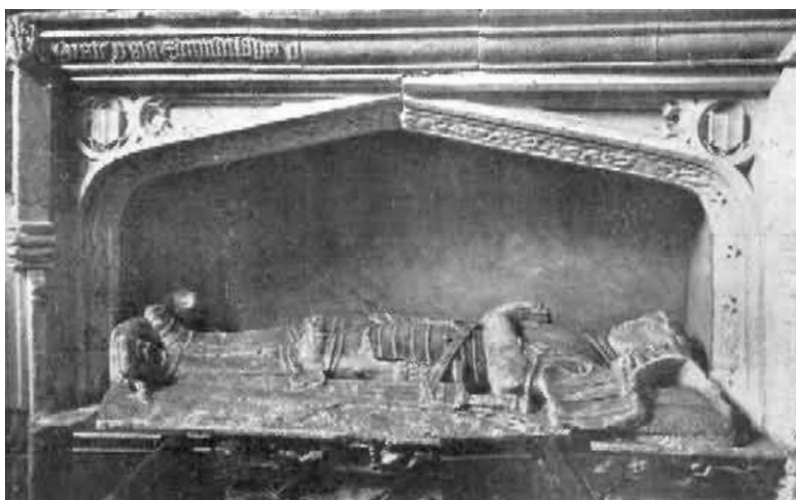
Great house fit for residence.  
The interior of the Church is worthy  
of observation, as containing tombs of  
some of the families of Fairfax, Fawkes,  
**Vavasour, Palmer, and Dineley.**  
25th July 1757 and 27th September

Below adapted from [\*A View of Devonshire in MDCXXX: With a Pedigree of Most of Its Gentry\*](#) and from [British History Online](#). The chart below (p. 22) summarises the following paragraphs:

Edmund Larder married Isabel, daughter of John Bonville of Ivybridge and Alice granddaughter [Gilbert Dennys](#) of Comb-Ralegh in Devon. John Bonville was the illegitimate son of [William, Lord Bonville](#) of Chuton by his mistress Elizabeth (or Isabella) Kirkby.

Edmund and Isabel (Bonville) Larder had a son William Larder who married Joan, daughter of John Trevelyan of Nettlecombe in Somersetshire and they had issue Tristram Larder who married Mary Stukeley, daughter of [Lewis Stukeley of Affeton](#), Esq.

Tristram and Mary (Stukeley) Larder had a son Humphrey who married Margaret, daughter of Greenfield. Below Humphrey's tomb at Upton Pyne, Devon.



Humphrey and Margaret (Greenfield) Larder had a daughter Margaret who married Anthony Copleston, son and heir of Anthony

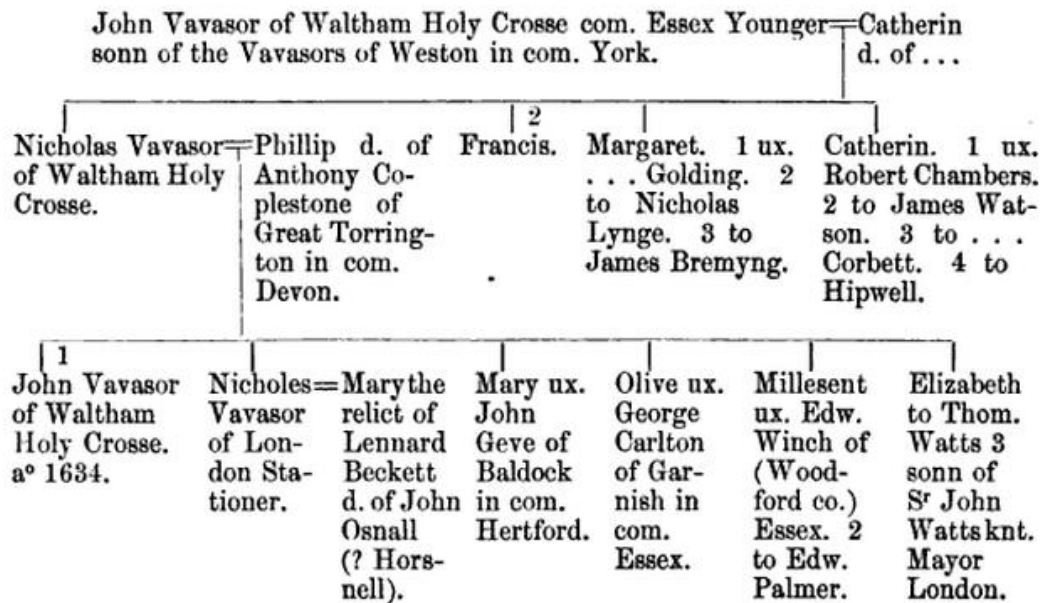
Copleston, of Whyke/Wyke, Esq., second son of Thomas Copleston of Instow.

Anthony and Margaret (Larder) Copleston had a daughter Phillipa who married Nicholas Vavasor whose daughter Millicent married Edward Palmer. (See also [Report & Transactions, Volume 18](#) (July 1886) of the Devonshire Association for the Advancement of Science, Literature and Art.)

The chart below is taken from *The Visitation of Essex*. The date 1612 refers to a previous visitation in which the Vavasor family's heraldic arms appear.

## Vavasor.

Arms as in Vis. of 1612.

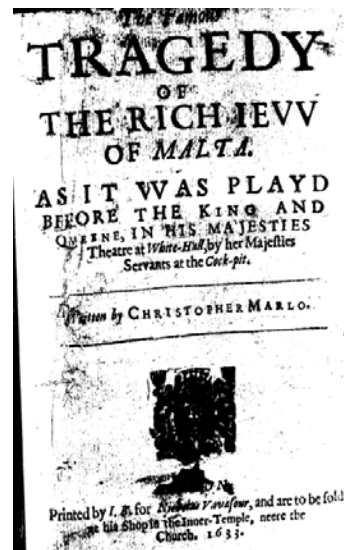


Edward's brother in law, Nicholas Vavasor, was a book printer and seller. He was the first to publish Christopher Marlowe's *The Rich Jew of Malta*. Below are some title pages of books printed by Nicholas.

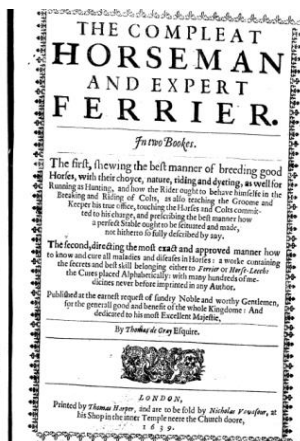




Christopher Marlowe  
© Corpus Christ College, Cambridge



The title page of Nicholas Vavasor's edition of The Rich Jew of Malta.



(William Lind, Esq. B. of C. Gent. Sec. of the Privy Council)

# THE ARGUMENT OF NICHOLAS FULLER OF Graves Inne Esquire, in the Cafe of Tho. Lud, and Rich. Mansell his Clients.

Wherein it is plainly proved, that the Ecclesiasticall Commissioners have no power by their Commission, to impose, or to fine any of his Majesties subjects, or to put them to the Oath

EX OFFICIO.



LONDON, Printed for N. Vavasor, 1641.

## The Death and the Will of Edward Palmer

Edward died in 1677 and his burial is recorded at St. Giles Cripplegate on 22<sup>nd</sup> November. His name appears second to last on the parish record below; his cause of death is given as 'Aged':

1677.	
John 33 <sup>rd</sup> de Abatibus	Aged — Pasthe: 21
Somerset S. Walter Darvey Weaver	Stillborne Pasthe 21
Mary Palmer Serv <sup>t</sup> to M <sup>r</sup> Hightingale	Hoover — Church 22
Walter Fitzherbert Wit.	Hoover — Wsclow 22
W <sup>o</sup> : Palmer Esq <sup>r</sup> from Broxbourne County Herford	Aged — Sham 22
M <sup>o</sup> : Giffett Rec <sup>d</sup> Widow from Broxbourne	

Edw: Palmer Esq from Broxbourne County Herford Aged

Edward writes his will on the 2<sup>nd</sup> November 1675. He appoints his wife Elizabeth as his sole executrix. All his children have predeceased him except for son Thomas. He gives and bequeaths to the poor of St. Giles, Cripplegate, where he desires to be buried, thirteen shillings and four pence. He gives to the poor of Broxbourne and Hoddesdon Ten Pounds to be distributed at the discretion of his executrix. He gives to his wife Elizabeth the inheritance of all his land in the County of Nottingham in the parishes of North Leverton and Applethorpe [Habblethorpe] commonly called by the general name of Coates [Cotes] with all the houses, messuages, tenements, orchards, gardens, and meadows found there ... He goes on to:

... earnestly beseech my dear wife Elizabeth Palmer to take upon her the care and custody of my only Child<sup>7</sup> Thomas Palmer And I do hereby [direct? ] my said wife to maintain care and provide for him after the (manner) as I was wont, and so keep him as now that is not to let him want anything that is convenient or needfull for him as she shall judge And I further declare that my mind and will is that my said son Thomas Palmer shall be maintained and provided for out of the rents of my Lands in Nottinghamshire commonly called by the name of Coates in the parish of North Leverton and Applethorpe which said land and rents I have given to my said wife Mrs Elizabeth Palmer and to her heirs for ever All but what is for the maintenance of my said son Thomas Palmer accordingly as I was wont to maintain him And I do hereby further declare that my said wife shall not be forced or compelled to give any amount of her (inheritance) to any persons but to God alone the searcher of all hearts whose upright dealing I make no question of and I further give and bequeath to my said dear wife Elizabeth Palmer all my freehold land and copiehold land in Hertfordshire for her and her heirs for ever As well as all that which descended to me from my Brother Mr Thomas Palmer and that which I bought myself and is now in the Tenure and occupation of John Owen of Sabridgworth And whereas I have surrendered that Copiehold land which my brother Thomas Palmer and I bought of Bennet Thompson and ? Holden commonly called and known by the name of Flowers (?) and Fishpond (?) and all the Copiehold land wheresoever and by whatsoever name they are called and distinguished surrendered unto the hand of Henry (?) Hamey (?) Esquire

[He also bequeaths to his wife] ... land at Sawbridgeworth as well as Barnes Barkside Gardens and Orchards further land at Little Hadham in the County of Hertford with all the dwelling houses barns and stables and all other outhouses all of it in the

---

<sup>7</sup> The use of 'only' here would suggest that his two daughters Millicent and Mary had predeceased their father. Thomas would have been 43 at the time Edward wrote his will.

tenure and occupation of Edward Swarder as well as all land and outhouses, barns, stables and now in the tenure and occupation of Thomas Bush the elder in Little Hadham. All to his wife Elizabeth Palmer. Also all the inheritance of all his fee farm rents of Bexhill and Heathfield in Sussex and that of East Pekham in Kent.

He also bequeaths to his wife Elizabeth Palmer all his copiehold lands in Nasing [Nazeing] in the County of Essex and also two crofts consisting of ten acres each, more or less. He also gives to his wife all his personal estate including all his plate and gold chain, his monies, whether in silver or in gold, as well as all his books and paper books. Also, to his good friend John Monson knight of the bath and Baronet and to his Excellent Lady fifty pounds. And lastly he gives and bequeaths:

... unto my nephew Ralph Palmer ten shillings to be paid to him within three months of my decease by my executrix if he demand it although if I consider his strangeness and not to be paralleled neglect of me he rather deserves my censure than a legacy.

His widow, Elizabeth (Staunton) Palmer, probated the will on 11<sup>th</sup> December 1677 and, although we have no burial record for Edward, we assume his death occurred in that year.

### The 'Sentence' of Edward Palmer

At the National Archives there is a 'Sentence of Edward Palmer' dated 16<sup>th</sup> February 1678.



The 'sentence' of Edward Palmer refers to a legal process whereby Edward's last will had to be manually reconstructed by use of exhibits given in testimony. The reason for this was caused a candle that had accidentally burned portions of the original will. It was necessary to compare the original's burnt text with the clerk's parchment copy made before the candle struck.

On 11<sup>th</sup> December 1677 testimony was taken in Probate Court regarding the will's mutilation by the clerks of Mr. Ambrosius Holbech, Hospital St Clementis (Mr. Ambrose Holbech, St. Clements Inn). Testimony was used to investigate the chain of possession of the original will to determine negligence, and to find and prove the testators original desire. Edward had stated that he is in reasonable good health in his will. His death date was not a subject of the complaint and is not discussed in the testimony and not stated. Both Edward and Elizabeth Palmer are noted as 'Articulate' which is a legal term referring to those who are specified in the articles of an accusation before a court, but the term is now obsolete.

### Mr Ambrose Holbech's Testimony 11 December 1677:

Deponit et dicit - That about a Weeke or Ten daies since this, Deponent viewed the Originall Will of the said Edward Palmer the deceased in the cause from the Articulate Elizabeth Palmer the Widow and Executrix therein named and that when he soe received the same of her it was noe waies burnt or scorched in the first second or last sheetes thereof in manner as now Appeareth and that he [Ambrose Holbech] delivered the same soe faire and free from burning or scorching to Robert Osborne one of this Deponents Clarkes to faire ingrosse the same and gave him a great charge to take care of the Same and accordingly the Said Robert Osborne did ingross it and dureing his soe ingrossing the said Will was casually or accidentally burnt by a Candle at his deske in manner as now appeareth as the the said Robert Osborne informed or acquainted this Deponent [Ambrose Holbech] and that the deponent found the same soe burnt after hee had ingrossed the second sheete thereof and before hee had finished the said ingrossment - Am[brose] Holbech.

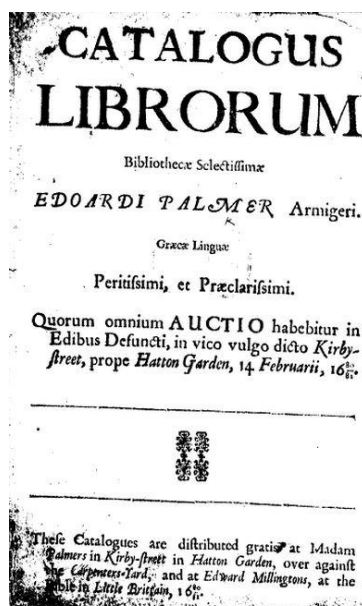
Robertus Osborne famulis Domesticus Ambrosey Holbech pracontestis sui cum quoram ferit per Decem fore Annos or tus apud Hanwell in Com Oxon [at Hanwell, County Oxfordshire] oratio 32 annorum ant es cisar testio ...

That this Deponent is clerk unto Mr Ambrose Holbech of Clements Inn in the County of Middlesex that about a Week since the said Mr Holbech delivered the Originall Will of the Articulate Edward Palmer the deceased in this cause being the very Will exhibited to him this Deponent to ingrosse in parchment, and that when he soe delivered the same to this deponent it was whole and ? and noe wayes burnt or scorched in the ffirst second or last



sheete thereof in manner as now appeareth and this deponent did accordingly ingrosse the said Will by Candle light in his said Masters Chamber in Clements Inn aforesaid at a double deske where this deponent wrote on one side and George Trenchard his ffellow Clarke wrote on the other side and this Deponent stucke the said Original Will in a gallows standing upp betweene the said Desks wherein hee usually sticks upp or hangs writings on when he is ingrossing or transcribing them and after hee had ingrossed the ffirst and second sheetes of the said Will exhibited the said George Trenchard whoe was writing or sitting on the deske on the other side of this deponent moved or stirred his Candle insoemuch that it gott hold of the Will exhibited and burnt and scorched the same in manner as on the ffirst second and last sheets thereof is now to be seene and that this deponent had ingrossed the said ffirst and second sheetes before the said burning carefully and free from any verball mistakes that hee knoweth of and that in the Nineteenth lyne of the ffirst sheete of the Will exhibited reckoning and accompting [counting] downward from the beginning there were wrote these words (buried Six pounds thirteene) .....

After Edward's death Elizabeth, who did not re-marry, put Edward's large collection of books (mostly in ancient Greek) up for auction. Below the title page to the catalog of Edward's book collection which was placed on auction on 14<sup>th</sup> February 1680/81. The auction was held at Elizabeth's house at Kirby Street off Hatton Garden; just around the corner from where Edward's newly wed niece Elizabeth Palmer lived with her husband John Verney.



The title page of the catalog of Edward Palmer's books put up for sale by his widow

Elizabeth left a long and complex will with three codicils setting up various trusts for the running of a number of charities, a summary of which appears at the end of Part Two of this work. She disposed of legacies that amounted to over £30,000.

Mention is quite often made among Edward's legal papers to Sir [John Monson](#) 2<sup>nd</sup> Bart. of Broxbourne. Although no familial ties bound Monson and Palmer, that we know of, their friendship was nonetheless significant.



The Monsons: Father Thomas (1565-1641) and son John (1599-1683). In the [public domain](#).

### Mathew (1631-1665), the son of Edward Palmer

Mathew was born in December 1631 the son of Edward and Millicent (Vavasor) Palmer, and baptized on the 29<sup>th</sup> of that month at the Parish Church of Waltham-Abbey in Essex.

Mathew married Elizabeth Richards on 14<sup>th</sup> December 1663 at Henry VII Chapel, Westminster Abbey. He was aged 32 and she was 18. Elizabeth was the daughter of Elizabeth Richards (widow). They appear not to have had any issue.

Mathew was a barrister of the Middle Temple where he practiced the law for about fourteen years. He was the executor of his uncle Andrew Palmer's will who in it refers to Mathew as 'his good nephew'. His wife, Elizabeth, stood as godparent to Mathew's cousin Elizabeth Palmer daughter of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer.

From: [Middle Temple Records: 1650-1703](#) by John Hutchinson

April, 1653. Mr. Matthew Palmer to the chamber of Mr. Stephen Hervey of the Utter Bar, in Pumpe Court, immediately over the chamber of Mr. Clement Throckmorton, on his surrender; fine, £3. 6s. 8d.

Mathew died at the end of 1665 aged 34 and was buried on 2<sup>nd</sup> January 1666 in the chancel at St. Giles, Cripplegate (see last line). His cause of death is given as 'Consumption'.

Burialls in January. 1666	
Thomas Drosby Warden	Consum below 1
Thomas son of Tho Stubbington	Consum below 1
Robert Hays Laborer at	Strep Ho: below 1
Edward Southcott	Strep below 1
William Overly Translator	Strep below 1
Son of John Dwyer	Stillborn above 1
Edward Blackwell Gentleman	Strep above 1
Elizabeth Dwyer wife	Consum above 1
Johnathan son of Thomas Dwyer founder	Strep below 2
John Swaine Farmer	Consum below 2
Matthew Palmer Esq <sup>r</sup>	Consum; Chancel 2
	Consum; Chancel 3

Mathew Palmer esq<sup>ire</sup>

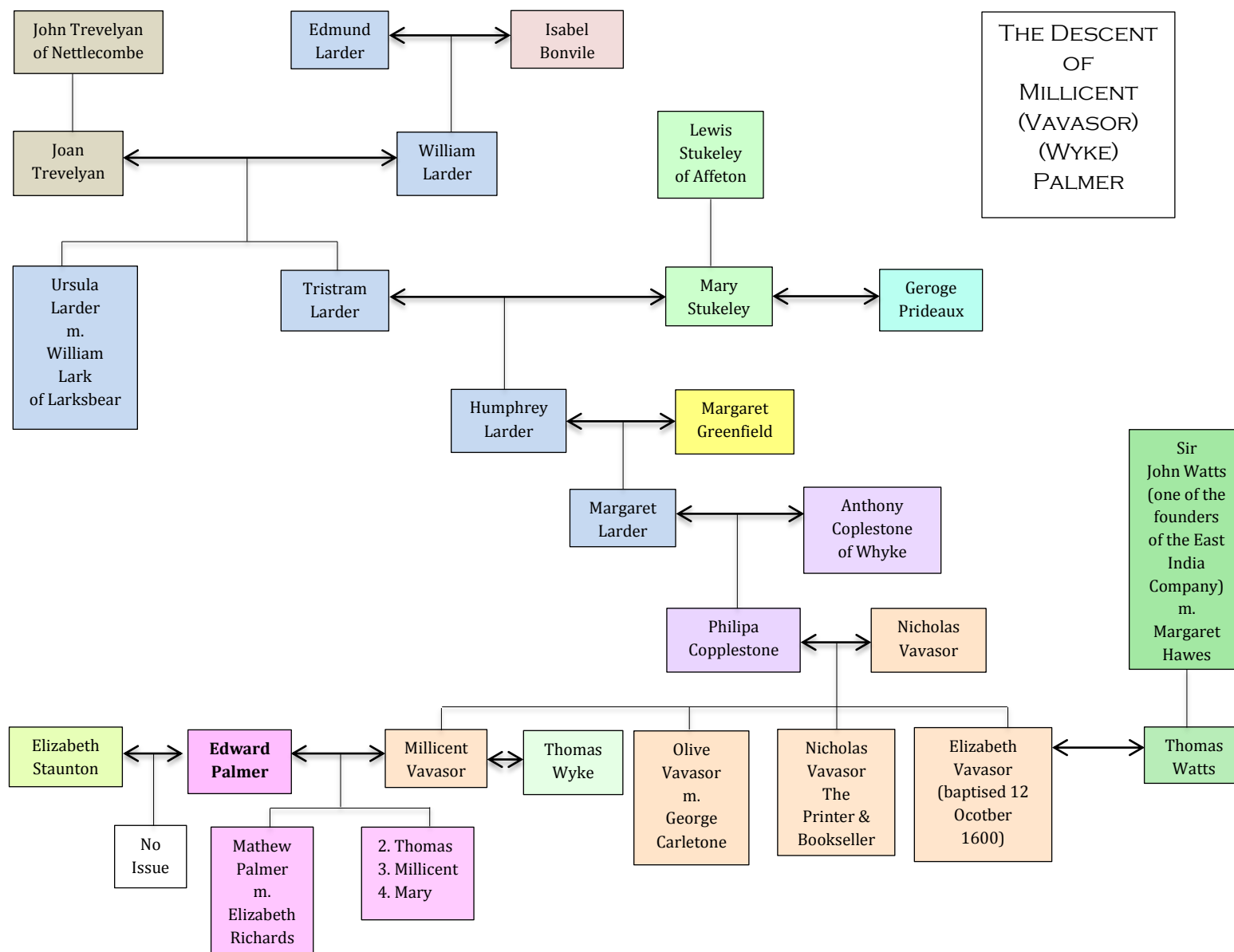
Consum Shon [?]

We do not have a record for Elizabeth's burial.

1667. [On the motion of Mr. Attorney-General](#), the administratrix of Mr. Matthew Palmer of the Utter Bar, deceased, has leave to transfer his chamber with an assignment, the gentleman to be admitted paying a fine of £5.

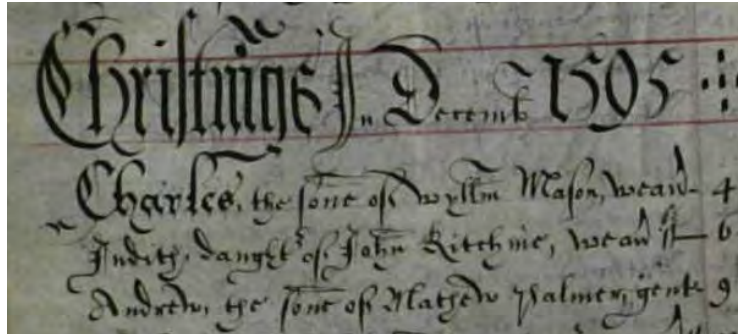
So far no will of Mathew's has been located.

## The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea



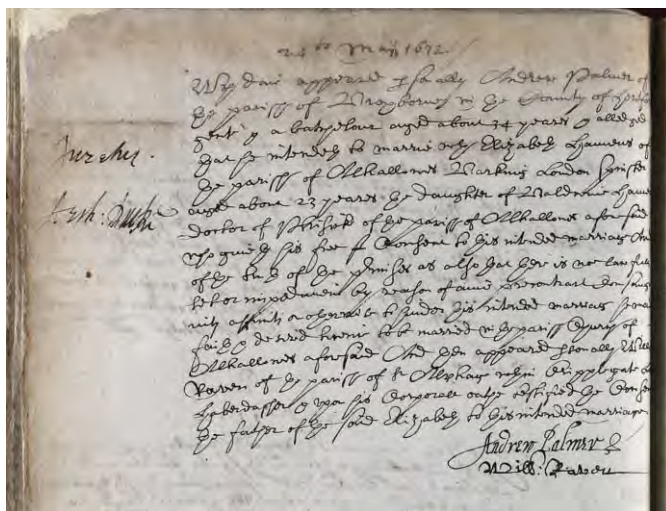
Andrew (1595-1658), the third son of Mathew Palmer

Andrew Palmer was the third son of Mathew and Anne (Raven) Palmer. He was born in 1595 and baptised on 9<sup>th</sup> December 1595 at St. Giles, Cripplegate.



Andrew ye sonne of Mathew Palmer gent 9

On 24<sup>th</sup> May 1632 Andrew married Elizabeth Hamey the daughter of Baldwin and Sarah (Oeils) Hamey at All Hallows, Barking. The original parish records for All Hallows from this period were destroyed in the Great Fire of 1666. As a result we do not have a baptismal record for Elizabeth nor do we have a record of her marriage to Andrew Palmer. We do however have a marriage allegation dated 24<sup>th</sup> May 1632:



I Andrew Palmer of ye parish of Broxbourne in ye County of Hertfordshire gent and a batchelor aged about 34 years intendeth to marrie Miss Elizabeth Hamey of ye Parish of All Hallows Barking London aged above 23 years ye Daughter of Baldwin Hamey Doctor of Physik of ye parish of All Hallows aforesaid his intended to marriage ...

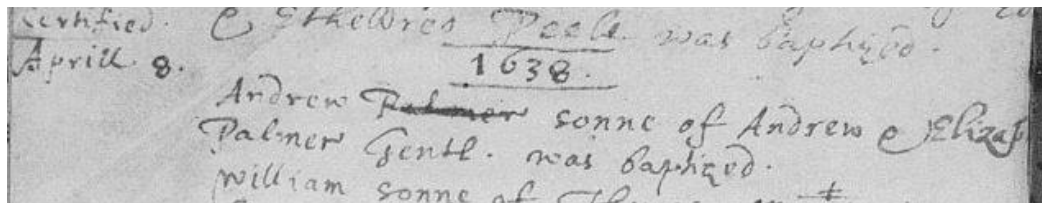
Andrew Palmer's marriage allegation to Elizabeth Hamey, witnessed by his cousin William Raven.

A record of the marriage allegation was also summarized in *Allegations for Marriage Licences Issued by the Bishop of London ...*, Volume 26:



May 24 1632 Andrew Palmer, Gent., of Broxborne, Herts, Bachr, 34, & Elizth Hameus, of All Hallows Barking, Spr, 23, dau. of Baldwin Hameus, of same, Dr of Physic, who consents; at All Hallows Barking.

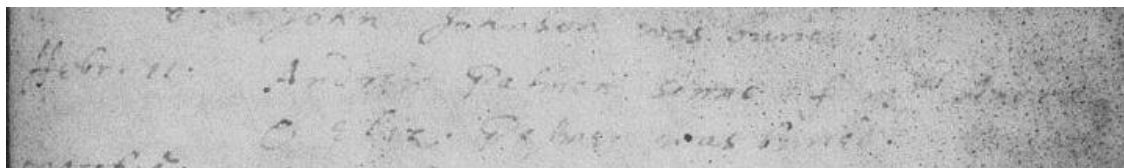
Andrew and Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer had at least ten children of whom seven survived them: Sarah, Ralph (I), Anne, Susan or Susannah (baptised at St. Andrew's Church, Hertford on 1<sup>st</sup> January 1639), Mary (baptised at St. Andrew's Church, Hertford on 17<sup>th</sup> March 1640), Hester, and John (baptised 3<sup>rd</sup> January 1642) all of whom are mentioned in their father's will. Two reached adulthood but pre-deceased their father: Baldwin and Elizabeth. One child, Andrew, was short-lived. He was baptised on 8<sup>th</sup> April 1638 at St. Andrew's, Hertford:



April 8 1638

Andrew ~~Palmer~~ sonne of Andrew & Elizabeth  
Palmer Gentl. was baptized

This son died two years later in February 1640 and was buried at St. Andrew.

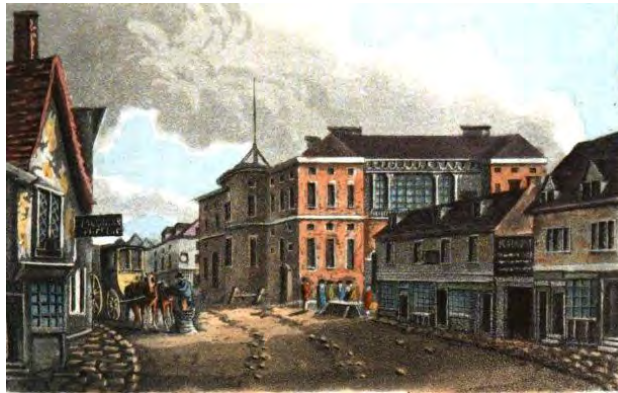


February Andrew Palmer sonne of Mr. Andrew and Elizabeth Palmer

Andrew Palmer was described by his brother in law Baldwin Hamey MD as being '... a man not unworthy of her [Elizabeth Hamey] in rank and fortune.' And as belonging to a family 'long distinguished in the letters and the arts' (Keevil, p.150). This distinction is somewhat puzzling, as we have so far not found any evidence to support it, except possibly Edward Palmer.

Andrew's father in law, Baldwin Hamey Snr., was a domineering, forceful, and generally disapproving character and so asking for his daughter's hand in marriage may have taken some courage.

Andrew was the mayor of the city of Hertford at the beginning of the civil unrest between king and parliament in 1641. In that role, and as an avowed monarchist (unlike his brother Edward), Andrew ran afoul of the Parliamentary authorities as the following sources relate.



The City of Hertford of which Andrew Palmer was mayor  
© Trustees of the British Museum

Below based on: *Hertfordshire During the Great Civil War and the Long Parliament*, by Alfred Kingston.

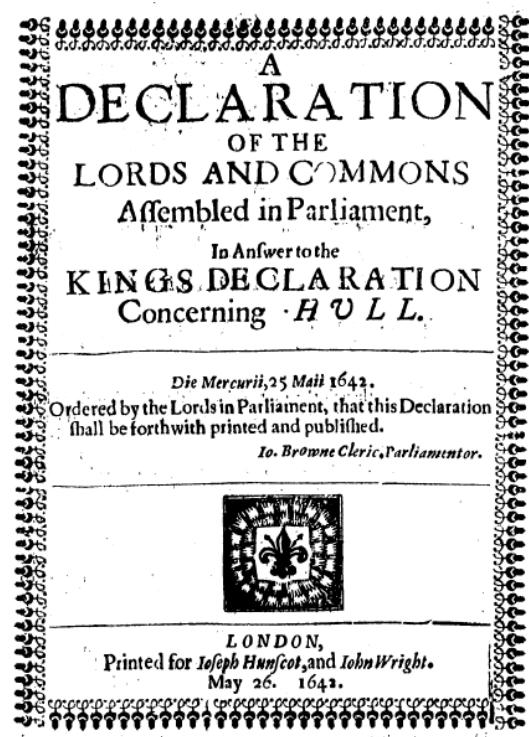
In July and August [1642] Parliament made a proclamation for the town of Hertford to raise a militia and train volunteers. Special care was also enjoined to guard the town, and the powder magazine there.

As Parliament was issuing this order the King at Nottingham was likewise sending out Commissions of Array; commencing "right trusty and well-beloved we greet you well," and proceeding to denounce the Parliament's Militia order and its promoters as traitors, and authorising the raising of horse and troops for the King.

In boroughs the posting up of proclamations was in the hands of the Mayor, and in this summer of 1642, with the King on the point of setting up his standard at Nottingham, the Mayor of Hertford [Andrew Palmer] had notions of his own about which proclamation to issue, that of the Parliament, or that of the King.

[Below the speaker of the House, William Lenthall, and parliament's counter proclamation to the King's resolution of going in person to Hull.]





Left: Speaker of the House of Commons William Lenthall; © Parliamentary Art Collection.  
Right, Parliament's counter proclamation to the King's

Palmer, being a Royalist, published the King's proclamation, and with Lord Capel and other county nobility and gentry, was actively pushing the King's cause, thus making matters dubious for the Parliament.

In Hertford there is a powder magazine, the keys of which must be held for Parliament at all costs, even if the dignity of a mayor has to be set aside. And so Mr. Andrew Palmer, being mayor of Hertford is "sent for" to attend at the Bar of the House, and there on the 29<sup>th</sup> July 1642 he appears in person, giving a rather indifferent account of his conduct. He confessed that he caused divers proclamations to be published, one against the Militia and one concerning the King's Commission of Array (declaring his Majesty's Resolution of going in his Royal Person to Hull), both before he received any order [from Parliament] to the contrary.

After due deliberation by the House of Commons, the Mayor of Hertford was called back in and, kneeling at the Bar, Mr. Speaker pronounced sentence against him accordingly he was to be carried off and held a prisoner of the King's Bench during the pleasure of the House.

However, Parliament having passed sentence, soon relented and Andrew Palmer was released from prison as reported in *The House of Commons Journal*:

Resolved, That Andrew Palmer, Mayor of Herts, now Prisoner in the King's Bench, by a former Order of this House, shall be forthwith discharged from any farther Imprisonment; upon his humble Petition, and Expression of his Sorrow for disobeying the Commands of this House .

Andrew Palmer's trial and imprisonment lasted a month from 29<sup>th</sup> July to 30<sup>th</sup> August. He was also fortunate, as Mayor of Hertford, not to have paid for the cost of his own imprisonment which was instead borne by his fellow burgesses as evidenced by the fact that Andrew wrote in the borough's accounts that: *The charge of my imprisonment, as appears in particulars, £3 6s. 8d. [and] paid by the Corporation.*



In Hertford, streets named after its royalist civil war mayor, Andrew Palmer, are: Palmer Close and Palmer Road. (See [Street Names in Hertford](#))

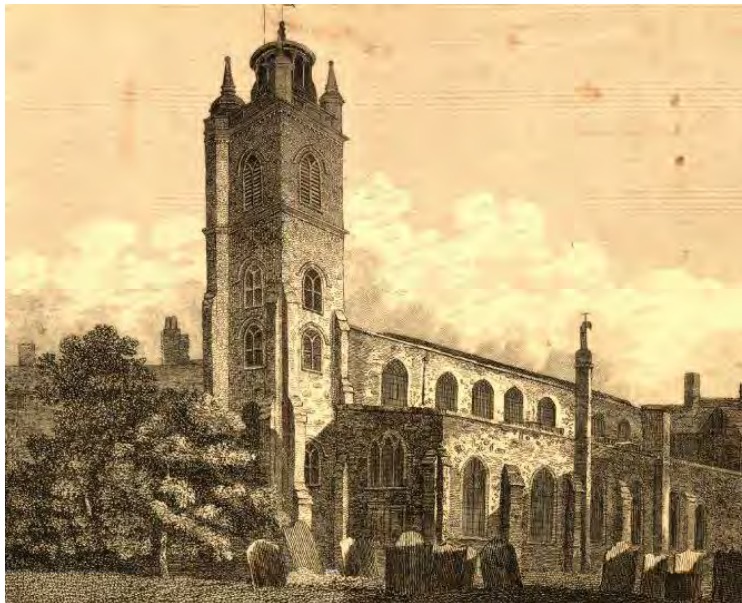
On the monument to his father, Mathew Palmer, in St. Giles, Cripplegate, Andrew is recalled as: .. a person of approved loyalty, of **Hertford** which probably refers to his staunch support for the royalist cause during the civil war (1642-1651).

Andrew's burial record has not been located but he most likely died, based on his will and probate, at the end of 1658 when he would have been 63 years old and with children who were still minors.

### A Note on St. Giles Cripplegate .

The church at Cripplegate is dedicated to St. Giles who was an Athenian by birth, (who died Abbot of Nismes in the Year 700). The church is said to have been founded by Alfune Bishop of

London in about the Year 1030. In 1545 it was destroyed by fire, but escaped the like fate in 1666. However there are gaps among the parish records including one between 1657 and 1663 which accounts for why Andrew's burial record has not been found. In 1791 the church underwent a complete repair and the roof was considerably raised. It was heavily damaged during World War Two. The print below is from 1814:



St Giles, Cripplegate © The Trustees of the British Museum

### Andrew Palmer's Will

Andrew wrote his will on 4<sup>th</sup> November 1658. He states that he is a Gentleman of Roydon in Essex and that he has lands in Hertfordshire, Lincolnshire, and Nottinghamshire to dispose of. His will was probated on 6<sup>th</sup> January 1658 [but probably an error so more likely 1659]. Andrew probably died before the end of 1658, seventeen years before his brother Edward.

His wife (Elizabeth), his son Baldwin, and daughter Elizabeth (Palmer) Burwell, have pre-deceased him. He declares that he is 'of whole body and perfect remembrance' and that first he bequeaths to Ralph Palmer his eldest son his three farms with their appurtenances being either at or in North Leverton, Coates, or in the parish of Habblesthorpe in the [County of Nottingham](#) and which are in the 'several tenures and occupation of Francis Husband and Richard \_\_\_\_son and Thomas Oare'.

Andrew also bequeaths to son Ralph his copyhold of inheritance in the parishes of Broxbourne and Wormley in the County of Hertford, which not being surrendered to other uses, will descend to Ralph by the customs of the manor.

He also bequeaths to John Palmer his youngest son all his lands both free and copyhold lying in the parish of High Easter in the County of Essex. He bequeaths to John the rents he receives from land in Musson in L\_\_\_\_\_ and Leverton in the County of Lincoln.

He bequeaths to Sarah Palmer his oldest daughter eight hundred pounds for her preferment in marriage. He bequeaths to Anne Palmer his second daughter now the wife of William Bird the sum of three hundred pounds. [Elizabeth his third daughter who had married Thomas Burwell had pre-deceased Andrew]. He gives to his last three unmarried daughters, i.e. his fourth daughter Susan Palmer, his fifth daughter Mary Palmer, and his youngest daughter Esther [Hester] Palmer [future wife of Richard Cradock] all his freehold land in Roydon in the County of Essex. He requests that his household stuff, goods, jewels, plate, linen, furniture, etc. be equally and lovingly divided among his two sons (Ralph and John) and five daughters (Sarah, Anne, Susan, Mary, and Esther).

He bequeaths to his brother Edward Palmer, Esq. five pounds. He bequeaths to Edward's son and heir and Andrew's 'good nephew' Mathew Palmer, Esq. five pounds. He bequeaths to his good brother in law Doctor Hamey five pounds. He bequeaths to his son in law Doctor Thomas Burwell three pounds six shillings and eight pence<sup>8</sup>. He bequeaths to his brother in law Mr. Jeremiah Hamey five pounds [brother of his wife Elizabeth and of Baldwin Hamey, Jnr.]. He bequeaths to his loving nephew Mathew Bullworth<sup>9</sup> five pounds. He bequeaths to his cousin William Raven forty shillings.

---

<sup>8</sup> This is an odd amount in its exactitude and happens to be precisely that of the fine Andrew had to pay for his one-month's imprisonment by Parliament. Is there some intra-familial reference? Perhaps Thomas loaned that amount for Andrew to pay his fine with before the corporation of Hertford city stepped in and paid it on his behalf.

<sup>9</sup> Mathew was the son of Andrew's sister Elizabeth who had married John Bullworth or Bullwer or Bulwer, Merchant.

He gives to the poor of the parish of Cripplegate '*where it shall please God to call for me out of this world*' the sum of five marks and he desires to be interred there with his '*... late wife and parents of dear memory*'.

The residue of his estate goes to his eldest son Ralph. He appoints his brother Edward Palmer and his nephew Mathew Palmer joint Executors in trust of his last will and testament '*relying much on their faithful and prudent direction of his children...*' The will was proved by his nephew Mathew Palmer.

On his death, Andrew's youngest children were taken into the care of their maternal uncle and aunt Baldwin and Anne (de Pettin) Hamey.

### The Children of Andrew and Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer

#### Baldwin Palmer (1635-1651)

Baldwin Palmer was born on 21<sup>st</sup> May 1635 at Roydon in Essex, the eldest son of Andrew and Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer. Baldwin resided with his parents in Hertfordshire and while there he was tutored first by a Mr. Smith and then by a Mr. Dugard<sup>10</sup>. On 18<sup>th</sup> June 1645 Baldwin's uncle, Baldwin Hamey Jnr., wrote to Mr. Smith:

*In this new situation, since you have taken on the burden, I thought it propitious to wish you all happiness and prosperity; especially I pray for the interests of my little nephew whom I hold and love as son and whom the stars friendly I hope, have committed to your instruction. Like me you are not unaware how waxlike is that age, how like a smooth tablet on which anyone may write, and concerning this one of mine, I have found him to be of good character and good mind, and I promise he will be attentive to your sayings and teachings. Do you then greet him in a ... friendly manner, certain of deserving his esteem; he is not lazy in enquiry ... nor will he allow benefits conferred to go unappreciated. Farewell and greeting from your unknown friend. [The Stranger's Son, pp. 90]*

However Mr. Smith did not remain long at his post and seven months later, on 4<sup>th</sup> February 1646, Baldwin's uncle Hamey wrote to his successor Mr. Dugard, praising his 'notable industry and great skill in languages', comparing him to Plutarch and thankful 'to have secured such a teacher for his nephew'. [*The Stranger's Son*, pp. 90-91].

---

<sup>1010</sup> *The Strangers Son* by Keevil (1950) p. 90

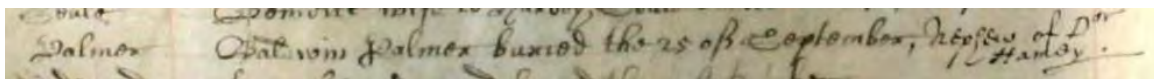


Baldwin Palmer was later enrolled at the Merchant Taylor's school and while there probably lived with his uncle and aunt, Baldwin and Anne (de Pettin) Hamey, at their home in nearby Clement Lane.

From: *A Register of the Scholars Admitted into Merchant Taylor's School . . . , Volume 1:*

Baldwin Palmer, eldest son of Andrew, esquire, born in the parish of Roydon, co. Essex, 21 May, 1635. His mother was a daughter of the celebrated physician, Dr. Baldwin Hamey. He died in September, 1651, and was buried [aged 16] on 25<sup>th</sup> September, 1651 at St. Clement Eastcheap.

Below Baldwin Palmer's burial record at St. Clement, Eastcheap.



Palmer

Baldwin Palmer buried the 25 of September, nephew of Dr Hamey

Baldwin's burial place would suggest that he died while residing with his uncle and aunt in St. Clement Lane.

At the National Archives there is a conveyance by Baldwin's uncle Hamey to James Nutt and van der Putt<sup>11</sup> in trust for Baldwin Palmer to receive:

... the rents and profits during his life, then his [Hamey's] wife Anne likewise; remainder to their heirs or in default of heirs and if Anne does not remarry, to the uses of her will; or remainder in default of such heirs, if Anne does remarry, to Baldwyn's brother and sister (Jeremy Hamey of London, merchant and Elizabeth Palmer), then to Baldwyn Palmer, son of Elizabeth, charged with £100 annuity to any daughters of said Elizabeth Palmer. Cold Overton.

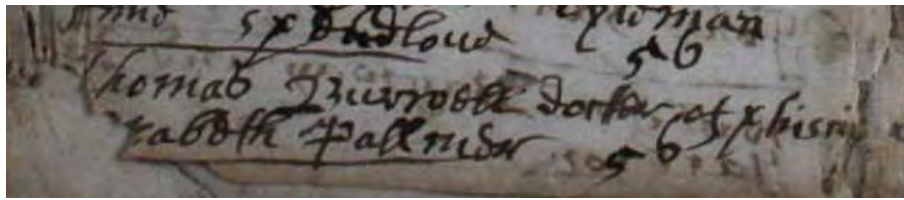
Elizabeth, (circa 1637 - 1657).

Elizabeth Palmer was born about 1637, probably at Roydon in Essex, the daughter of Andrew and Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer. She married Thomas Burwell in 1655 at All Hallows, Staining.

Their marriage record, which is below, does not indicate the day or the month and neither do the entries above and below but we assume sometime in June 1656:

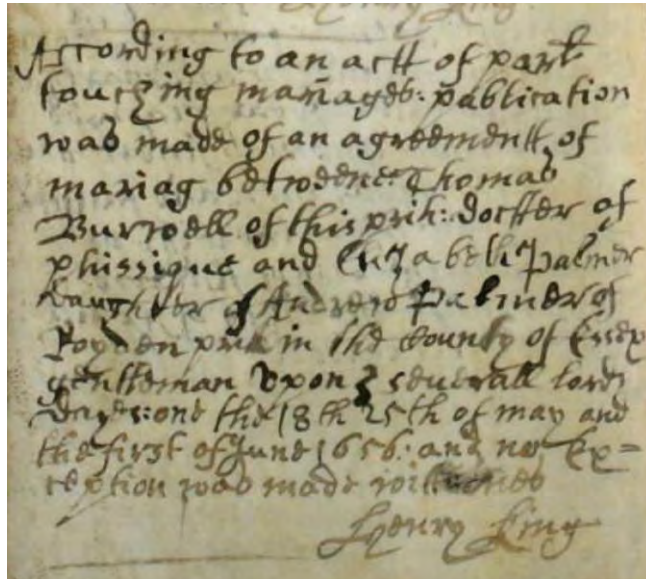
---

<sup>11</sup> Peter van de Putt's will refers to Baldwin [mistakenly transcribed as Batholomew] Hamey as his cousin.



Thomas Burwell Doctor of Physic Elizabeth Palmer

A post marriage record confirming the marriage has been located although its purpose is obscure.



According to an actt of past fourgoing marriage publication was made of an agreement of marriage between Thomas Burwell of this parish Doctor of Physique and Elizabeth Palmer Daughter of Andrew Palmer of Roydon park in the County of Essex gentleman upon several [?] days [?] the 18th 25th May and the first of June 1656 and no objection was made.

Henry

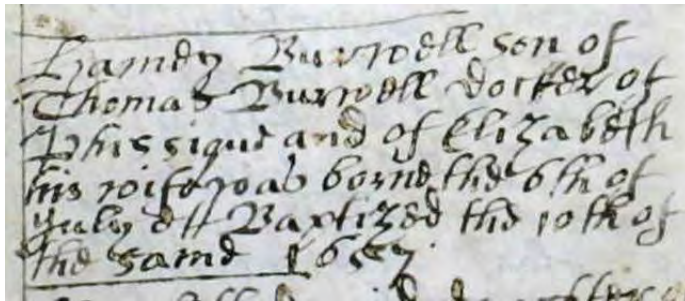
King

A further marriage is recorded in *Boyd's Marriage Index* for Elizabeth and Thomas at St. Peter's, Roydon, Essex.

Thomas Burwell was born in 1626 and baptized on 20<sup>th</sup> April 1626 at Woodbridge in Suffolk. His parents were Edward Burwell of Rougham in Suffolk and Mary the daughter of Jeffery Pitman of Woodbridge, in the same county. The Burwell family has its own entry in the Dictionary of National Biography [DNB].

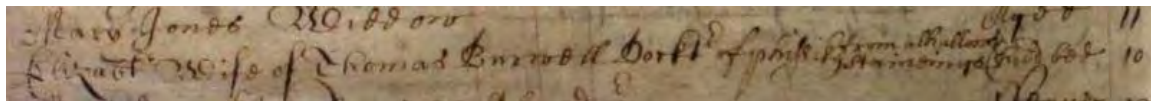
Thomas and Elizabeth (Palmer) Burwell had one son, Hamey, who was born on 6<sup>th</sup> July 1657, and baptised on the 10<sup>th</sup> of that month at All Hallows, Staining.





Hamey Burwell son of Thomas Burwell Doctor of Phissique and of Elizabeth his wife was borne the 6<sup>th</sup> of July & Baptized the 10<sup>th</sup> of the same 1657

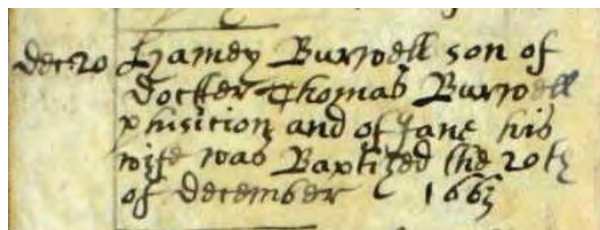
Elizabeth died four days after delivering her son and was buried on 10<sup>th</sup> July at St. Giles, Cripplegate.



Elizabeth wife of Thomas Burwell Doctor of Pysik from All Hallows ...child bed 10

As there are no further records of the son Hamey we assume he died soon after his baptism.

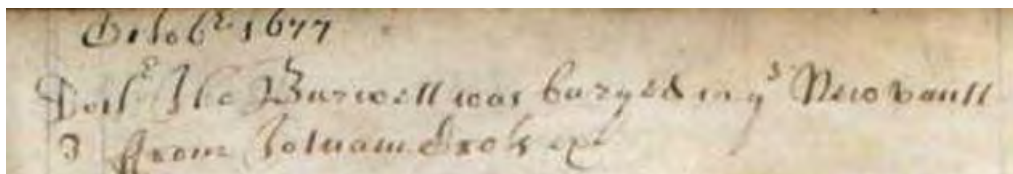
Thomas Burwell next married [Jane Stoughton](#) on 15<sup>th</sup> September 1659. In 1663 a son was born and baptized Hamey Burwell on 20<sup>th</sup> December 1663 at All Hallows, Staining.



Dec 20  
Hamey Burwell son of Doctor Thomas Burwell phisician and of Jane his wife was Baptized the 20<sup>th</sup> of December 1663

This would confirm that the first Hamey Burwell died an infant.

Thomas Burwell died in October 1677 and was buried at St. Olave, Hart Street, on 6<sup>th</sup> October 1677. His burial record is below:



October 6th 1677 Doctor Tho Burwell was buried in ye New vault from [?]

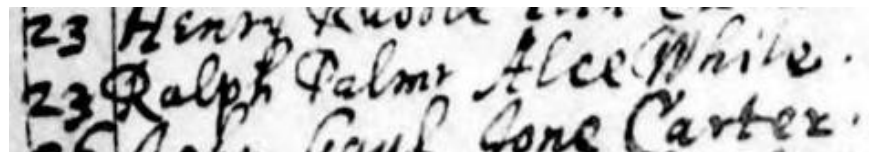
Thomas Burwell was a close friend of Elizabeth (Palmer) Burwell's uncle Baldwin Hamey, Jnr. For details on Thomas Burwell's life based on the DNB see Part Two. The DNB does not take into account Thomas's first marriage to Elizabeth Palmer

and indeed all Burwell genealogies fail to mention it. Thomas's niece Mary Burwell (1654-1711) married Robert Walpole (1650-1700) from whom were descended Robert Walpole (1676-1751), prime minister, his son the literati Horace Walpole (1717-1797), as well as Admiral Horatio Nelson.

### Ralph Palmer (I) (1636-1715/16)

Ralph Palmer (I) was the eldest surviving son of Andrew and Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer of Roydon in Essex. Ralph was born on 6<sup>th</sup> April 1636<sup>12</sup> although so far no record has been located.

Ralph married Alice White on 23<sup>rd</sup> May 1661 at St. George the Martyr, Southwark in Surrey.



Alice White was born on 10<sup>th</sup> November 1633 (Verney Manuscripts), the daughter of William White. Her mother is not known but see The White Family section below.

Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer's first child, Hamey Palmer, was born on 21<sup>st</sup> May 1663, and baptized on 28<sup>th</sup> May; Dr. Baldwin Hamey being one of the gossips [godparents]. The child died an infant on 19<sup>th</sup> June following. This event is recorded in the Verney MSS but so far a burial record has not been located.

Elizabeth, the eldest daughter, was born on 5<sup>th</sup> June 1664, and baptized on the 16<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. Giles, Cripplegate.

The baptisms of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer's other children are all recorded in the register of St. Mary Abbot in Kensington which was transcribed by John Verney into a small vellum bound book that can be found at Claydon House.

The records of St. Mary Abbot have not been filmed so images of these are not available. According to Randall Davies in [\*Chelsea Old Church\*](#), John's vellum book states that the Palmers had the following children:

---

<sup>12</sup> See Berry's *Visitation of Essex*

1666. Baldwin and Hamey<sup>13</sup> [twin] sons of Mr. Ralph and Mrs. Alice Palmer were borne at Little Chelsey ye 19<sup>th</sup> day of July being Thursday about foure a clocke in the afternoon and baptised the 24<sup>th</sup> of the same month. [Both twins must have died young as there is no record of them among the family's correspondence and they are not mentioned in their father's will]

1667-8. Ralph son of Ralph Palmer Gent and Mrs. Alice his wife was borne at Little Chelsey in this Parish ye 14<sup>th</sup> of January and baptised ye 16<sup>th</sup>.

1668-9. Cornelia daughter of Ralph Palmer gent and Mrs. Alice his wife was borne at Little Chelsey in this parish ye 27<sup>th</sup> January about 6 of ye clocke in ye morning and was baptised ye same day.

1670. Alice daughter of Ralph Palmer gent and Mrs. Alice his wife was borne ye nine and twentieth day of December being Thursday at six of the clock in the morning and baptised that day. [For all of the above see also [IGI P00135-1](#)]

Ralph Palmer (I)'s letters can be found among those at Claydon House although they were generally short and to the point and usually just conveyed news about current events.



The Capture of Barcelona;  
© The Trustees of British Museum

A typical example is one written on 23<sup>rd</sup> October 1705 to his son in law John Verney:

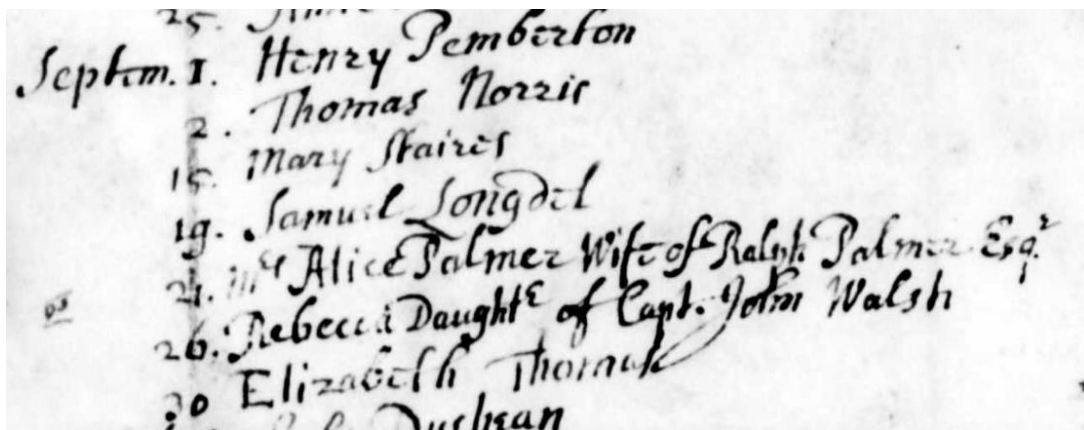
*The Queen sent to the Lord mayor to make a Bonfire, and Tower guns went off as well as the Park Guns, for being in possession of Barcelona.* [VL (I), p. 228]

In 1695 Ralph acted as one of the three witnesses to Sir Ralph Verney's will.

In April 1708 Ralph's wife, Alice (White) Palmer, fell ill but she lingered on and died on 14<sup>th</sup> September 1708, and was buried on the 24<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. Luke's, Chelsea.

---

<sup>13</sup> This Hamey was named after the first deceased Hamey

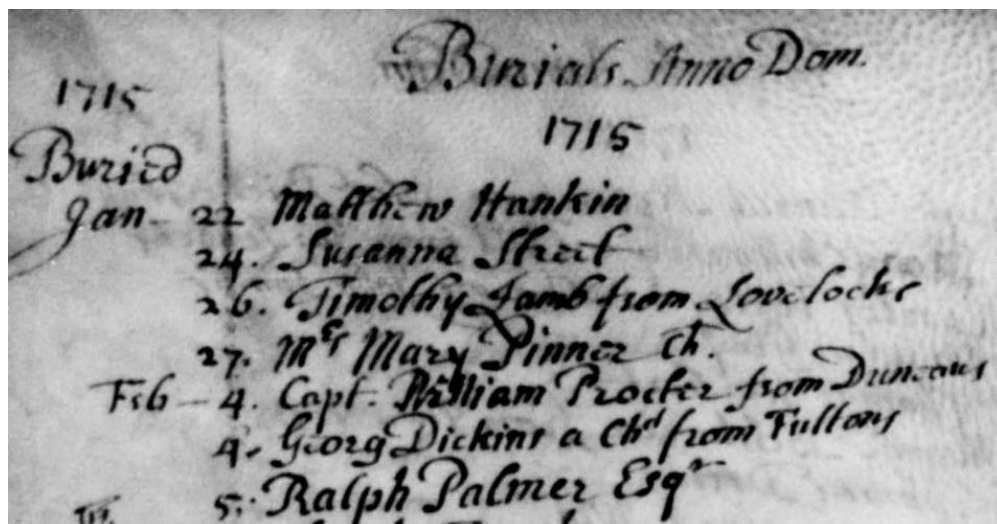


Septem. 24 Mrs Alice Palmer Wife of Ralph Palmer Esqr.

On Alice's death her son Ralph (II) wrote to his brother in law, John Verney:

*This comes from an afflicted hand to acquaint you of the Great loss of my Dear Mother, whom my Nephew [Ralph] Verney came just time enough to see before she died, in the 75<sup>th</sup> year of her age, but she was not so sensible as to know everybody then, for she was gravely ill but in no great pain, and departed very quietly. My poor father is greatly grieved for her and she will be dearly missed in our family, tho' she is much the happier for it. [VL (1), p. ?]*

Seven years later Ralph Palmer (I) died on 1<sup>st</sup> February 1715/16, and was buried on the 5<sup>th</sup> of that month also at St. Luke's in Chelsea.



Feb 5 Ralph Palmer Esqr

Ralph's son Ralph (II) wrote to his brother-in-law John Verney to inform him of his father's death:



*Candlemas day [2<sup>nd</sup> February, 1715/16] I must in great trouble acquaint your Lordship with the Death of my dear Father, as he departed this life after about ten days indisposition, occasioned by a great cold this severe weather, and his Asthmatic habit of body, both which fell very heavy upon his poor lungs. He was blooded and took several things by advice of Dr. Chamberlain which we thought relieved him but Growing worse again, he was blistered, but it would not avail. He was pretty sensible all the time, but I bless God lay quiet till it pleased Him to take him to himself. He is to be buried privately without any show by my dear Mother and near Dr. Hamey's Stone. I hope your Lordship will break this matter to my Niece [Betty Verney] who must needs have a more than ordinary tenderness for him, which is as much as my trouble will give me leave to say. [VL (1), p. 297]*

Francis Luttrell<sup>14</sup> provides a description of Ralph Palmer's funeral in a letter he sent to John Verney on 25<sup>th</sup> February 1715/16.

*I cannot but own with that Share of Sence and discretion in which they [the Palmer's] about, they have been able to furnish themselves with Arguments of Consolation under their late affliction; my poor Sweetheart Mrs. Jane White and my **niece** Alice [Palmer] sink under the weight of their calamity a little deeper than the rest, on which Score I cannot but pity them. On Sunday 5<sup>th</sup> instant, our neighbour [Ralph Palmer (I)] was interred at Chelsea Church; the corpse in a Hearse and two horses with Scutcheons., Sir Thomas Dunck alone in a mourning Coach and two, Mr. Palmer and his Lady, Mrs Alice and **Mrs Challoner** in another Coach and two, with a man on each side of the Hearse and the two Coaches with a Common Link in his hand, sett forward from the old Gentleman's late dwelling house at ten at night; the Body was borne upon men's shoulders to its stand in our Church and the ends of the Pall thrown up over it, for want of Gentlemen to bear it up. After service was performed according to the Rubrick he was laid down in the grave upon Dr. Hamey in our middle Isle where he is at peace. He hath left a good name behind him among all people with whom he had Dealings. On the Sunday after I observed their [the Palmer's] own pew to be hung in mourning and the Pulpit and the Reading Desk and that of the Clerk also, with a border of Scotcheons; our Dr. took down the mourning of Sir William Courtney's mother before it was hung up its due period, to make way for Mr. Palmer's, from whence they conclude what a degree of Esteem and Friendship he had from our neighbour. [VL (1), pp. 391-392]*

---

<sup>14</sup> Francis Luttrell (1682-1749) barrister, next door neighbour of Ralph Palmer's, and son of Narcissus and Sarah Baker the sister of Elizabeth (Baker) Verney.



Chelsea in 1740 with St Luke's Church © The Trustees of the British Museum

A tablet to Ralph and Alice's memory was placed below that of his uncle Baldwin Hamey's (shown below) and which once hung in St. Luke's, Chelsea:



The top half of the inscription refers to Baldwin Hamey Jnr. the bottom half, where the three shields are, refers to Ralph Palmer as follows:

To the memory of  
RALPH PALMER of  
Little Chelsea Esq  
and ALICE His wife. He  
was a near Relation to  
Dr. HAMEY and after  
his example a kind  
benefactor to this  
Church He died Feb 1st  
1715 aged 80 Years  
She the 14th Sepr 1708  
aged 75 and were here  
interr'd

The Hamey and Palmer monument at St Luke's, Chelsea. The monument was destroyed during WWII and was too damaged to restore.

Four of Ralph and Alice's six children pre deceased them namely: Hamey who died after only two days, Elizabeth who married John Verney, and the twins Baldwin and Hamey. Of the twins, Baldwin was buried at Kensington on the 10<sup>th</sup> August 1666; for Hamey we have not yet recovered a death date or burial record; leaving only: two daughters Cornelia and Alice, and a son Ralph (II) to survive into adulthood.

### The Will of Ralph Palmer (I).

A few months after his wife's decease, Ralph Palmer of Little Chelsea in the parish of Kensington in the County of Middlesex Gentleman, wrote his will on 2<sup>nd</sup> November 1708. He would however live another seven years after writing his will. His first wish is to be buried privately at night without any pomp or invitation and he goes on to say:

I having married my son [Ralph] and settled my Leicestershire Lands into his immediate possession as well as the rest of my lands tenements and hereditaments freehold and copyhold either actually or intentionally by my covenant so to do after mine and my wife's decease excepting those lands bought off Baldwin Bird at Roydon in Essex and reserving a power to myself to charge my estate with the sum of three score pounds per annum shall hereafter be more at large expressed Imprimus to confirm and strengthen my said settlements to the sole benefit of my son it having pleased God that I should out live my dear wife I devise and give all my lands, tenements and hereditaments whatsoever both freehold and copyhold which are all surrendered to the uses of my will with their appurtenances to my only son and heir Ralph Palmer and his heirs forever according to the true intent and meaning of my settlement on him at his marriage the lands and tenements above mentioned bought of Baldwin Bird in the parish of Roydon in Essex and now in the occupation of Joseph Big and Rawlins which I devise and give to my daughter Alice Palmer and her heirs forever her elder sister Cornelia's portion having been fully paid and settled on her at her marriage. But if my daughter Alice Palmer shall happen to dye unmarried in the life time of my son Ralph Palmer then I devise and give the said lands and tenements last mentioned to my son Ralph Palmer and his heirs forever or in case my son shall at my said Daughter Alice Palmer's marriage fully pay and satisfy unto her the sum of one thousand pounds then I give and devise the lands tenements and hereditaments last mentioned to my son Ralph Palmer and his heirs forever from the time of such his payment of the said sum of one thousand pounds Item I give and bequeath to my Daughter Alice Palmer moreover the sum of One Thousand Pounds out of my personal estate as her full portion and provision And as \_\_\_\_\_ the sum of three score pound per annum which I have power to charge on my lands and tenements as aforesaid friendship obliges me to remember two Relations particularly who have been most serviceable to me and my family for whose sake I do say and charge on my farm called the Great and Little Lea at Roydon in Essex the sum or Rent Charge of Thirty pounds per Annum to be paid out of the Rents and Profits of the same at the days and times wherever the Rents thereof are received and made payable by equal portions to my Sister [in law] Jane White during her life the first



payment thereof to be made on the first Rent day that shall happen next after my decease if my said Sister Jane White shall be then living Item I lay and charge upon my Lands at Kentish Town in Middlesex the life sum of thirty pounds per annum to be paid out of the Rents and profits of the same at the days and times whenever the Rents thereof are received and made payable by equal portions to **my Niece Ann Chaloner**<sup>15</sup> if my said niece Ann Chaloner shall be then living with power to each of them to distrain for non payment of the same respectively In the next place fourthing what other Personal estate I have Imprimus I do give and bequeath all my stock in the East India Company however such Company is now or hereafter shall be styled and whether such stock be now old or is or hereafter shall be or be called united Stock or otherwise to my son Ralph Palmer his Executors and assigns together with all the profits and benefits thereof whatsoever And I do give and bequeath unto my Daughter Cornelia Dunk my Silver Syllabub Plate and spoon Item I give and bequeath unto my Daughter Alice Palmer my Olive Wood Cabinet that she delivers up safe to my Executor my black Cabinet which I give and bequeath to my Granddaughter Elizabeth [Betty] Verney Item I give and Bequeath unto my Daughter Alice Palmer the diamond Ring consisting of several small stones which my Wife used to wear and my deepest Silver Basoon with one Silver \_\_\_\_\_ plate lastly I do give and bequeath unto my only son Ralph Palmer all the rest of my Goods and Chattels whatsoever my funeral expenses and Debts being first satisfied and paid and I do nominate and appoint my said Son Ralph Palmer Residual Legatee and sole Executor of this my last will and Testament written with my own hand and consisting of two sheets of paper In witness whereof to each sheet thereof I have set my hand and seal this second day of November in the year of our Lord One Thousand Seven Hundred Eight (1708) .



St. Luke's, Little Chelsea © The Trustees of the British Museum

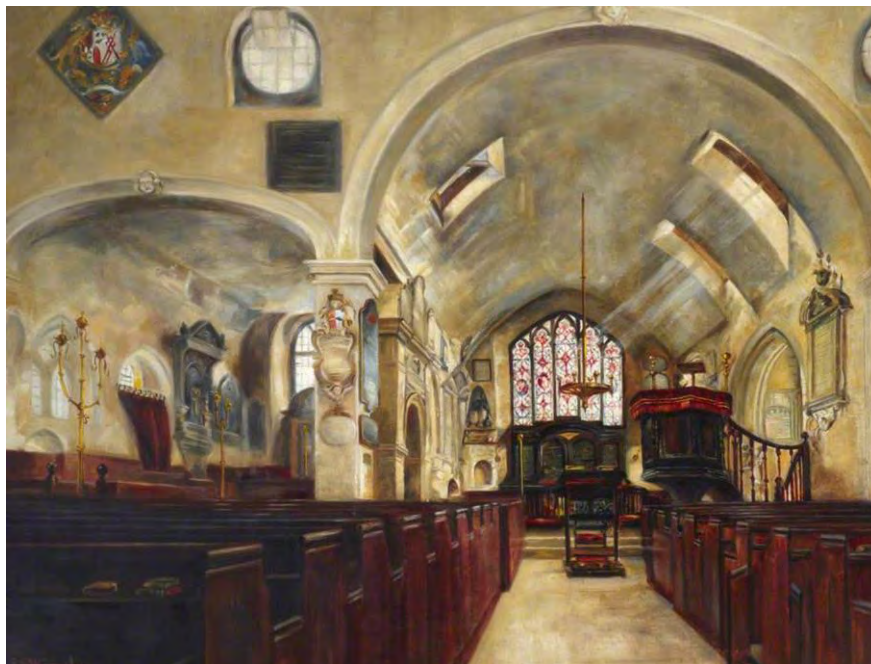
---

<sup>15</sup> This reference to niece Ann Chaloner is interesting and will be expanded on in the Chaloner Family section .

### A Note on St. Luke's, Chelsea

In the early 19<sup>th</sup> century Chelsea was in the process of expanding from a village to become an area of London proper. What was informally known as St. Luke's by its inhabitants became [Chelsea Old Church](#), when in 1819, a brand new church dedicated to [St. Luke](#) was constructed. The new St. Luke's was more centrally located and more convenient for parishoners to attend.

Chelsea Old Church, where some of the Palmers baptised some of their children and where some were buried, dates from 1157. The building originally consisted of a 13<sup>th</sup> century chancel with chapels to the north and south (c.1325) and a nave and tower built in 1670, soon after the Palmer's arrival in the parish.



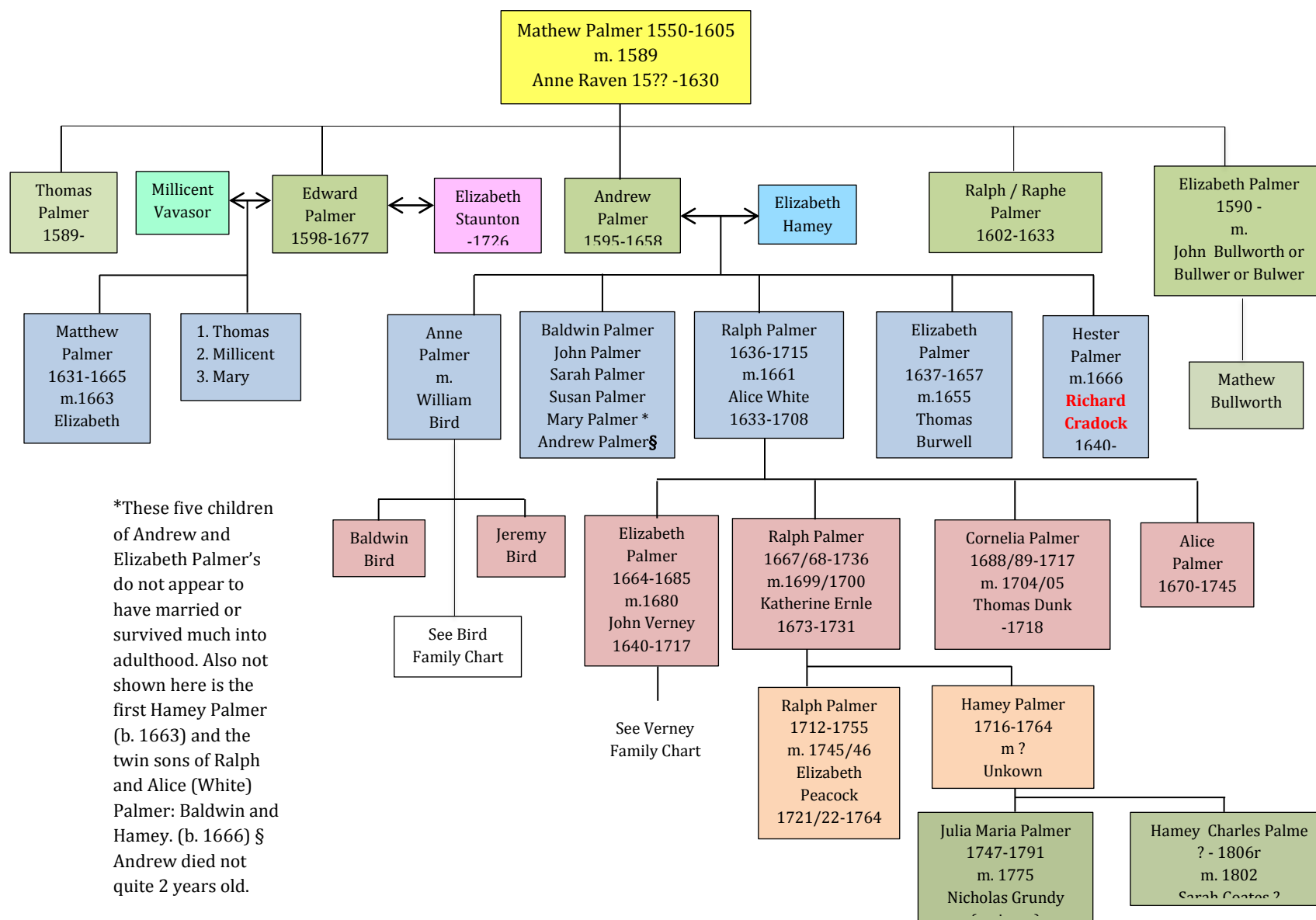
Interior of Chelsea Old Church © The Trustees of the British Museum

In 1941, the church suffered severe bombing during the blitz and services were held elsewhere for nine years. Although great efforts were made to restore the damaged monuments the one to Baldwin Hamey, Jnr. and Ralph Palmer (I) did not survive. The church today looks quite different from the way it did before World War II, as it is now clad in red brick, whereas it was previously a white building. The brickwork was necessary because so much of the original fabric was destroyed.



Chelsea Old Church from the river © The Trustees of the British Museum

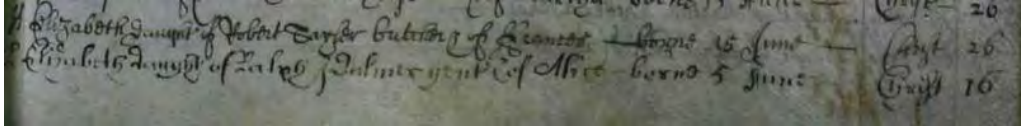
## The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea





### Elizabeth Palmer (1664-1686)

Elizabeth Palmer was born on 5<sup>th</sup> June 1664, the eldest daughter of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer and was baptized on 16<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. Giles, Cripplegate



Elizabeth daughter of Ralph Palmer gent & of Alice borne 5 June Christ 16

Her gossips [godparents] were her great uncle Dr. Baldwin Hamey, her aunt Hester (Palmer) Cradock, and Elizabeth the wife of Mathew Palmer, her father's cousin.

Elizabeth Palmer married John Verney on 27<sup>th</sup> May 1680.

John was born on 5<sup>th</sup> November 1640 at Covent Garden, the second but eldest surviving son of Sir Ralph and Mary (Blacknall) Verney of Middle Claydon in Buckinghamshire. His baptism probably took place at Middle Claydon, as no London record has been located.

John Verney succeeded as second baronet on the death of his father on 24<sup>th</sup> September 1696. In 1703 he was created Baron Verney of Belturbet and Viscount Fermanagh in Ireland.

John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney had four children: Elizabeth (Betty) (b. 1681); Mary (b. 1682); Ralph (b. 1683); and Margaret (b. 1685).

Elizabeth died on 20<sup>th</sup> May 1686 aged twenty at her parents' home in Little Chelsea and was buried on the 28<sup>th</sup> of that month at All Saints Middle Claydon in Buckinghamshire.

Whyman (1999) states that Elizabeth was: **the love of John's life** and his letters and actions reflect this. During their courtship he scratched his initials on her window and wrote afterwards:

*No man breathing can have more love for you than myself ... Pray let the three words I wrote in your glass window testify that I love and love E. P.* [pp. 118 -119<sup>16</sup>]

---

<sup>16</sup> See Whyman (1999) endnotes Nos. 49-54, source page 243, listed at the end of this 'paper' under bibliography and sources.

### The Palmer – Verney Marriage Negotiations

In October 1679 Ralph Palmer's daughter Elizabeth went down to the country to visit her mother's family at Steeple Claydon in Buckinghamshire. There she stayed with her uncle, William White, whom Whyman (1999) suggests had '**fallen on hard times**' and whose family were the '**social inferiors**' of the Verneys. In spite of this Elizabeth was spotted by John's father Sir Ralph Verney who immediately began to entertain the idea that he had perhaps come across a possible spouse for his 39 year old son.

Because John (at the time) was the younger son, the standard for a wife was not set quite as high as if he were the eldest. This allowed John some leeway in choosing among potential candidates and his father contrarily conceded that he would allow his son to choose a wife *to your own liking and where I may approve your choice*.

Sir Ralph described Elizabeth to John as: ... *handsome enough for a wife ... tall enough and straight ... of a jolly good humour, and forward enough, not at all reserved* all in all *a wife-able woman*. However, John responded in a somewhat cool and mercantile way:

*I am ignorant of her fortune ... person, name and complexion, and though, if the first be very large that will blind me to the rest, yet if it be moderate, then the others will necessarily be put into the thoughtful scale for balance*. [Whyman (1999), p. 117]

On 30<sup>th</sup> October 1679 Elizabeth left Steeple Claydon to return to her parents' home at Little Chelsea and Sir Ralph wrote to his son:

*When her uncle [William White] goes up to London, I will send him to you, that you may see her with him at Church, or otherwise as you think best; but if you have no mind to see her, tell me, and I will put it off quickly, therefore please yourself*.

Sir Ralph chose as his '**agent in this business**' Joseph Churchill, a tenant farmer and a first cousin of Elizabeth's [Whyman, p. 118] and on 3<sup>rd</sup> November Sir Ralph writes again from Claydon:

*I have just now given Mr. Joseph Churchill a note of your Lodging, where he hopes to attend you on Wednesday next ... That morning he goes from hence to Chelsea, to his*



*kinsman's house, where the young lady [Elizabeth Palmer] now is with her Father. He will tell you how they stand affected, as to the marriage of their daughter, Mrs. Elizabeth Palmer; also and if they are willing to treat (as I believe they will be), he will attend you on Thursday thither, that you may see her, and she see you, and then if ye like, you may proceed; if not, there is no hurt done. Your best way is to hire a coach, for if you borrow a friends coach, t'will be a means to have it discovered, and so you may tell Mr. Churchill. Her portion is reported £6000, but I doubt t'will be but £4000 .... you must use him [Churchill] kindly, and let him pay nothing, he is a sober man, and expects nothing, but civility. Pray God direct you in this affair, to do what is for his Glory and your Good. [Davies, Chelsea Old Church, p. 208]*



Claydon House today

On the 7<sup>th</sup> John Verney writes to his father:

*This will be deliver'd you by Mr. Joseph Churchill, with whom I went after dinner to Little Chelsey, where we staid about an hour; for my part I am very well satisfied of all persons there, so that now t'will all remain quiet till your coming to Town. Mr. Palmer I take to be an open Ingenious person of a Mechanick<sup>17</sup> humour, being a neat contriver, and keeps his house and gardens very well .... [Davies, Chelsea Old Church, p. 208]*

On 10<sup>th</sup> November 1679, Sir Ralph Verney writes from Middle Claydon to his son in London that Joseph Churchill has come in to see him:

---

<sup>17</sup> 'Mechanick' would appear here to mean 'coarse' or somewhat vulgar but this needs further confirmation.

*And told me what passed between him and you; and of your going to Little Chelsey together, and of your accidental meeting with the Young Lady, the next day, and how she liked you very well that day, much better than she did in the evening the day before. And that you attended her to a Play; and then he left ye together. Now what is to be further done, I must leave to your own discretion, who must needs be better able to judge, being upon the place, than any man do at this distance. For my part I think you may do well to visit her sometimes, least she should think you neglect her; and you may tell her, you would attend her oftener, if her Father would not be displeased at you coming. By her answer to this you will easily see how she stands affected to your coming and by your going to her you will better find out her Humour, and several other things that are fit to be known, before you proceed too far. [Davies, Chelsea Old Church, p. 208]*

On 17<sup>th</sup> November John writes to his father:

*On Friday in ye afternoon I took Coach and went to Chelsey (but had I known who was there I'd not have gone) there I found Mr. White and one of his daughters, so to avoid their Jealousies I had not one word of particular talk with ye Young Lady, Mr. White being always at my Elbow; I suppose he did it out of Civility, but I wished his Ceremony and him too at Steeple Claydon : Mr. Palmer called for wine and sweet-meats, and was very kind. Between 4 and 5 I took leave of 'em. [Davies, Chelsea Old Church, p. 209]*

The annoying Mr. White is Elizabeth's uncle William of Steeple Claydon her mother Alice (White) Palmer's brother.

The question of a marriage settlement now began to be discussed, and John Verney's account of his first interview with Ralph Palmer on that subject was recorded in a letter John sent to his father on 4<sup>th</sup> December 1679:

*I was yesterday at Little Chelsea, but ye Young Lady Mother and Aunt were gone to London, soe being alone with Mr. Palmer he told me had received a letter from his nephew Cha<sup>18</sup> : where in was written as you already know. He asked me if ye place [Waseing/Wasing in Berkshire, which Sir Ralph proposed to settle on his son] was well wooded. I told him 'twas. He told me he was advised there was £3 or £4000's worth of wood on it, and asked me if not. I told him I thought there was not so much for I did think he put that question twice to me to try whether I was given to lying, but both answers I returned him alike . . . . He told me*

---

<sup>18</sup>Who exactly this nephew 'Cha' is a puzzle although it could well be 'Chaloner'.

*had been proffered Gentlemen of £1,000s per annum but he had refus'd 'em because they could do nothing but hunt and Drink, but he contest he would willingly have a settlement of £500 p. annum for his Daughter. . . . He talked of his Daughters having £3,000s, but I took no hold of that, and that it was his care to be very circumspect in the marrying of her; for me he said he liked very well and had heard a very good character of me.* [Davies, Chelsea Old Church, p. 209]

It seems that Ralph Palmer thought: ... *a man of trade a better match than most gentlemen with £1,000 per year. The one is bred to nothing but spend his estate, the other knows how to improve it.* [Whyman, p. 61]

At first the Verneys demanded that Elizabeth Palmer's dowry be £4,000 but in the face of her father's resistance and 'for love's sake' they eventually backed down and agreed to £3,000. Another point of contention was whether John Verney's own wealth was sufficient to match Elizabeth's dowry. Despite Ralph Palmer's close questioning of John as to the value of his Wasing estate he remained skeptical, and through his agents he had it surveyed and valued.

Just as the Palmers probed the Verneys' fortune so too did the Verneys investigate the Palmers'. A search was made of the parish records to establish Elizabeth's age and a copy of her uncle's (Baldwin Hamey) will was obtained from the Prerogative Office. [Whyman (1999), p. 118]

According to Whyman (p. 118) some Palmer kin thought Elizabeth far too young for John, there being 24 years between them, she was 16 and he was 40 [? Whyman says he was 34?].

On 10<sup>th</sup> December John Verney paid another visit to the Palmers in Chelsea:

*I found much civility from them, and truly I think the Young Lady is very good natured person, as a Gentleman of Chelsey told me she was: She plays on the Espinetto [Spinnet] and Organs and Guitar and dances very well. I don't think she's above 18 years old, for once in discourse her mother told me she was married nineteen years ago. I shall easily find out one time or another when Dr Amy [Hamey] died. The first time I was there Mr. Palmer showed me his garden and other out parts of his house. Yesterday he carried me about within which is all very gentile and neat.* [Davies, Chelsea Old Church, p. 210]

A little later John adds a note of caution: *The young Lady I like well enough, but not so much in love withal as to the Consent to unreasonable terms.* [Davies, Chelsea Old Church, p. 210]

As the negotiations over the marriage settlement dragged on, difficulties were raised on both sides. Elizabeth's father began to 'speak so high' and made so many stipulations, that John was at length forbidden to visit the house. And so, he turned to his father:

*A little of your advice Pray Sir, for we are now on a punctilio of honour.*

But by 24<sup>th</sup> January 1680 his prospects appeared to have improved and he took fire sending Elizabeth his first love letter which was followed, two days later, by another both amorous and diplomatic:

*Dear Madam,*

*Imagining that I should not be admitted to see you or that I could not express my mind freely to you, made me put pen to paper to assure you that no man living can love and honour you more than unfortunate me : But such is the severeness of my Fate, Your Good Father stands on such very hard terms that no reasonable man in England can yield to, and because you should know the truth and judge of it He tells you in short that my own gotten Estate in money is Six Thousand Pounds and my father gives me so much land (with the wood on it) as is worth six thousand pounds more, besides a pitsent [pittance] of £200 to furnish a chamber : To which your worthy Father consents to give with your Dearest Self three thousand Pounds, so that altogether the estate would be fifteen thousand pounds. Out of which we Offer (as your Father demands) to settle a Joynture of £400 a year and all other settlements on Children as may be judged reasonable. Thus far both our fathers are agreed. But over-byast [over and above all that] Mr. Palmer would have us settle not only the joynture for your life, but he would provide for God knows whom by settling the Inheritance of £400 a year on his daughters heirs, in Case I dye first without Children. This is so unreasonable that all indifferent men that hear the whole truth do extremely wonder at it, unless I had been worth but £3 or £4000 and he would have given you ten or twelve thousand. But I suppose he casts this bone out of the abundance of his love towards you, as being unwilling to part from so beloved a Creature. Madam, let me perish if I tell you a lie in saying that my whole life never met with any Cross that went so much to my heart, and hath given me so much trouble and sorrow as this hath done : And before I end I have one favour to beg of you, that is, a lock of your Delicate hair, which if you will oblige me with, Pray seal it up and entreat Mrs. J[ane] White (whose servant I am) to enclose*

*it to Mr. Jos: Churchill ordering him to send it to me, who am so wretched I fear to expect a line from your sweet hand. And now, Dearest Madam, I must (with heart breaking) bid you forever adieu; And I pray God that all the felicities that at any time attend the happiest of your sex may be heaped on you. May you live plentifully many contented years in this world, and have Eternal blessings in the next, these be the hearty Prayers of Madam,*

*Your Ladyship's Passionate Lover and most unfortunate Servant John Verney.*

*I have no hopes of happiness unless you'll contribute. My father honours you highly and is very much Yr Servant.* [Davies, *Chelsea Old Church*, pp. 210-211]

Meanwhile John's relations had caught wind of the negotiations and opinions began to fly as to the social standing of the Palmers. One aunt, Penelope Osborne, accused Elizabeth's mother Alice of having once been 'a pitiful chambermaid' [Whyman, p. 117]. On the other hand, another aunt, Cary Gardener, called her family 'as good as ours, and close by us, and her father a gentleman.' John felt that '... as to her birth and education so they be honest I look for no more'. [Whyman, p. 118]

Mrs. [Nancy] Nicholas, a niece and goddaughter of Sir Ralph Verney, contributes a very agreeable picture of Elizabeth Palmer in a letter to him dated 19<sup>th</sup> April 1680:

*Dear [God] Parent, I can do no less than obey your commands which was that when I had been at Chelsea I should send you word. I went as I intended, on Friday and without any fakery I found a woman so far beyond my expectation yet I was much pleased to find myself so deceived. I do verily believe she will make a very good wife and a very good Daughter in Law truly I do verily believe your whole family may be very happy in her for she seems to be very good natured and I believe she hath a very great kindness to your son and I heartily wish and pray so may prove yet in your family ... I do believe she will and yet is a great comfort.* [Davies, *Chelsea Old Church*, p. 211]

This rather gushing testimonial was received somewhat skeptically by Sir Ralph who questioned his son as to its veracity. John writes:

*In answer to what you say of ye Character of my Mrs. [Elizabeth Palmer], My Cousin Nicholas through friendship to yourself and me may be a little blinded.*

And when at the point that it looked as if the marriage negotiations were about to collapse, another one of John's cousins tried cheering him up by claiming that '*E.P. has ferret eyes, and a thousand pimples*' and therefore he really had very little to lose. But this backfired and John rushed so fiercely to the defence of his lady's complexion that the calumny had to be withdrawn. John describes the disagreement to his father:

*.... another person was pleased to tell one that Mrs. E. P. had ferret eyes (which I think she hath not) and that her face was full of pimples (to use her own expression) that there were a thousand in it. It's a thing that any one may have after a long ague, but I never did see but three in my life and them I took particular notice of. And much more such stuff, which had she [the "person"] any real love for me she need not have taken notice of the worst to a stranger; but the end is like the beginning spiteful.*

[Davies, [Chelsea Old Church](#), p. 212]

Peace between the cousins was restored on the mocking understanding that E.P. had but three small spots on her face and that her eyes are of unusual size and beauty.

One other factor almost intruded upon the procedures - John appears to have fathered a child with a servant just before his marriage and although John denied the charge, he paid £12 to silence his accusers, ... **being tender of his reputation and unwilling such a thing should come against him in public upon the stage.**

[Whyman, p. 113]

In the final marriage settlement of May 1680, Elizabeth retained her right to claim a third part of her husband's business and personal wealth on his decease, according to the custom of the City of London, in addition to £2,000 in cash. Furthermore, if the couple had surviving daughters, but not sons, they could claim a share of their father's wealth, £3,000 if one daughter, £4,000 if more. No sums were specified for younger sons. However, John managed to preserve his Wasing estate by ensuring it would descend only to his male heirs and if none then to his father.

After eight months of hard bargaining the Palmers and the Verneys finally had a marriage settlement that both could be satisfied with. At this point John gave Elizabeth a



diamond ring worth £15 and a pair of cut stone seals for both her parents while Sir Ralph sent venison up from the country to the Palmers in Chelsea as well as to his London lawyer. [Whyman, p. 118]

The Wedding Takes Place and Visits are made.

A marriage allegation was entered into on 21<sup>st</sup> May 1680:

John Verney, of London, Merch', Bachr, ab' 35, & Mrs Elizabeth Palmer, of Chelsey, Middx., Spr, ab' 16, with consent of her father Ralph Palmer, of the same, Esq.; at Chelsey afsd .

It was the tradition in the seventeenth century among the gentler sort that weddings were conducted privately and very little notice if any was given to others. However, Ralph Palmer (I) seemed set on upending these expectations as on 20<sup>th</sup> May John Verney writes to his father

*I find Mr. Palmer will not make it a very private wedding, for he thinks to have us married at Chelsea Church about six in the morning and after we are got to his house he cares not who knows it, so that then to be sure all their neighbouring acquaintances of both ye Chelseys<sup>19</sup> will come in. I did all along fear he would carry it so, which made me provide myself with good clothes, and store of Trimming on one suit to furnish the Company with favours which I think are ninety odd knotts on my wedding suit. On Tuesday there was a great hailstorm; I took up several hailstones that measured about six inches, and weighed 2 ozs. [Whyman (1999), p. 96]*

---

<sup>19</sup> The other Chelsey was Great Chelsey.



Canaletto's view of Chelsea from Battersea  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

And again on 22<sup>nd</sup> May 1680:

*I have gotten all things ready, so much as a Gold ring and a License ... so that if they please the wedding may be next Thursday ... I have proposed to them a way to have our marriage privately consummated next Thursday thus, to be married (by Dr. Littleton) at Westminster Abbey (where he's a prebend) or some other Church in London, then to dine with me in the City (at ye Romer) and after dinner to visit my Lady Gardiner [John's aunt], whence to be gone about 4, 5, or 6 a clock, then go eat a Tart at ye Treating house by Knightsbridge, and so go home together about nine at night or a little after when all their neighbours may be within their doors . . . . And if we can keep the news within our own doors from Thursday to Sunday, we shall own it publicly by our clothes<sup>20</sup> in Chelsey Church and then to be sure all their neighbouring acquaintance of both the Chelseys will come in. [Davies, Chelsea Old Church, p. 212]*

The 27<sup>th</sup> May was the date actually decided on for the wedding and John writes to his father:

*I am now to acquaint you that I am this morning going to Westminster Abbey to meet Mrs. Elizabeth Palmer where after Prayers we design to be married in Henry the 7<sup>th</sup> Chapel by Dr. Adam Littleton, very privately in our old Clothes; none will be at it but her Father Mother brother and Aunt J. White; from thence we go to the Rummer in*

---

<sup>20</sup> Weddings were private affairs back then but special wedding clothes would be prepared and worn to church the Sunday after the ceremony to publically indicate that a couple had been married.

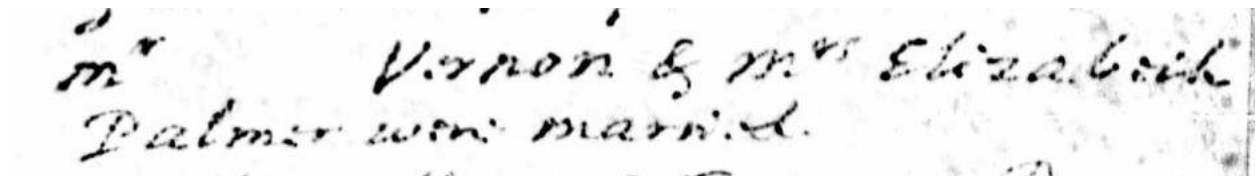
*Soper Lane whether I invite them to dinner...* [Davies, *Chelsea Old Church*, p. 213]



Edward Stillingfleet (1635 – 1699)  
© National Portrait Gallery, London

According to John's letters, the marriage service was performed by the Reverend Adam Littleton although Whyman states that it was performed by the Reverend Edward Stillingfleet, a friend of the family. He also baptized their first child, Elizabeth [Betty]. John collected Stillingfleet's sermons which were numerous and which formed a substantial part of [John's pamphlet collection](#).

The marriage was recorded in the Westminster Abbey register, and also by the following entry in the register of St. Luke's in Chelsea. However the latter is a 'mere memorandum'.



Mr. Vernon [sic] and Mrs. Elizabeth Palmer were married.

On 28<sup>th</sup> May the bride and groom sent this joint letter to Sir Ralph Verney:

*Sir Yesterday (according to what was then wrote you) we performed that grand concern which now entitles us both to be your Children, and we are very certain to receive the blessings which our good parents have so often requested of God Almighty, for which we hope our constant duty and obedience to them will in some small measure repay them this grand debt. Mr. Palmer and Mrs. Palmer our Father and Mother present their service to you and we beseech you to present ours to our Brother*

*and sister, which will be a farther addition of favours to Sir Your most obedient Children, John & Eliza Verney.* [Davies, *Chelsea Old Church*, p. 213]

The bill for the wedding dinner at The Rummer or Rommer<sup>21</sup> near Charing Cross is still at Claydon House and amounted to £8. 17s:

**<sup>1</sup> The bill of John Verney's wedding dinner for seven persons 'at the Rummer in Queen Street London.' May 27th. 1680.**

	s.	d.
Beer-ayle . . . . .	0	8 0
Wine . . . . .	0	11 0
Orings . . . . .	0	1 0
A dish of fish . . . . .	1	0 0
2 Geese . . . . .	0	8 6
4 fatt Chikens . . . . .	0	8 0
2 Rabets . . . . .	0	8 0
A dish of peese . . . . .	0	6 0
8 hartey Chokes . . . . .	0	5 0
A dish of Strabreys . . . . .	0	6 0
A dish of Chereys . . . . .	0	5 6
	8	17 0
Servants 1s.		

Some thirty years later Hogarth included The Rummer in his series *The Four Times of Day: Night*.



A Rummer glass



Hogarth's drawing of the Rummer Inn where John Verney celebrated his marriage to Elizabeth Palmer. In the [public domain](#).

Once John had received Elizabeth's £3,000 portion from her father he immediately invested it by making loans to the

---

<sup>21</sup> Named after a short wide-brimmed glass as shown on Hogarth's drawing (above). Probably derived from the word Roman which refers to the style of glass widely used across the Roman Empire.

City of London as well as to Henry Lee, Earl of Litchfield<sup>22</sup>, a family friend. [Whyman (1999), p.75]

### After the Nuptials: Visits and Setting up a New Home

Much of what follows is based on Whyman (1999). When the newly weds first visited the Verney's country seat at Middle Claydon they provided the locals with a wedding dinner which received Sir Ralph's approbation for its simplicity and economy: *You treated them as kindred ought to be treated, that is with good plain meat, but not costly dainties* [Whyman, p. 90]. And being of a frugal nature, as well as a second son, John felt little compulsion to spend too much on providing costly dinners so when their first born (Betty) arrived John made *no more banquet than a cake and wafers*. [Whyman, p. 75]

As Whyman points out, it was important to introduce the newly wed Elizabeth to her husband's network of London kin and in doing so a certain order needed to be followed, beginning with the most senior members on down. However, it seems that John did not feel constrained by such social proprieties and he decided to present Elizabeth to his relations according to his own dictates. But John ran afoul of convention and earned the censure of some of his relatives.

One aunt, Pen Osborne, was so annoyed that she wrote a complaint to her brother Sir Ralph Verney who passed it on to his son: *...for both her relation and quality required you should go first her* [as a married couple]. [Whyman (1999), p. 96.]

John's reaction was unexpected, he grumbled about those who visited him saying that they behaved *... as gamesters go at backgammon that hit a lot and pass on*. [Whyman, p. 96].

On 9<sup>th</sup> June, John sends his father Sir Ralph souvenirs of the wedding in the form of:

*... a Paper Box directed to you ... most in it is for my Brother's family: It contains as followeth, — In a paper seal'd a Payre of White Gloves and a Payre of Coloured Gloves laced with Black flanders lace, which I desire your acceptance of, And if ye fingers be*

---

<sup>22</sup> A latter Earl of Litchfield would marry Ann Chaloner of the same Chaloner family connected to Elizabeth's mother, Alice (White) Palmer.



*too long for you, Thom Hobart sayeth he will alter them for you when in towne. All Genoa Gloves are long fingerd. A payre of Green fringed Gloves for my Brother; White & Collurd Lace Gloves for my sister; Pink Coulourd trimmed Gloves for Master Ralph; Skye Coulour'd trimmed Gloves for Master Munsey; White Gloves trimmed with Green &c for my little niece<sup>23</sup>. And one of my wife's Wedding Garters for Master Ralph as one of her Bridemen. These tokens of a Wedding I desire them to weare for my sake.*

[Verney, *Memoirs of the Verney Family*, Vol. IV, p. 250]

After the couple's marriage they lived with Elizabeth's parents in Little Chelsea, but John grew tired of the long commute to his place of business in The City and back. It took an hour and a half to get there by land, although he could return more swiftly by boat. As a result, John stayed in The City some nights, rather than suffer *rogues by land, cold by sea, and a dirty walk from Great to Little Chelsea*. [Whyman]



Chelsea Boatmen on the Thames © The Trustees of the British Museum

After a few months John solved his problem by leasing a house in the new development of Hatton Garden.

According to Whyman, although he had no kin on Hatton Street, they were mostly at Covent Garden or Chelsea, the location and price were right and Hatton Garden was fast becoming a fashionable area. Contemporary writers thought its avenues were 'gracefully built and well inhabited by gentry' and the whole place 'fair and spacious'. As Whyman says:

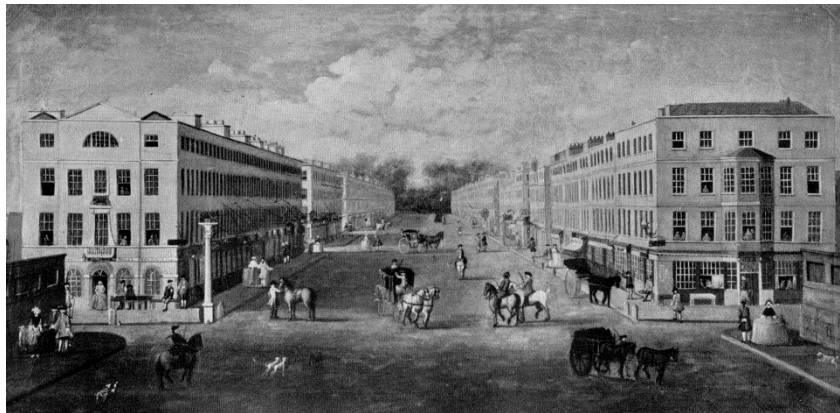
---

<sup>23</sup> The two nephews, Munsie [Edmund] and Ralph and his niece Mary, were the children of John's elder brother Mun [Edmund].

Graceful houses in uniform terraces had twenty-two-foot frontages, two rooms each on three main floors, a basement, attic, back closet, oak staircase, casement windows, and a doorway carved to personal taste. Interiors included ten hearths and were more fashionable than city houses. Merchants and professionals lived side by side with a sprinkling of nobles and gentry. By 1693 Hatton Garden had fifteen titled residents, one bishop, two military officers, nineteen esquires, six doctors, and six lawyers.

But adjacent Little Kirby Street [where Edward Palmer's widow Elizabeth lived], the dwellings were more modest, and nearby Leather Lane and Hatton Wall led to alleys, brew houses, and workshops. Hatton could not restrain leaseholders from subletting to shopkeepers. But braziers, pewterers, and smiths were not allowed, nor were butchers, fishmongers, or tallow chandlers.

John attended the parish church of St Andrew Holborn, but there were plans to build a church on Hatton Street. Perhaps residents were alarmed by three dissenters' chapels behind the yards, one of which held 300 people. [Whyman, p. 45]



Hatton Gardens

By April 1681, the couple was settled '*at the first wooden balcony on the left hand near Holborn in Hatton Garden*'. They rented the house from a lime dealer, Benjamin Cole, and John must have been a tough negotiator. In 1682 his rent was £53. 55., but by 1688 it was reduced to £45. Before John renewed his lease in 1693, he made Cole alter partitions, make street balusters, and put in fashionable window glass.

John decorated his house in the latest style, and he, not Elizabeth, made decisions, perhaps because of her youth. He hired Mr. Smith to 'paint my house and chimney pictures', while Mr. Benjamin Stallwood<sup>24</sup> set Dutch tiles around the drawing room hearth. John had a wainscoted parlour, dining room, drawing room, and chamber,

---

<sup>24</sup> He later became a speculative builder buying land in Chelsea (Danvers Street) and erecting houses.

but he worried about the gilt leather on the parlour walls, for this was 'the first building work that ever I did'. He ordered an extra leaf for his dining table so that it could hold up to thirteen people.

A nursery was fitted up with hangings and bedstead when Elizabeth became pregnant. After partitions were installed and the furnace was ready to brew beer, John's 'glasses, table, and stands' arrived along with portraits of his father and grandfather. Elizabeth acquired three mirrors, silver plate, twenty-four books, and portraits of John and herself by Godfrey Kneller [probably Sir Peter Lely (?)] . Sir Gabriel Roberts helped select tapestries, which were hung in the drawing room by a Quaker upholsterer.

John's brother Edmund [Mun] felt that John had '*room little enough for your own family and warehouses*', and the cook maid certainly needed more space. She refused to lie '*in the passage room between the two garrets*', for '*she never did (nor would) lie in such a damned hole in her life*'.

In 1680, John put his coachman in livery and purchased horses for a new coach. By 1682/83, his expenses were over £500. Sir Dudley North spent an average of at least £826 from 1677 to 1688, but he had additional costs of public office which John did not incur. At about the same time, Sir Richard Temple and Horatio Townshend, 2nd Viscount, were spending over £2,000 annually in London. John's frugality kept costs down, but he was willing to spend money on the accoutrements of a gentleman.

There were plenty of pleasures, for the young couple to attend. They observed the King and his nobles at military spectacles in Hyde Park, and braved crowds to see a 3-year-old speak exotic languages. In 1685 they viewed an East Indian monster with one body growing out of another that was available for investment. In 1684 they went to an art auction at the Banqueting House, but 'great prices' made purchase unthinkable. At Tunbridge Wells, John ostensibly took the waters, but Elizabeth enjoyed the sociability. They saw the Lord Mayor's show 'by land and sea' and followed the King to Windsor.



The Pantiles at Tunbridge Wells © The Trustees of the British Museum

Members of the Verney family welcomed Elizabeth, such as Nancy Nicholson who wrote to her cousin John Verney on 12<sup>th</sup> June 1680:

*I hope you will not deny me the pleasure of an intimate friendship as well as a relation with her.* [Whyman, p. 99]

According to *The Verney Memoirs* Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney is:

... never mentioned in the letters without some affectionate epithet. Child as she was, she at once took the place in the family which the eldest son's wife had never been able to fill. She visited the school-boys of the family at Harrow, and mothered the tall nephews [Edmund's sons Ralph and Edmund] at East Claydon of her own age, as she did her undergraduate brother Ralph at Oxford, who poured out to her all his confidences and was proud to entertain her in his rooms at Trinity College.

To her forlorn little niece, Molly Verney, she was specially kind, sending down '... a Paste-Board Chimney & all the implements with it, in a box for little Misse,' at seven years old; and when she [Molly] was in her teens, looking after her clothes and her studies at Mrs. Priest's genteel establishment for young ladies at Chelsea, where the girl is said to improve wonderfully. Elizabeth's gracious kindness makes her home 'over against the coffee-house in Hatton St. Hatton Gardens' a happy meeting place for all the young ones of the family. She packs her coach to its utmost capacity, to take the Stewkeley girls to the 'Grand Ball at Chelsey School' where Molly Verney and Betty Denton distinguish themselves as dancers: *I wish you could have seen "pretty Miss,"* she writes to the latter's flighty mother, Hester Denton. Sir Ralph was her devoted servant, and her grave and matter-of-fact husband, some twenty-five years older than herself, never ceased to be her lover during the six short years of their married life. He commissioned Sir Peter Lely to paint her portrait. [Verney *Memoirs*, Vol. IV, pp. 251-252]

During their rare separations, their letters reveal the depth of tender sentiment which underlay the cautious reserve of the worldly-wise man of affairs.

On 24<sup>th</sup> September 1681, he writes to her while she is paying some family visits in Buckinghamshire and he is in charge of their first baby, Elizabeth (Betty) [Verney Memoirs, Vol. II, p. 371].

*Dearest Deare, I wrote you this morning by the Sept. 24, Coach Since which I have received your pretty lines under the 22<sup>nd</sup> and for your tender Expressions there is nothing but a reciprocal love can make you returns, and that be confident you have. Pretty Precious [Betty] is grown much, and her nurse to that degree of bigness that you can't Imagine. ... I have put up in a paper Box directed to you, your Black Crape Manto, to dress you in when the mornings are cold. ... Make much of your deare selfe and 'twill do comfort to me then, to hear of your wellfare and pleasure. My Mother<sup>25</sup> hath bought ye Child a Morelly Coate Striped Yellow & Black — and Some lace for Capps, that you left being, as she thought, too narrow. She hath put that on under it I thinke. I hope you were made much of at Hillesden, Eastcliff, Stow, otherwise the Ladyes there loose there reputation with me. Pray Send one of your Shoes to Alesbury or Bucks to have a pare of Cloggs fitted to it, that you may walk about without taking in wet at your feet & what letters you receive from me either burn 'em or locke 'em up in ye little cabinet: I thank you for your ten thousand kisses and wish I had one half dozen from you in ye mean time; but for this vacancy we'll have ye more when I return to you whom God preserve. I rest your Truly loveing and most affectionate Deare J Verney.*

[He adds a PS] *have had my hare cut.* [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 252]

When John leaves town Elizabeth sends him excellent reports of the business matters which are referred to her in his absence; she is much in request, but refuses invitations, only dining with her husband's old aunts, who delight in her company. On 25<sup>th</sup> June 1683 she writes:

*All pleasure to me I find is nothing without you. ... After church my cousens Stewkley sent for me to go to Spring Gardens [later Vauxhall], with them & Miss Dickenson, with a consort of Musick of Jack Stewkley's bringing, I thanked them but I did not care to go because of Miss Dickenson, but if she had not bin there I should not*

---

<sup>25</sup> John is referring here to his mother in law Alice (White) Palmer.



*have gone with so many wild young men as there was, & had need take care who one goes abroad with these times. ... I rest your most affectionate but melancholy wife till your return E. V. [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 253]*

John replies from Middle Claydon:

*Deare Heart, I thank you for your June 28 news & for writing a long letter, for I could be all day reading your lines. ... Now to employ you.*

Here according to the editor of the *Verney Memoirs* there follows a list of commissions with such minute directions as his father Sir Ralph used to give to his wife Mary forty years before. In this case Elizabeth is to prepare for a guest - Nedd - his father's under-butler & pheasant keeper, who is coming up from Claydon to fetch John's horses, and he is to stay three or four days so that their man Robert may show him the town; he is not to sleep with Robert however:

*... first because of Robert's sore throat & because that Bed is but small & Nedd is grown big, so it will not hold them ... he is your acquaintance so I need not bid you make him welcome.*

On 28<sup>th</sup> June John is still at Claydon and Elizabeth writes:

*Dearest Joy I hope you will make no long stay, for I long to see thee, I would not live this life always without you for all the world. My duty to Sir Ralph and tell him I wish myself with him.*

He sends her in return: ... *everything that the lovingest of husbands can express to the best of wives, & love to the little ones not forgetting the kicker in the dark.* [Elizabeth was pregnant]

*Dearest, he writes again, I'm very Sorry John my Coachman Should be so great a clown to you & so Sullen now I am from home; but t'is the nature of the Beast. I was so angry about it that I did presently agree with one here who is not a slightly fellow, but I think he is a better natur'd man than John, but (do not speak of it to anybody,) he never drove a Coach but once, but he is a very good Cart or Wagon driver & hath of a long time had a mind to live with me.*

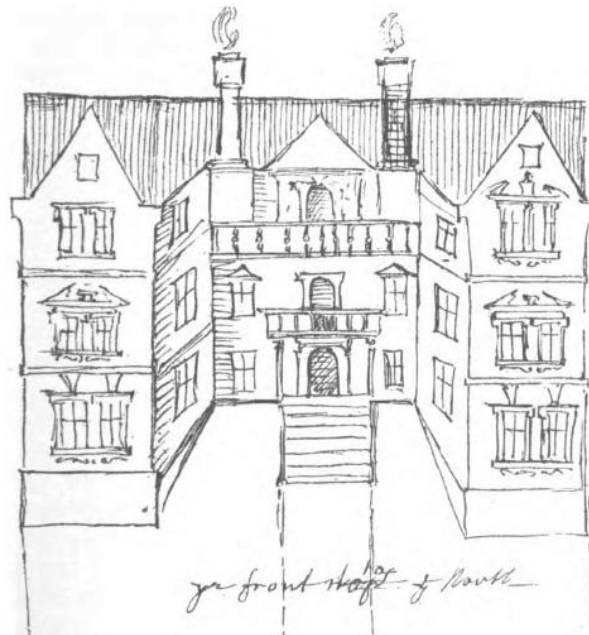
*Pray as often as you see our Excellent Father & Mother let them have my Duty, with Love & Service to the rest of that family & Blessing to my Children and for thyself I send*

*thee all the Kindness & Love which can be Expressed by your Dear Jn. Verney.*

[Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 254]

During her pregnancies John expressed his concern for Elizabeth asking her to inform him about *pains on the inside and when she next kicks* correctly guessing that their first child would be a girl. After one birth he held her hand for two hours because she could not sleep. [Whyman].

Elizabeth also enjoyed living in the country and appreciated the freshness of the air. In a letter to John she writes that a Claydon neighbor now in London (Mrs. Dormer) ... *wonders at me to stay in the country, and I .... wonder at her .... to leave the fresh air and go up to the dusty town.* [Whyman, p. 58]



The original Claydon House as Elizabeth Palmer would have first seen it © Claydon House Trust

According to *The Verney Memoirs*, Elizabeth's father in law approved of her, describing Elizabeth as a '*kind and loving wife*' and amongst Sir Ralph's grandchildren, Elizabeth's four little ones held a very special place in his heart. [His other grandchildren were Ralph, Edmund (Munsie), and Mary (Molly), who were the children of his eldest son Edmund (Mun) ].

They were bright, attractive children, and every incident in their lives was reported to their grandfather. The

eldest girl (Betty) was Sir Ralph's god-child, the family doctor [William Denton] stood as his proxy, and wrote to Sir Ralph after the christening:

*As I have promised & vowed that your marvelous pretty Girl "Betty Verney" shall forsake the Devil & all his works, so be sure you take care thereof when I shall be gathered to my fathers...* [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 255]

The second child, Margaret is named after her grandmother, Margaret Denton. Her uncle Emund [Munsie] Verney, and cousins Nancy Nicholas and Hester Denton are the gossips.

Before the birth of her son Ralph, Cary Gardener hopes that Elizabeth would have a boy:

*... for I find our sex is not much valued in our age, not before 'tis a woman I hope they will be better esteemed.* [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 255]

The father and grandfather were in real distress when: *the footboy Harry being about the coach with Ralph who was in it, shut the Coach door upon the Child's fingers, and quite pulled off ... one of Ralph's nails with some little bruises.*

The 'hero' of this adventure, Ralph, had now reached the mature age of three, and the family had scarcely recovered the shock of the death of John's nephew Ralph, his brother Edmund's eldest son [who had died 10<sup>th</sup> February 1686/85], when little Ralph and his elder sister Mary fell dangerously ill.

John's anxieties were divided between them and his wife, who was beginning to look sadly thin and worn. He tried to persuade her to go to Claydon to rest while he remained in charge of the little ones. [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 255]

John's father, Sir Ralph, who was afraid of infection and fatigue for both of them, wrote urgently to John.

*I wish my Daughter [Elizabeth] were here & you with her, for you can do nothing about your children, 'tis not a Man's employment, but Women's work, & they both understand it & can perform it much better than any Man can do. A good nurse keeper is better than Ten men, therefore think upon it before you resolve to stay with them, & God direct you for the best.*

Molly [Mary] and Ralph continue as they were, very ill of a fever & pains with a short cough very fast, but according to their father, they will not tell where their pains are, nor will they take anything but:

*... small Beare, nor that if anything be mingled with it, that we have trouble enough. Those things that they love so very well when in health as Sugar, Candy, Prunes, etc. they will not now touch, nor will they let the Doctors touch their hands, but pray that neither their Uncle Dr. Denton nor Mr. Gelthorpe the Apothecary may not come to 'em. God be their Physician, & spare their lives. [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 247.]*

And John's brother Edmund [Mun] at Claydon cannot hold out hopes that they will be:

*... cured Hereabouts, for all our most able & Eminent Doctors of this Vicinage [vicinity] , Have Left off their Practice, & are Grown Virtuous Stoics.*

*'The crafty Babies'* who would neither be *'blooded nor vomited,'* were perforce left to Nature and falsified their physicians' predictions by making a good recovery.

However their mother, Elizabeth, whose ailments were less definite, was gradually getting weaker, although the loving hearts about her failed to recognise any danger. [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 257.]



Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney © Claydon House Trust

### 1686: The Death of Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney

Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney died at her parents' home at Little Chelsea on 20<sup>th</sup> May 1686 at the age of twenty-two. Her death is hardly mentioned among the Verney letters which according to Whyman (p. 119) may have been an indication of the 'great suffering at her loss'.

Her body was taken to Middle Claydon for burial in the Verney family vault, and in doing so John wrote that he had buried with her the happiest chapter of his life.

Margaret Verney, the editor of the *Memoirs of the Verney Family*, writes that Elizabeth's life:

... came gently but swiftly to a close; the responsibilities of a wife and mother had been laid too soon on girlish shoulders, and though she carried them bravely, her strength was not equal to her courage and capacity. But there was no break in the outward activities of John's career; he was not a man to trouble others with his sorrows; to them he was the efficient, successful, rather cold, man of affairs he had always been, but God be thanked, the meanest of His creatures Boasts two soul-sides—one to face the world with, One to show a woman when he loves her.

[*Memoirs of the Verney Family* (Vol. IV, p. 418)]

At the time of Elizabeth's death in London her father-in-law, Sir Ralph Verney, was also in London but was so unwell that he was unable to return to Claydon for Elizabeth's funeral. William Coleman, the Verney family steward, writes on 24<sup>th</sup> May 1686:

*I am soe concerned to hear your illness to continue, that I am not able at present to wright to you about any business for tears ; my prayers I am sure & some hundreds in the County about you, are for your long life & health, both amongst us your Servants and them your neighbours .... I will to the best of my power be careful of all your business I am employed in, & observe all your commands about Mrs. Verney's coming down to be buried.* [[\*Memoirs of the Verney Family\*](#) (Vol. II, p.451)]

Meanwhile at Claydon House John attended to every detail of the funeral, and ordered that the motherless children were to wear black crape at 17 pence a yard. He also paid for his father's cloth-crape which he carefully noted cost 14 pence. The portly family coachman, Philip Buckley, was given two large dimity (wool) waistcoats at 10 shillings



and a Pair of mild Serge breeches at 11 shillings. Mrs. Lillie, the housekeeper, sends up *a bit of silk for a pattern of the church cushions*, which are to be also garbed in black [Verney Memoirs]. Sir Ralph's sisters suggested that he should also put his coach in mourning for *tis now a general custom*. [Whyman, p. 105].

William Coleman, still concerned about Sir Ralph's health, wrote to him on 29<sup>th</sup> May 1686.

*Here are people daily to inquire of your good health most that know your Worship doe pray for your health, Mr. Butterfield last Tuesday praid for you in the Church & I hope it will please God to heare our prayers, it being I am sure from mee with an humble heart. Mr Fall & Mr Rutherford of Roxton was here at Mrs Verney's burial, but did not stay to supp here, **Mr White & his daughters & Mr Jos: Churchill & his wife & 3 children** stay'd supper.*

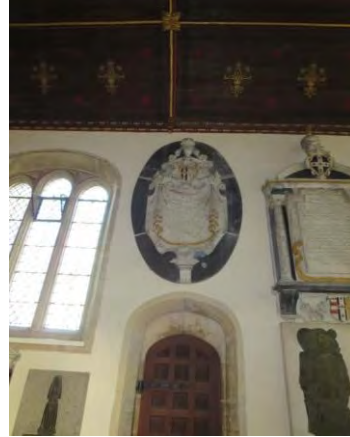
The reference to the White and Churchill families at this post-funeral dinner indicates a family relationship among those mentioned and the Palmer family which is taken up in the section below on the White, Chaloner, and Churchill families.

Below Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's wall monument at All Saints Church, Middle Claydon.

Elizabeth Verney,  
Wife to John Verney of Waseing,  
in the County of Berks, Esq<sup>r</sup>,  
(2<sup>nd</sup> Son of Ralph Verney, K<sup>t</sup> & Bar<sup>t</sup>,)  
the eldest Daughter  
of Ralph Palmer of Little Chelsey,  
in Middlesex, Esq<sup>r</sup>.  
She left Four Children, viz.  
Ralph, Elizabeth, Mary, & Margar<sup>ett</sup>,  
and departed this Life  
the xx. of May, A.D. mdclxxxvi.  
in the 22<sup>nd</sup> Year of her Age."

" Erected to the Memory of his most beloved & deserving Wife."





On her death Elizabeth left behind four very young children: Betty was 5 years old, Mary was 4, Ralph 3, and Margaret barely a year and much of their upbringing was left to the Palmer family who lavished great care and attention on them and arranged for their education at local schools in and around Chelsea.

The Palmers also lent John Verney fairly substantial amounts of money through his lifetime and in 1703, when marriage portions needed to be raised for John's two daughters, Mary and Margaret, John turned to Ralph Palmer (II) for the money [Whyman, p. 77 and p. 119].

### 1690 John Verney Becomes his Father's Heir

When John became a widow for the first time on 20<sup>th</sup> May 1686, his eldest brother Edmund (Mun) was alive and well, as was Edmund's youngest son Edmund (Munsie). However,

Mun's eldest son Ralph had died a few months before Elizabeth on 10<sup>th</sup> February 1686. The news of Ralph the eldest son's death was conveyed by his father (Mun) to his surviving son Edmund (Munsie), who was at Oxford, in a letter dated 11<sup>th</sup> February:

*My dearly beloved son Ralph departed this transitory Life yesterday morning about 11 a Clock. . . my Heart is so incurably pierced with grief for the loss of my dear child that I can no more be comforted than Rachel was who wept for her children ... My poor son is this day to be put up into 3 coffins, 2 of wood & 1 of lead & is to be drawn to his dormitory in my father's vault in Middle Claydon, I shall not stir out of doors till he is gone ...* [Verney Memoirs, Vol. II, p. 422]

Son Edmund responds on 29<sup>th</sup> February 1686:

*Most Honoured Father, I Received Both yrs. that of the 16<sup>th</sup> and that of 18<sup>th</sup>, and by the former I understand, that it was the pleasure of Almighty God to take unto himselfe the soule of my dearest and only Brother, But I hope the Thoughts of the happyness, which he enjoyes in Heaven, will in a great measure lessen the sorrow, which I undergo by loosing so near and so dear a Relation. Now seeing it has pleased Almighty God to make me acquainted with the sorrows and Afflictions of this world, by taking from me my only Brother, I hope it will be a means to make me fear God, and Honour you and my Mother, and by so doing I hope I shall render both you and my selfe Happy.*

*I have made me a new Black cloth suit, and a new black morning Gown, which with new muzeline Bands and Cloth shooes will stand me in very near ten pounds ...*

[Verney Memoirs, Vol. II, p. 422]

Thus on Elizabeth's death the prospect that her only son Ralph might one day inherit the Verney baronetcy was still quite remote. Then two years later, on 25<sup>th</sup> September 1688, John's elder brother Mun (Edmund) died and then Mun's second and only surviving son Munsie (Edmund) died on 28<sup>th</sup> February 1690 of smallpox, leaving Elizabeth's husband John and their son Ralph (II) the future masters of Claydon House.

### John Verney's Two Other Marriages

Five years after Elizabeth's death, John married Mary Lawley on 10<sup>th</sup> July 1692, daughter of Sir Francis Lawley and Lady Anne Whitmore. Sir Francis, like John, belonged to the Vintners' Company and had an estate in Staffordshire. He shared an interest in the Rainbow coffee-house in London,

served on the Privy Council, was an MP for Wenlock and Salop (See [The History of Parliament](#)), a custom-house commissioner, as well as Keeper of the Jewel House (1691-97) [Whyman, p. 119]. Mary Lawley's sister Esther married Robert Palmer of the same family as Elizabeth's (see Early Palmer History)



Sir Thomas Lawley,  
Mary's grandfather [In the public domain.](#)



Lady Anne (Manning) Lawley,  
Mary's grandmother. [In the public domain.](#)

According to the *Verney Memoirs* the Palmers put sad memories aside and welcomed Mary Lawley into the family. One of John's aunts, Pen Osborne, made Mary promise to be *kind to the childer*ing that were left behind by Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's early death [Whyman, p. 119].

*The Verney Memoirs* describes Mary (Lawley) Verney as:

... a tall, dignified woman ... of a gracious presence, and the mode in which her black hair towered above her forehead made her statelier still. John presents her with a breast jewel worth about £100. He writes: *Diamonds are cheaper than they were a*



*dozen years ago, I design to buy her another toy of £50 after marriage in what she likes best.*

He gives her a set of: *Dressing table plate, & brushes & a looking glass; she said her Mother designed her such a thing but now she would have it in somewhat else. ... I have put side glasses to my Coach, & taken off the redd Tassels from my harnesss & put on White ones & also white trappings on ye bridles & made new Liveries for my Servants, the Arms I will alter shortly by putting her Coate with mine.* [*The Verney Memoirs*, Vol. II, p. 488]



The statuesque Mary Lawley (1661 – 1694) with her page Peregrin Tyam (c1683-1707)  
©Claydon House Trust

Mary takes up her step motherly duties and nurses little Ralph (II) very kindly in a fever, and wins all hearts in the family circle. In October 1693 John's happiness seems complete when a son is born to them, and then the child dies, and Mary falls a victim to smallpox when she is expecting for the second time to become a mother. [*The Verney Memoirs*, Vol. II p. 472]. But neither mother nor child survives.



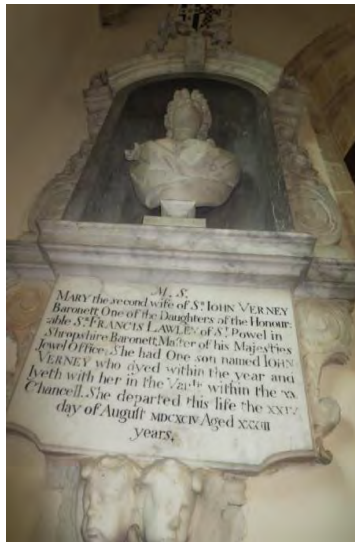


Anne Whitmore, Mary Lawley's mother;  
in the [public domain](#)



Sir Thomas Whitmore, Mary Lawley's maternal  
uncle © Shrewsbury Museum and Art Gallery

Mary was only 33 years old when she died on 24<sup>th</sup> August 1694 and like her predecessor, Elizabeth, she was buried at All Saints, Middle Claydon.



m.s.

MARY the second wife of Sir John Verney Baronett One of the daughters of the Honourable Sir FRANCIS LAWLEY of St. Powell in Shropshire Baronett, Master of his Majesties Jewel Office. She had one son named JOHN VERNEY who dyed within the year and lyeth with her in the vault within the Chancell.

She departed this life on the XXIV day of August MDCXIV Aged XXXIII years.

In 1695 the twice-widowed John was again courting a wife, this time Elizabeth Baker, the eighteen-year-old daughter of a rich haberdasher, Daniel Baker, who was a neighbor of

John's at Hatton Garden. Mr Baker was also one of the Governors, with John, of the Bridewell. Elizabeth's sister Sarah Baker had married the diarist and MP [Narcissus Luttrell](#) (1657-1732) who resided nextdoor to the Palmers at Little Chelsea.



Elizabeth (Baker) Verney  
© Claydon House Trust

Steely cold, Elizabeth Baker stood most in contrast to John's first wife, Elizabeth Palmer. Her letters are pithy and to the point. However, the marriage settlement was less favorable to the Bakers than to those of John's two previous wives, reflecting the social difference perhaps between The Verneys and The Bakers. [Whyman, p.122]

John and Elizabeth were married on 8<sup>th</sup> April 1697 at St. Mary Abbot, Kensington. The marriage itself was successful, although childless, maybe because she was a good stepmother to Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's children. At the time of her marriage the Verney children were aged between 16 (Betty) and 12 (Margaret).

Although she was an astute businesswoman who actively struggled for privileges, when John died she lost the power that his protection gave her. Once a widow, differences between her and John's children appeared. There was a quarrel over a silver tankard and the value of wood on her jointure lands. [Whyman, p. 122]

Elizabeth's letter written to her step-son Ralph Verney (II) a year after her widowhood (1717) in response to an attempt to remove the silver tankard from her is reproduced in *The Verney Letters*. It shows her character as well the concerns of early 18<sup>th</sup> century families over possessions.

*My Lord I am very much surprised in what you writ about the Tankard for I assure you the Tankard is mine and I paid for it out of my own money, indeed a great while ago ... I had sent for it up to Town to have it changed a way with my father's Tankard which can't be mended but that Mrs [Betty] Verney told me she loved to drink out of a*

*tankard best ... so Sir you may Judge if I would have sent for it up if it had been my Lord Fermanagh's – for all this past between us one morning abed – and God knows I did not think my Lord was so near his end, and my Lord was always so exact in his plate, that he never left the plate in my keeping but what was my own, nor put it in any Bill, and what was his he always made a Bill of, so I don't doubt you will find the Tankard set down paid for, as I hope he has both in Justice to himself and me. I hope let my circumstances be what they will I shall have such principle of Honour as not to have mentioned a piece of plate that was not my own. Sir, if you are convinced I have no right nor right to the Kettle and Lamp, otherwise than as a present from you, I accept it as such and return you thanks for it ... [VL (2) , p. 55]*

Before her death Elizabeth makes a brief appearance in the public eye when placing an advertisement for a lost dog:

**STray'd away from the White House in**  
King-street, Bloomsbury, on Saturday last the 18th Instant, at Four o' Clock in the Afternoon, a Harlequin Bitch with Milk in her Teats, a white Neck and Breast, and a white streak from her Nose up her Forehead, having three black Spots on the Tip of her Nose; she is of a Dun Colour, spotted with dark brown, with her Ears cropt off, one very close, and the other a little Bit remaining, her Tail Dun, the Tip of it white, she is thin-body'd and long-legg'd. Whoever shall bring this Bitch to the Viscountess Dowager Fermanagh's in Great Russell-street, Bloomsbury, shall have a Guinea Reward, and no Questions asked.  
N. B. She is a Bitch very well known by Numbers of People.

*The Daily Post, 21<sup>st</sup> May 1728*

STray'd away from the White House in King-street, Bloomsbury, on Saturday last the 18th Instant, at Four o' Clock in the Afternoon, a Harlequin Bitch with Milk in her Teats, a white Neck and Breast and a white streak from her Nose up her Forehead, having three black spots on the tip of her Nose; she is of a Dun Colour, spotted with dark brown, with her Ears cropt off, one very close, and the other a little Bit remaining, her Tail Dun, the Tip of it white, she is thin-body'd and long-legg'd. Whoever shall bring this Bitch to the Viscountess Dowager Fermanagh's in Great Russell-street, Bloomsbury, shall have a Guinea Reward, and no Questions asked.

N.B. She is a Bitch very well known by Numbers of People.

Almost twenty years after her husband, Elizabeth died on 12<sup>th</sup> December 1736 without leaving a will.

**Last Saturday Morning died, after a short Illness, at her House in Great Russell-street, the Right Hon. the Countess Dowager of Fermanagh, and on Friday next her Corpse is to be interred in St. George's Church; Bloomsbury.**

*The Daily Gazetteer, Tuesday, 14<sup>th</sup> December 1736*

Her step daughter in law Catherine (Paschall) Verney writing to her sister Mrs. Mary (Paschall) Stone informs her of Elizabeth's death on 14<sup>th</sup> December:

*Last Saturday evening about 5 o'clock, my Lady Fermanagh died suddenly as she sat in her chair in the parlour. There was company in the room with her, and she was talking and laughing the minute she died. She has been out of order some time, not so bad but she went abroad, she has died without a will, so all she has left goes between the Bakers and Mr. Luttrell. I believe she will be buried at Penn, but that wasn't sure. [VL (2), p. 158]*

On 3<sup>rd</sup> January 1737, Betty Verney responded to the news of her stepmother's death thusly:

*I was greatly surprised to hear the News of my [step] mother's death, not thinking she had been so bad as to be sure she was, tho' she was taken off suddenly at last. I have not heard of her Internment yet, but suppose it was over; I put on my mourning a week ago, which I was obliged to buy new here, not having anything that I could wear on the occasion ... [VL (2), p. 158].*

#### John Verney's Early Life

In 1643, when his father, mother, and brother Edmund left England for France (eventually settling at Blois) rather than face a parliamentary trial that would have attempted to establish Ralph Verney (I)'s commitment to the Parliamentary cause, John Verney as a very young boy was at first left behind at Claydon House along with four of his Verney aunts.

As Antonia Fraser writes: For such dowerless young ladies, there were no brilliant matches available. One sister [Susan] married a debt-ridden and drunken widower, spending her early married life at his side in the Fleet prison; another [Peg] married 'a very humoursome cross boy' who was soon to make her cry 'night and day; and the third [Betty], a poverty-stricken curate; the fourth with 'one Robert Lloyd' and was probably pregnant beforehand. [Antonia Fraser, *The Weaker Vessel*, pp. 267-8] Later on a fifth aunt, Pen Denton, broke her heart with joy when her husband died. [Tinniswood, p. 501]





Blois © The Trustees of the British Museum

In 1646, John's mother returned to Claydon while her husband Ralph (I) remained in France, and she sends him a quaint picture of what she found:

*I must give thee some account of our own babyes here. For Jack his leggs are most miserable, crooked as ever I saw any child's, and yett thank god he goes very strongly, and is very straye in his body as any child can bee; and is a very fine child all but his legges, and truly I think would be much finer if we had him in ordering, for they lett him eat anytinge that he hath a minde to, and he keepes a very ill diett; he hath an imperfection in his speech, and of all things he hates his booke: truly tis time you had him with you for he learnes noething heare. You would be much*

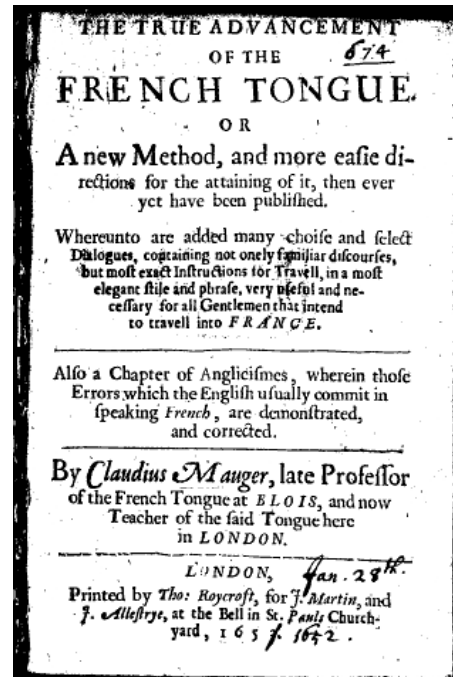
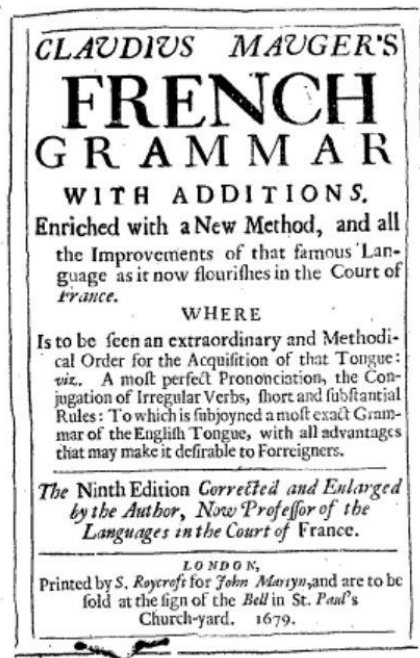
*pleased with his Company, for he is a very ready witted Child and is very good company, and is soe fond of the name of his Father and Mother; he is alwayes with me from the first hower that I came, and tells me that he would very fayne goe into ffrance to his father: he sings prettely. [And later] Jack is a very gallant boy ... he hath noe fault in him besides his leggs, for though he is mine owne I must needs say he is an extream witty child. [Verney Memoirs, Vol. II, p. 293]*

The DNB states:

... at the age of seven John joined his family in Blois, France, in exile from the civil war. Because Sir Ralph feared any taint of popery, John was taught by protestant tutors. Although he never saw himself as a scholar, his life in France exposed him to continental codes of civility and politeness. He penned beautiful letters under the tutelage of Claudius Mauger, the author of epistolary manuals. John later owned works by Descartes, Montaigne, and Cervantes, as well as classical and religious books.

Below, the title pages from two of Claude Mauger's grammar books.





At ten years old, when left in charge of an English nurse at Blois, John wrote to his father that he would study his books, and take pains with his guitar, and never spend his money in 'frute' nor gunpowder, nor play with naughty street boys, nor stand about at the fair when the sun is hot, nor eat cherries, nor ever disoblige the best of fathers. And his nurse endorses his good character:

*Mr. John hath kept his clothes in so good order, I have not had to buy anything for him: next weecke I will send him againe to scholle, allthough wee are great gainers by his sober company.*



*John Verney*

© Claydon House Trust

When the family returned to England in 1653, John studied at the Barn Elms School with James Fleetwood (1603-1683), later bishop of Worcester. His ignorance of the traditions of English schoolboys, his little 'french aire' and foreign accent, and the cut of his clothes, exposed him to unsparing ridicule and the lively child became for a time a grave and silent boy. Today, these would be acknowledged as symptoms of being bullied.

Fleetwood writes: *our schools doe Cow and over awe him* and another noted ... *he was ye sobrist youth that ever I did see....* To be correct in all matters of school etiquette was doubtless important and Verney's diligence at overcoming his disadvantage is commended by his master, who writes that his pupil is: *very ingenious and quick in understanding Arithmetick, wherein he hath made a very good progress.*

But Dr. Fleetwood's ecclesiastical authority was tottering, and before Jack had completed a second year, his master was prohibited as a delinquent<sup>26</sup> from keeping his school. After the authorities closed it, John entered Samuel Turberville's school in Kensington where he mastered

---

<sup>26</sup> In the Civil War sense of the term. He had not paid fines ...

writing, grammar, and 'an indifferant Latine', but he was mainly interested in business. *One must have some living now adayes*, he wrote, *I doe veryly thinke that I am a greate deale fitter to bee [in] some trade than to bee a la[w]yer*. [Verney Memoirs, Vol. III, p. 360; p. 367].

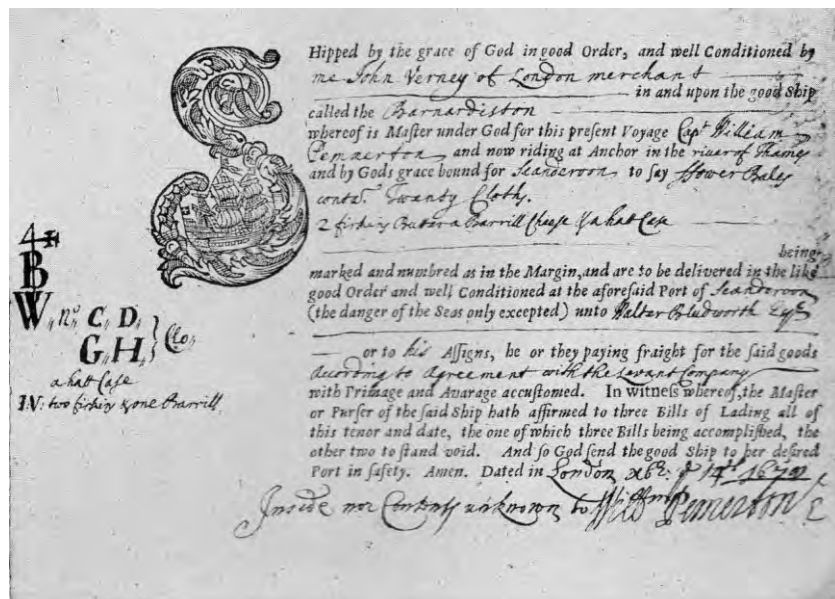
In June 1659 Sir Ralph sent John to Mr. Rich's school, where he received a commercial education and learned merchants' accounts.

### John Verney's Mercantile Career

As John was not expected to inherit his father's estate, a career needed to be chosen and in this endeavor he was apprenticed to the great Levant trader Sir Gabriel Roberts (1635-1715). On 31<sup>st</sup> December 1659 Sir Ralph paid £400 and signed a £1000 bond to apprentice his son to Sir Gabriel.

John hoped that his career would be: ... *noe less satisfactory* [to his father] *than if I had beene an Inns of Court Gentleman ... I never delighted in ... any thing else soe much as I doe in this trade* [and] *in hearing of Business both inland and outland* [Verney Memoirs, Vol. III, p.374].

John spent his days in Sir Gabriel's warehouse learning to weigh and measure silk, and finally, on 31<sup>st</sup> April 1662, he sailed to Iskenderun, the port of Aleppo. There he joined the Levant Company and lived with other English merchants in their own 'khan' or camp. Below a bill of lading in John Verney's name:



After six years of struggle with little capital or connections, on 28<sup>th</sup> July 1668 he received the company's liberty to trade for his own account. He eventually amassed a fortune large enough to set himself up as a London merchant. In 1674, when he returned to England, he claimed a fortune of £6000<sup>27</sup>.

In August 1674 he wrote to his father that:

*If ever I settle in the way of marriage. I am certain the first proffers are best, and at a man's first coming from Turkey, for then estates are least known and rumours run high.*



Aleppo at the time of John Verney

In London John Verney obtained his freedom of the Levant Company on 15<sup>th</sup> December 1674 and of the Vintners' Company on 21<sup>st</sup> November 1674, where he rose to liveryman and junior warden. He avoided holding office in the corporation of London, but served on tax commissions and grand juries.

John Verney and Richard Cradock (Elizabeth Palmer's uncle ) both served on the courts<sup>28</sup> of the Royal African and the East India Companies. Their common business interests may have been one of the avenues that led John to meeting Elizabeth Palmer.

Whyman mentions John's mercantile philosophy in which he:

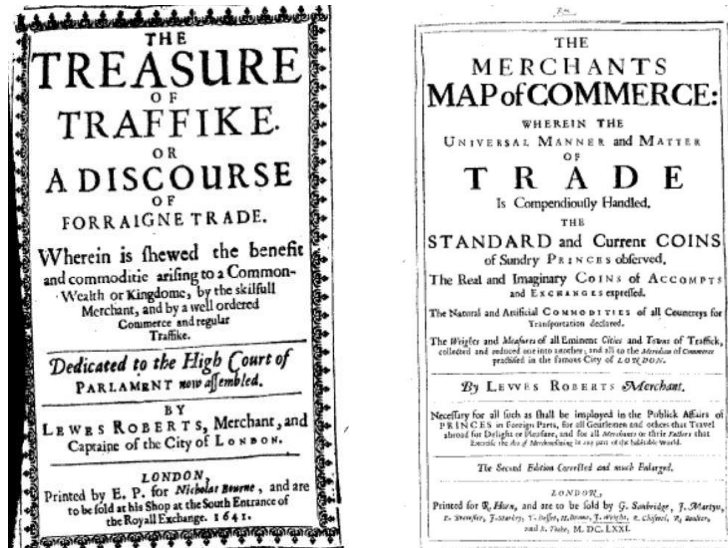
---

<sup>27</sup> Details of John's life in Aleppo and return to England via the Continent can be found in Whyman (1999) and in Tinniswood (2007).

<sup>28</sup> Equivalent to boards of directors.

... considers that English commerce is ruined, by politicians meddling in merchants' affairs, 'for they like a flood break down all' and he bitterly complains of what he sees as Parliaments preferential treatment of Dutch traders.

John's distaste for political interference may have had their origin in his reading of two early works trumpeting free markets by Gabriel Roberts' father Lewes Roberts (below) .



A Digression: Gabriel Roberts married several times, his last wife being Frances Langton (often omitted) whom he married on 14<sup>th</sup> July 1712 at the Charterhouse Chapel. Frances was the daughter of George Langton and Mary Tyndale great X 3 granddaughter of Lawrence Palmer a cousin of Mathew Palmer's of Cripplegate. However the term Esq. follows the name Roberts, not Knt. which would be expected. See the web site [Lost Langtons](#)

In November 1699, when the Royal African Company had become *as poor as a courtier*, John goes down to Windsor with Sir Gabriel Roberts. There they have ...*some discourse with Secretary Sunderland & afterwards with his Majesty* [William III], *about the Company's business* . Which all agree is: ....*conducted with old-fashioned honesty ... we cannot have one dividend, but we pay off our debts that if the Company be broke nobody may be sufferers but those that are of it* .



But his old master Sir Gabriel Roberts also advised John not to invest anymore in the company telling him that: ... *the money is best in your Pocket.* [VL (1) p. 50].

As already noted, on the death of John's brother's eldest son Ralph in 1686 and then John's brother Mun in 1688 what stood between John and inheriting his father's Middle Claydon estate and land elsewhere was only Mun's youngest son Edmund who dying in 1690 cleared the way for John to become a future baronet and man of property. His life as a London merchant and time spent in The City were thus considerably reduced as he took on the responsibilities of the landed gentry as well as a parliamentary career.

On his father's death in 1696 he took his duties as family scion and guardian of its estates seriously and whereas his brother Mun had left debts exceeding £4,000 John used his mercantile skills to build up the estate and refill the family coffers. On 31<sup>st</sup> May 1703 John Verney was raised to the peerage:

***Whitehall, May 31. Her Majesty has been  
pleased to create Sir John Verney Bar. a Baron  
and Viscount of the Kingdom of Ireland by the  
Name and Title of Baron Verney of Beltnrbet,  
and Viscount Fermanagh, in the said Kingdom.***

#### 1717 The Death of John Verney

In old age John was plagued by gout, the stone, and deafness, and as his activities became increasingly restricted, his trips to Bath to help relieve his aches and pains increased over the years.

In June of the third year of the reign of King George I (1716) John was in London and had taken rooms at St. James Street, Covent Garden, in the house of a successful London green grocer by the name of Mr. Thomas Smith. In early 1717 the newspapers caught wind of John's declining health and reported on it:

**The Ld. Visc. Fermannah is very much indispos'd.**

*The British Gazetteer Saturday 16<sup>th</sup> March 1717*

On 16<sup>th</sup> June 1717, Charles Chaloner, John Verney's faithful Claydon House steward, received a letter from his old master to which he replies as usual about bricks, lime trees, old hay, and other estate matters.

However by the 18<sup>th</sup> Chaloner has heard from John's son Ralph (II) that John has fallen ill and Chaloner writes to Ralph that he is: *Heartily sorry to hear the bad news that the sick man is not on the mending hand*. In his next letter Charles hopes that: *... the weather being cool, that it will abate his Lordship's illness*.

But there is no hint of alarm from London. It is not until the 25<sup>th</sup> June that Chaloner hears *that my Lord is dangerously ill* and in the meantime John passed away on the 23<sup>rd</sup> June in the 77<sup>th</sup> year of his age. [VL (2), p. 53]. His death was reported in the newspapers:

**On Sunday Morning last dy'd the Lord Viscount Fermanagh, of the Kingdom of Ireland, Member of Parliament for Agmondesham in Bucks; and is succeeded in Honour and Estate by his Son, Ralph Verney, Esq;**

29<sup>th</sup> June 1717

On Sunday Morning last dy'd the Lord Viscount Fermanagh, of the Kingdom of Ireland, Member of Parliament for Agmondesham in Bucks; and is succeeded in Honour and Estate by his Son, Ralph Verney, Esq;



John Verney by Godfrey Kneller © Claydon House Trust

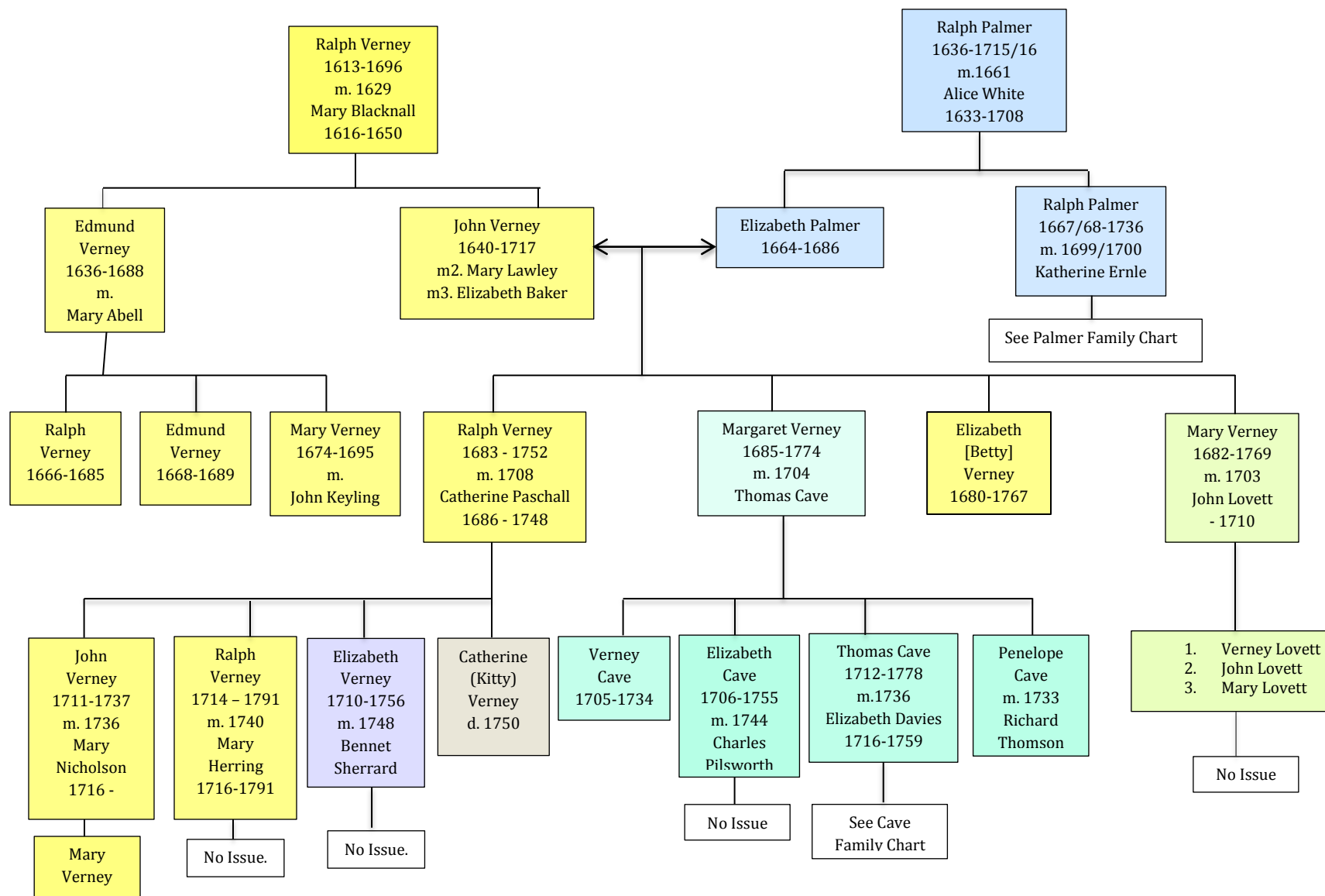
Arrangements were made for a private funeral and a room was prepared at Claydon House for Ralph Palmer (II) [VL (II), p. 54]. John's body was brought down from London and laid to rest in the family vault on 28<sup>th</sup> June.



All Saints, Middle Claydon, Buckinghamshire

Above we have looked at the life of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer's eldest daughter Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney and her husband John. Next we turn to the Palmer's other children: Cornelia, Alice, and Ralph (II).

## The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea



### Cornelia Palmer (1668/69 – 1717)

Cornelia Palmer, the second daughter of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer, was born on 27<sup>th</sup> January 1668/69 at Little Chelsea and baptised the same day.

For some time she was courted by Sir Thomas Dunk/Dunck, who could afford to woo her with lavish gifts, as John Verney noted on 28<sup>th</sup> October 1704 in a letter to his daughter Margaret:

*Your Aunt Cornelia is not yet married, but fine diamond Earrings, with a new Charriott and Equipage, wait for her word of Command.*

According to *The Verney Memoirs*, Cornelia had argued the case against marriage with old Ralph (I) Verney, who was warmly in favour, and for a while she resisted the idea of marriage and Sir Thomas Dunck.



The Temple Chapel in the Nineteenth Century © The Trustees of the British Museum

However, at the age of 36, she finally consented to be married to Sir Thomas on 6<sup>th</sup> January 1704/05 at The Temple Chapel, London.

Ralph Palmer (I), writing to John Verney, announced somewhat joylessly that there was no news but that: *My daughter was married yesterday.*

However, Cornelia's brother Ralph (II) was more enthusiastic, writing to his Verney brother in law:

*This comes to bring your Lordship the good news of my sister's wedding which was performed at the Temple Chappel, with a great deal of Resolution, from whence we returned to dinner at*

*Chelsea.* [VL (1), pp. 142-143].

By the time 'aunt Cornelia' was married, two of her Verney nieces had already tied the knot - Margaret to Sir Thomas Cave 3<sup>rd</sup> Bart. and Mary to John Lovett.



Thomas Cave also wrote to John Verney to let him know that:  
*Mrs Cornelia was married, as this Day, to Content, as tis hopt't.*

John Verney took up his pen to write to the new bride:

*I am very glad to hear that you are married, and not only so but with the Addition of very well and happily ... Pray give my humble Service to your Husband, to whom I wish a Long and Lasting Joy and the comfort of many Children by his Deare Cornelia. I must be short, else I shall detain you from your visitors. Therefore farewell, and may the Great King above all Bless you.*

On 9<sup>th</sup> January 1705, Sir Thomas Cave writes to John Verney, his father in law:

*I was this afternoon with my Sister [in law Betty] Verney at Chelsey, to see the Bride and Bridegroom; the first seems mightily pleased, and looks very well, and the Latter looks Jolly and Lusty; so I hope she will be fully Satisfied for He is a very neat-Good-Look'd man; and it's a Comfort to see how all of 'Em seem to be pleased.* [VL (1), p. 143].

At the National Archives there is a post nuptial settlement dated 1706 between Thomas Dunk of St. Margaret's, Westminster, Middlesex, ironmonger, and Cornelia his wife, daughter of Ralph Palmer the elder of Chelsey, Middlesex. [[161/37 1706-1733](#)]

On 3<sup>rd</sup> March 1713, Thomas Cave writing to John Verney notes that: *Yesterday I carried Mrs Vickers<sup>29</sup> and my daughter to Chelsea, and Sir Thomas Dunck's, whose Lady [Cornelia] was held in bed for the Gout.* [VL (1), p. 294].

This ailment may have been an early indication of an illness that would eventually take Cornelia's life.

Sir Thomas Dunk's city connections put him in a good position to act as the Verneys' lottery ticket purchaser. On 7<sup>th</sup> December 1710 John Verney writes to Sir Thomas about his tickets:

*I am infinitely obliged to you for your letter of the 4<sup>th</sup>, that my other four Tickets were yet in the Barrill ... Tho' fortune hath yet sprinkled but 2 of her favours on me, yet I*

---

<sup>29</sup> Penelope Gardiner the daughter of John Verney's aunt Carey Gardiner and wife of the Reverend William Vickers.

*really hope some of her largest ones will fall to your Lotts. My wife [Elizabeth] returns you thanks, hath a 20 shilling prize and 2 blanks out of 5 Ticketts, so that she hath two still undrawn. But I heare not of anyone else of my acquaintance that hath got any prize. Sir, I pray you continue your kindness in acquainting me whether my remaining Ticketts come up blanks or prize, otherwise I shall live in ignorance as I did until you were pleased to inform me Ticketts 49 and 373. Pray give mine, my Wife's, and Daur. Lovett's humble servant and to your Lady [Cornelia] and Eliza. Palmer<sup>30</sup> – Your Lov. Bror. & humble servant, Fermanagh. [VL (1), pp. 143–144].*



A Lottery drawing in the Eighteenth century  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

We should note another family connection to the lottery in the form of Abraham Cropp, one of the lottery's commissioners (managers), who had married Hester (Palmer) Cradock's granddaughter Susannah Banner; Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's first cousin once removed (see earlier chart).

John Verney's female relations also played the lottery, usually forming a pool together and attending the lottery drawings as a group and gathering to read reports of the winning numbers or receiving them from Sir Thomas Dunck [Whyman, p. 77].

In May 1712 Mary (Verney) Lovett writes to her father (John Verney) that her Aunt Adams' luck had changed:

---

<sup>30</sup>Not sure who this is, but more likely John meant Alice, Cornelia's younger sister.

*We have had no fortune in the Lottery but it is gone where it is most wanted, for the people gave my Aunt Adams one Ticket and it come up a prize, of A Silver Skillett weighing 26 ounces. She has got it home and wonders that it's possible any good fortune should come to her...* [VL (1), p.353]

Her father writes:

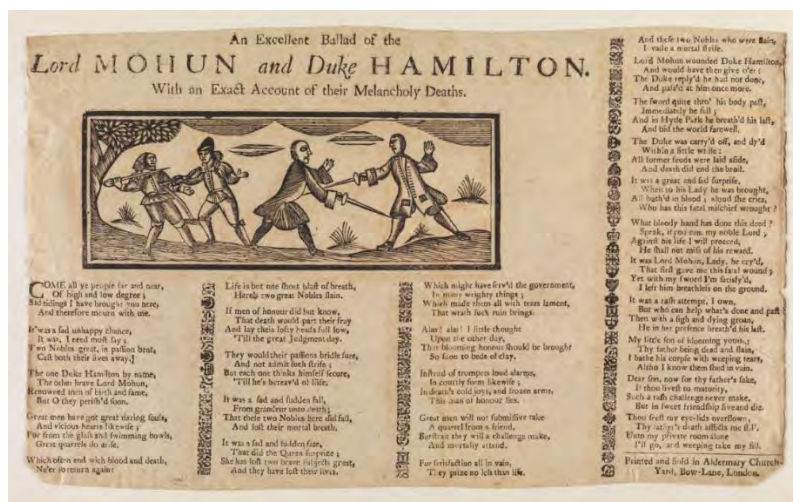
*I don't hear that any of your Sister [Betty] Verney's tickets are yet drawn, they are still in the Wheel and worth near 15 shillings a ticket ... [and some time later] Lady F's Ticketts are now all come out Blanks, your Sister I believe hath two still in the Wheel.*

Sir Thomas Dunk reports that he himself had: *... but very poor fortune, but £10 and £20 prizes out of sixty-eight tickets.* [VL (1), p. 291]

Thomas also supplied John with news from London such as the following sent on 15<sup>th</sup> November 1712:

*There was a bad accident happened this morning about 7 o' Clock, the Duke of Hambleton [Hamilton] and my Lord Mone [Mohun] fought a duel in Hyde Parke, and Lord Mohun died upon the spot, and the other was Carried home and it is said Died in a little time after.* [VL (1), p. 289].

Below a contemporary handbill with verses describing the Mohun-Hamilton duel.



© The Trustees of the British Museum

Below a drawing of the same event:



The Mohun-Hamilton Duel © The Trustees of the British Museum

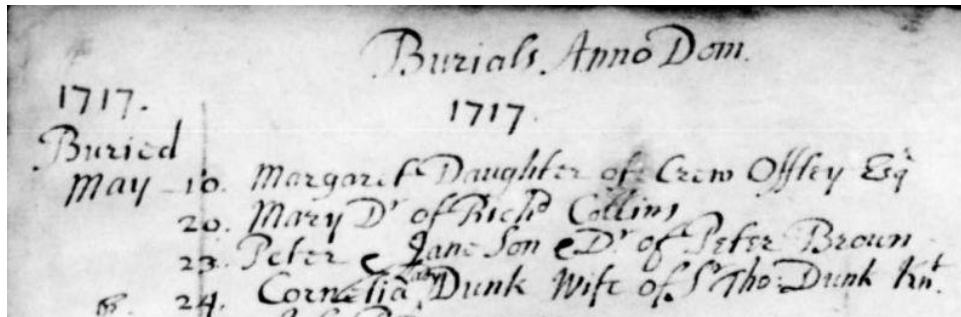
When Cornelia's health began to fail, her brother Ralph (II) and his wife Katherine looked after her affectionately and they saw to it that she received all the necessary medical attention.

However, Cornelia died on 16<sup>th</sup> May 1717 and on the same day her brother Ralph sends details of his sister's death to John Verney.

*This is to let you know that my Sister Dunk died this morning at next door, Sir Thomas being in Kent, to whom I dispatched a man on horse this morning by three o'clock. We did not perceive much alteration and that was in her speech, but she was perfectly worn out for want of ailment, having taken nothing a manner but physic.*

*She had no desire of seeing Sir Thomas nor was willing I should send to him, but I thought it proper so to doe. We have not been deficient, neither my wife nor I, in what we could do to serve her, and she took it very kindly, but she was a miserable spectacle, and has concerned us much. [VL (1), pp. 144-145]*

Below the burial record for Cornelia (Palmer) Dunk who was buried on 24<sup>th</sup> May 1717 at St. Luke's, Chelsea (last line).



24 Cornelia <sup>Lady</sup> Dunk Wife of S<sup>r</sup> Tho. Dunk Knt.

She survived her father, being mentioned in his will as the legatee of his silver syllabub plate.

### The Dunk or Dunck family

The Dunks were Flemish immigrants who had settled a short distance east of Hawkhurst in Kent. The early Dunks made a great deal of money and invested it in property. At some stage they purchased Tongswood, which is recorded as being the seat of the family when a Simon Dunk died there in 1512. It passed through several generations of the family and was later inherited by Cornelia Palmer's husband Sir Thomas Dunk. Over this period the estate grew to c. 1200 acres.

Sir Thomas was born clearly into riches but achieved fame through his own merits. He served an apprenticeship in London as an ironmonger and was given the Freedom of the City to set up in business.



Richard Hoare, the banker  
© National Trust, Stourhead

As a freeman of the City he joined the Guild of Ironmongers who, along with the other City guilds, had the power to elect the two Sheriffs of London. In 1709 Thomas was elected by his fellow liverymen as one of the two Sheriffs for the year 1710, the other being Richard Hoare<sup>31</sup>, and on 18<sup>th</sup> January 1710, Thomas was knighted by Queen Anne.

---

<sup>31</sup> Hoare was also the banker to Sir John Verney. Many centuries later a descendant would marry a member of the Man family.



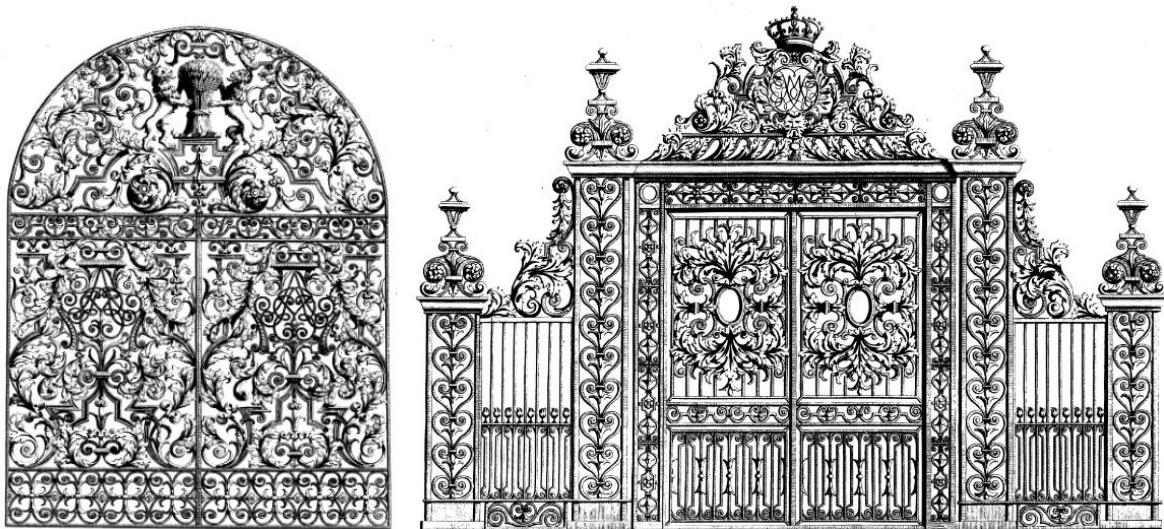
*Venice.*  
23. Sir Richard Hoar and Thomas Dunk Esquires  
were Elected Sheriffs for London for the  
Year ensuing. And sometime after Mr.  
Dunk was Knighted.

*London Gazette, 23<sup>rd</sup> June 1709*

In 1698 Sir Thomas supplied the artist Tijou with the iron that went into creating the gates at Hampton Court; although payment from the Crown was slow in coming and his knighthood might have been a reward for his patience.

Among the Treasury papers is a: *List of debts in the Office of Works* dated 1701, among which appears, under the heading *Hampton Court Gardens*: £910 8s. 11d., due to Thomas Dunk Iron-monger, and £1,982 1s. 6d., due to John Tijou, [iron] smith. (See [A New guide to the Royal Palace of Hampton Court](#) by Ernest Philip Alphonse Law).

Tijou's drawings of his Hampton Court gates can be found in: *A new Booke of Drawings Invented and Desined by John Tijou*.



Two of Tijou's designs for the gates at Hampton Court using iron supplied by Thomas Dunk

Thomas died a year after Cornelia at Tongswood in 1718 and was buried in *pride of place*, i.e. the middle aisle, in St. Laurence Church at Hawkhurst in Kent.



Below from [\*Bibliotheca Topographica Britannica. Miscellaneous Antiquities\*](#) (1780).

Sir Thomas Dunk, knight, by his will gave the sum of £2000 to be laid out in building and endowing a school and six alms-houses at High gate (in this parish); the school-master to receive £16 and the alms people £6 per annum; which said school and alms-houses were accordingly erected and endowed by William Richards, esq. his executor.



Sir Thomas Dunk's School and Alms Houses at Hawkhurst in Kent

Tongswood, the residence of Sir Thomas Dunk, is now the preparatory school known as St. Ronan's.

Sir Thomas Dunk's Will: Dated 8<sup>th</sup> July 1718.

Thomas Dunk had no family with Cornelia Palmer but, as with John Verney, he did father an illegitimate son who was named William Richards. Little is known of this son except that Dunk left his estate amounting to £100,000 to William,

with the remainder to his issue, on condition that all who so took should adopt the name of Dunk.



Tonswood now St Ronan's School

William Richards-Dunk married Ann Davis, daughter of Sir John Davis, and they had a daughter Ann (1725?-1753). Had William and his daughter not survived, the Palmers would have been the main beneficiaries of Thomas Dunk's estate.

After William Richards-Dunk died in 1733, the estate passed to his daughter Ann, who like her father, had to change her name to Dunk as a result of her grandfather's will, and in so doing she became an heiress with an immense fortune, and was thus keenly sought after. At the age of sixteen she married the Hon. George Montagu on 2<sup>nd</sup> July 1741. And, in accordance with Sir Thomas Dunks' will, Montagu added the name Dunk to his surname.

George Montagu-Dunk was the son of the 1<sup>st</sup> Earl of Halifax, and was styled Viscount Sunbury until succeeding his father as 2<sup>nd</sup> Earl of Halifax in 1739. He was educated at Eton College and at Trinity College, Cambridge. In 1748 he became President of the Board of Trade. While filling this position he helped to found Halifax, the capital of Nova Scotia, which was named after him, and he helped foster trade, especially with North America.

George and Ann Montague-Dunk had one daughter, Lady Elizabeth Montagu-Dunk (1742? - 1768), who married her cousin John Montagu, 5<sup>th</sup> Earl Sandwich, on 8<sup>th</sup>





George Montagu Dunk (1716 – 1771)  
© Art Gallery of Nova Scotia, Canada



William Augustus Montagu  
(c. 1785 – 6 March 1852)  
© Hinchinbrooke House

March 1766. They had one son John George Montagu who never married and thus there were no further descendants legitimate or otherwise of Sir Thomas Dunk.

After Lady Elizabeth's death in 1768, her husband John Montagu the 5<sup>th</sup> Earl of Sandwich, married Lady Mary Powlett, daughter and co-heir of Harry Powlett, 6<sup>th</sup> Duke of Bolton. Lord Sandwich died in June 1814, aged 70, and was succeeded by his eldest son by his second wife, George, 6<sup>th</sup> Earl of Sandwich. Lord Sandwich also fathered an illegitimate son, William Augustus Montagu, who rose to the rank of Vice-Admiral in the Royal Navy.



Montagu Dunk, Lord Halifax (right), and his secretaries  
© National Portrait Gallery, London [NPG 3328]

Alice Palmer (1670 – 1745).

Alice Palmer, the youngest child of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer, was born on 9<sup>th</sup> December 1670 and baptised on 20<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. Mary Abbot's, Kensington.

We know little of Alice's life. She did not marry but she does appear occasionally among the various family letters. Sir Thomas Cave writing to Ralph Palmer (II) says that: *I think Aunt Palmer the most just creature I ever saw.* [VL (1), p. 240]

However right at the end of her long life (she died aged 75) she makes a public appearance of sorts in the form of two references to her in the newspapers. The first occurred on 25<sup>th</sup> March 1745:

**Yesterday the Hon. Mrs. Palmer, Aunt to the Right Hon. the Earl Verney, lay dangerously ill at her House near the Broad Way, Westminster.**

Then on 30<sup>th</sup> March 1745 Alice's death is announced:

**Yesterday died, in an advanced Age, at her House in the New Way, Westminster, the Lady Palmer, Aunt to the Right Hon. the Earl of Verney, of the Kingdom of Ireland; and Member of Parliament for Wendover in Buckinghamshire.**

The attribution of a title to Alice is an error that probably resulted from her being the aunt of Ralph Verney (II) though in fact she was not entitled. Alice was buried on 6<sup>th</sup> April at St. Peter's, Roydon in Essex. Her will makes no religious references at all, which for the age is very unusual. It mentions all her sister Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's children, and their spouses, as well as her deceased brother Ralph (II)'s two sons.

Alice Palmer's Will 1737.

Let this be sufficient to show at my decease that out of my eight hundred pounds principal in East India Bonds I bequeath two hundred pounds to my nephew Ralph Palmer (III) Two hundred pounds to his Brother Hamey Palmer One Hundred



Pounds equally between Lord Fermanagh (Ralph Verney II) The Lady [Catherine] Fermanagh Ralph Verney Esquire [their daughters] The Honourable Miss Elizabeth Verney and her sister Miss Kitty [Catherine] Verney or the Survivors of them, one hundred pounds equally between the Hon Miss Elizabeth [Betty] Verney sister to the Lord Fermanagh, my cousins [Helen] Starkey, **Phillis and Cornelia Churchill**<sup>32</sup> or the Survivors of them. One Hundred Pounds to the Lady Dowager Margaret Cave, [her children] Sir Thomas Cave, Bart. Miss Elizabeth Cave and Mrs [Penelope] Thompson to be equally divided between them or the survivors of them One Hundred Pounds equally to be divided between Mrs Mary Lovett [and her children] Mr Verney Lovett, Mr John Lovett and Miss Elizabeth Lovett or the Survivors of them *I give to the Lady Dowager Cave my fathers and mothers Pictures* and to Mrs Elizabeth [Betty] Verney my pearl necklace To Miss Elizabeth Lovett my cabinet. I give all my household stuff and apparel to Theodora Parkhurst. But all my plate Silver Gold and Jewells my Clock and Spinett I give to my nephew Ralph Palmer (III) to whom likewise I bequeath all my South Sea annuity stock herewith charging all such debts as I may happen to owe and defraying the expences of my internment whom I entrust with the execution of these things and whom I make residuary Legatee witness my hand and Seal this Twentieth Day of February One Thousand Seven Hundred and Thirty Seven (20<sup>th</sup> February 1737) Alice Palmer signed sealed and delivered in the presence of us ...

The will was proved on 5<sup>th</sup> April 1745 by her nephew Ralph Palmer (III)

#### Ralph Palmer (1667/68–1746/47)

Ralph Palmer (II), the only surviving son of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer, was born on 14<sup>th</sup> January 1667/68 at Little Chelsea and baptised on the 16<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. Mary Abbot's, Kensington. (IGI P00135-1)

---

<sup>32</sup> These two sisters also benefited from the will of Elizabeth (Cave) Pillsworth.



Magdalen Tower by JM Turner  
© The Trustees of the British Library

Ralph Palmer attended the Queen Elizabeth Grammar School at Kingston upon Thames in Surrey (Keevil, p. 211) and afterward Magdalen Hall at Oxford. Letters from Ralph while at Magdalen survive among the Claydon House papers.

Palmer, Ralph, s. R(alph), of Chelsea, Middlesex, gent. Trinity Coll., matric. 22 Feb., 1683-4, aged 16, bar.-at-law. Middle Temple, 1693 ; licenced 12 Feb., 1699-1700, to marry Catherine Ernie, of St. Paul, Covent Garden. [See *Foster's Judges and Barristers & London Marriage Licences*, ed. Foster.]

While Ralph was attending Oxford, it was decided that Edmund (Munsie) Verney son of Mun and hence John Verney's nephew, should also attend Oxford, although he would be sent to Trinity College. Another compatriot of Ralph's and Munsie's was Philip Bertie<sup>33</sup> who was likewise at Trinity.

While at Oxford, Munsie received news that King Charles II had died on 6<sup>th</sup> February 1685, and he pleaded with his father to send him proper mourning attire:

*Feb. 16, Most Honoured Father, I find by your letter that you could not bye me any Fringed Gloves, untill you knew what is generally worne in the university by reason of the Death of our most excellent King Charles the Second. I cannot ffully certifie as yet in this matter, But there are two or three ffellow Commoners of our House of which Mr. Palmer is one, that have bought their Black Cloathes, and Plain Muzeline Bands, and Cloath Shooes, and are now in very strict morning: and others are Preparing for it, so that within this weeke I suppose the greater Part, if not all, of the university will be in morning.* [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 367]

---

<sup>33</sup> Philip's cousin, Peregrine Bertie, married Ralph Palmer's wife's half-sister Rachel Ernle on 24<sup>th</sup> January 1682 at St. Martin, Ludgate.



Magdalen College, Oxford

On 11<sup>th</sup> July 1685, Ralph Palmer (II) wrote from Magdalen to his sister Elizabeth Verney at *her house over against the coffee house in Hatton Street, Hatton Gardens, London*, to find out what news there was of James Scott, Duke of Monmouth, whose rebellion against his uncle King James II had been quickly put down.

*We have the good news of the ruin of Scot and Grey<sup>34</sup>, who, I suppose, will be executed speedily; and if you hear what punishment is to be inflicted, pray let me know.*

*The Verney Memoirs* also mentions that John Verney with his wife [Elizabeth Palmer] and children paid the lads [Edmund (Munsie) Verney and Ralph Palmer (II)] a visit at Oxford that Ralph Palmer acknowledges in a grateful letter to his sister [but not printed].



The execution of the Duke of Monmouth  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

---

<sup>34</sup>William Lord Grey of Warke. William Palmer of the same Palmer family joined Monmouth's army as a cavalry officer, though his fate is not known. (See Early Palmer History)

However one of Ralph's letters written from Oxford that does appear in *The Verney Memoirs* and which is addressed to his sister Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney concerns his own private sorrows:

*6<sup>th</sup> March 1686. Dear Sister, — I hope all yours are well and free from losses, which I am not, for my horse is dead. Ye circumstances you will hear from my Father so that my saddle is useless. Mr. Mun Bears ye loss of his Brother [Ralph], better than I do ye death of my horse. I have nothing more but to beg yr acceptance of this scribble from your most Affectionate but unlucky Brother. Palmer's Child [Verney Memoirs, Vol. IV, p. 376]*

#### The Marriage of Ralph Palmer (II) to Katherine Ernle

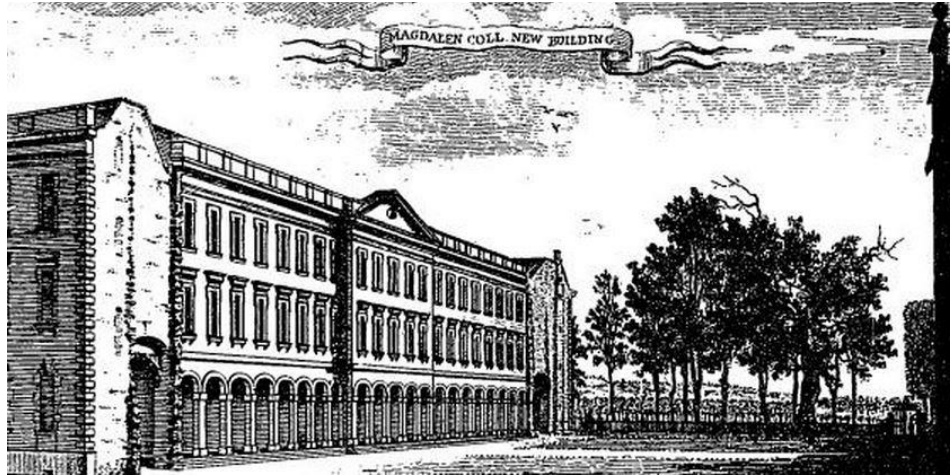
At the [National Archives](#) there is an 'attested' copy of the marriage settlement between the Palmers and the Ernles.  
[FRE/8354-8355]:

Between Ralph Palmer the elder of Little Chelsea, Middlesex, esq, his wife Alice, their son Ralph Palmer the younger, esq and Katherine Ernle, spinster (one of the daughters of John Ernle, kt deceased), [Sir Charles Gerrard of Harrow](#)<sup>35</sup>, Middlesex, Peregrine Bertie of the City of London, esq, Thomas Sturmy [Sturme] of the Inner Temple, London, esq and John Meller of the Middle Temple, esq, 23 & 24 Feb 1700/01 Messuage in Cold Overton and three closes adjoining called the Homestead and Gaplands. Two messuages with the gardens, orchards, and Court yards in Little Chelsea; Garden or hoppet called Longhooke, and messuage and lands called Hunts, and closes called Le Costard Crote, in Margaret Roothing, Essex; farmhouse in Reydon [Roydon], Essex called the Great Lea together with a tenement there called the Little Lea in the fields of Reydon; croft and two gardens called Griggs or Pollard otherwise Sheycocks and two crofts called Temple Croft and Kitchine Croft otherwise Hopcroft in High Easter, Essex. Messuage, farm and tenement and lands called Warsope farm and messuage and lands called Gollands farm in North Leverton, Hepplethorpe [Applethorpe] and Cotes, Nottinghamshire. Annual rent of £22 issuing out of the late Chantry called Muston Chantry in Leake and Leverton, Lincolnshire In consideration of a marriage to take place between Ralph Palmer the younger and Katherine Ernle, his parents convey to Gerrard, Bertie, Sturmy and Meller to the use of Ralph and Alice Palmer until the marriage takes place, then to the use of Ralph Palmer the younger and Katherine and their heirs (detailed trusts specified).

---

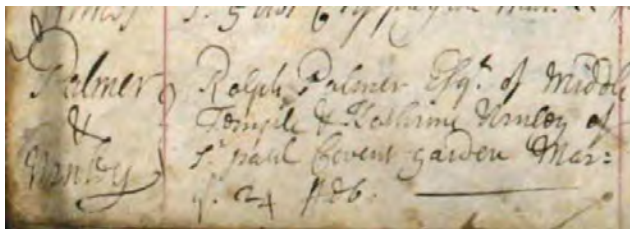
<sup>35</sup> He had married Honora the daughter of Charles Seymour and Elizabeth Alington and was thus Katherine Ernle's 'half' brother in law being the husband of Katherine's half sister Honora Seymour (1659-1731). Peregrine Bertie had married Rachel Ernle, Katherine's half-sister.





Magdalen College, Oxford  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

On 12<sup>th</sup> February 1699/1700 a marriage licence was issued to Ralph Palmer and Katherine Ernle (See Chester's *London Marriage Licences*) and they were married at St. Lawrence Jewery on the 24<sup>th</sup> of that month.



Ralph Palmer Esq. of  
Middle Temple &  
Katherine Ernley of  
St Paul Covent  
garden Mar: ye 24  
ffeb

Nancy Nicholas writing to her cousin John Verney notes that:

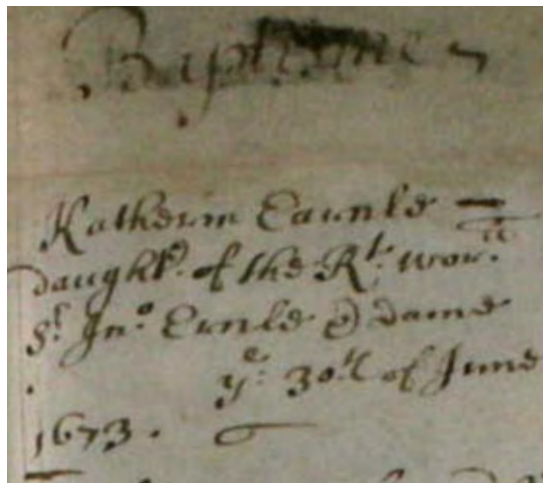
*Your brother Palmer's marriage was on Sat. morning last, and on Sunday he carried his Bride out of town. I am sorry I am not well enough to wait upon them and welcome them into the family. [VL (1), p. 70]*





The Temple Church © The Trustees of the British Museum

Katherine Ernle was born 27<sup>th</sup> June 1673, the only child of John and Elizabeth (Alington) (Seymour) Ernle. She was baptized on 30<sup>th</sup> June of that year at St. Peter le Poer. The spelling of her name varies between 'Katherine' and 'Catherine' across different sources; here we choose 'Katherine'.



Baptism

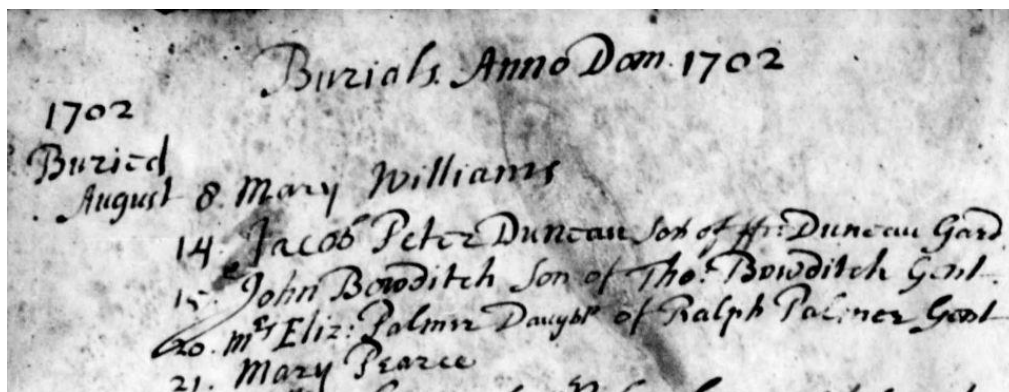
Katherin Earnle  
daught. of the Rt. hon  
sr Jn Ernle & Dame  
ye 30th of June  
1673

Her father, Sir John Ernle (1620-1697), was the longest serving Chancellor of the Exchequer in British history. Her mother, Elizabeth Alington (1635-1692), having first married Charles Seymour, 2<sup>nd</sup> Baron Seymour of Trowbridge (1621-1665), was the mother of the 5<sup>th</sup> and 6<sup>th</sup> Dukes of Somerset and who were thus Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's half brothers. (See Part Two: The Ernle Family)

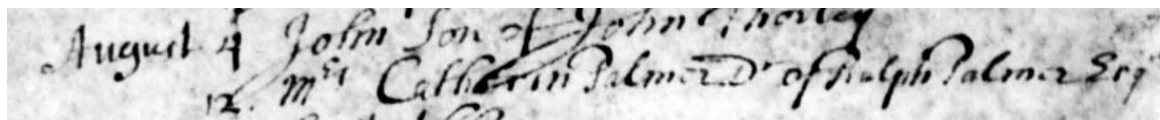
Ralph and Katherine (Ernle) Palmer had two boys: Ralph born in 1712 and Hamey born in 1716 and who were their only surviving children.

Ralph and Katherine also had four daughters: Elizabeth, Catherine, Alice, and Cornelia but none survived much past infancy and the burial records of all four have been found at St. Luke's in Chelsea. No baptismal records have been located for the children which may be accounted for by the fact that the children were born in the parish of St. Giles in the fields whose records for this period are missing.

Their first daughter, Elizabeth Palmer, was born on 26<sup>th</sup> February 1700/01. A little over a year later she died on 17<sup>th</sup> August 1702 and was buried at St. Luke's on 20<sup>th</sup> August as shown on her burial record below:



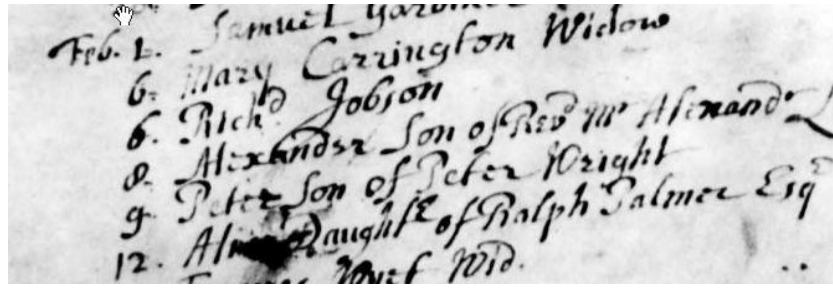
Catherine, the second daughter's baptism has not been located for the reason given above, but her burial at St. Luke's took place on 12<sup>th</sup> August 1703.



12

M<sup>s</sup> Catherine Palmer Dr of Ralph Palmer Esq.

A record for Alice Palmer's baptism has not been located as a result of the baptism having taken place at St. Giles in the Field, but her burial took place at Chelsea on 12<sup>th</sup> February 1705/06.



12 Alice Daught<sup>e</sup> of Ralph Palmer Esq<sup>e</sup>

According to *The Verney Letters*, in September 1708 Katherine (Ernle) Palmer was pregnant with her fourth daughter and on 14<sup>th</sup> September her husband Ralph (II) wrote:

*... I pray God my Spouse may have her little one to live with her, that we may add a little to the peopling this world, as the increasing of the Kingdom of Heaven with little Angels.* [VL ( ), p. ]

At the same time that Katherine was pregnant, the Palmer's nephew's wife Catherine (Paschall) Verney was as well. However, on 2<sup>nd</sup> March 1709 Catherine was delivered of a still born baby boy and Ralph Palmer was, according to *The Verney Letters*:

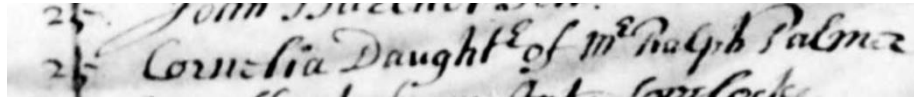
*... anxious to keep the news from his wife, but Tom Berry [whomever he might be] heard it from the Laundress and inadvertently bawled it out to her.*

Catherine (Paschall) Verney's disappointment (she is always "Dear Precious" to the Palmers) met with the greatest sympathy at Chelsea. Ralph Palmer (II) writes to his nephew Ralph on 3<sup>rd</sup> March 1709:

*This is a misfortune that has been so often repeated with me that I have not an ordinary Title to preach up resignation, which every day's Experience almost requires in a World that is made up of Hopes and Fears. My Father's Blessings and prayers for you both with my poor Spouse's most cordial caresses.* [VL (1), p. 183]

The Palmers' baby was safely delivered on 21<sup>st</sup> March 1709 and christened Cornelia. Ralph Palmer reported that she was *a lusty brown-hair'd girl big enough to have been a boy*. However, their happiness was short lived as she suffered later from *convulsions in teething*, and though all the usual useless remedies, such as blistering and bleeding, were duly applied, Cornelia soon joined her three sisters at thirteen months old on 22<sup>nd</sup> April 1710. [VL (1), p. 183].

Cornelia Palmer was buried at St. Luke's, Chelsea on 25<sup>th</sup> April 1710:

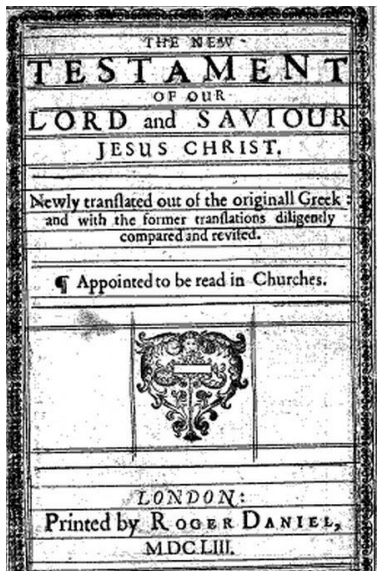


25 Cornelia Daught<sup>e</sup> of Mr Ralph Palmer

The following comment on the Ernle and Palmer families is taken from [Notes and Queries](#), Vol. 6, 4<sup>th</sup> series, July-Dec 1870:

Ernle and Palmer Families: — I have an old Bible, the New Testament of which was published in London and "printed by Roger Daniel, Anno Doni. 1653," as I learn from its title-page, on the reverse of which are the following entries relating to the

above families:—



"Catherine Ernil was borne on friday morning about two of the clocke being the 27th day of June 1673. [In the hand of her father Sir John Ernle]

"Catherine Ernle married Ralph Palmer, Febr. 24, 1699-1700, it being St. Matthias his day, at St. Laurence Church near Guildhall. They had issue:

Elizabeth Palmer born on ye 26 day of February ano Domino 1700/1 about 3 o clock on a Thursday morning in Great Queen Street in ye parish of St. Giles's in ye feilds and was baptised ye same day my Father [Ralph Palmer I] being her God-Father & my

Mother & Lady Brograve God Mothers. It pleased God to take her to himself Aug. 17 in ye year 1702. See of ye rest of my Children elsewhere.

"My dear Wife after an exemplary patience with great courage and temper under complicate illnesses departed this life ye 28th of July 1731 of an hydrops pectoralis being (as appears by her birth above (Sir John Ernle's own handwriting) 58 years old and as much more as since ye 27th of June; who has (I am sure) a blessed exchange by it, tho' I am inexpressible loss in so excellent a Person. " R Palmer.

The Old Testament and Apocrypha were "printed by Roger Daniel MDCLIV." This Bible has, in modern times, been bound up with a Book of Common Prayer, the latter being without date, but apparently cotemporary with the Bible, as the royal arms with C. R. are on the title-page, and the prayers for the king and "royal progeny" mention King Charles, Queen Mary, and Prince Charles, who is not styled Prince of

Wales. In the prayer for the queen, &c. the words "Mary, Prince Charles" are struck out in ink, and "Katherine, James Duke of York" written in the margin. J. A. Pn

### The Palmer-Verney Correspondence

Below is presented, in chronological order, some of the correspondence between Ralph Palmer (II) and various members of the Verney family. The topics covered include political affairs, such as the succession of the new Hanoverian king, gossip about Chelsea neighbors, the propagation of plants, and in the early 1720s trying to find a suitable home for the Verneys in Chelsea. This last task was largely motivated by Catherine (Paschal) Verney who was eager to leave the cold draughts and isolation of Claydon to be closer to friends and family in Chelsea. And, in this endeavor it would seem the Palmers were prepared to expend considerable amounts of energy.

In most cases, where Ralph Palmer (II) discusses his children's health and well-being those letters have been placed in those children's sections and where he gives advice to his Verney nephew (Ralph II) and his Verney nieces (Mary Lovett and Margaret Cave) those too can be found in their sections. A separate section has been set aside dealing with the collapse of the South Sea company and how this affected the families' fortunes.

We begin with the re-election of Ralph Palmer's brother in law John Verney to Parliament on which occasion Ralph wrote on 10<sup>th</sup> October 1710.

*I do with pleasure and the rest of your friends in Chelsea, congratulate your Lordship's Election, and wish [Sir Harry Seymour](#) had been your partner ... though I hear he will be certainly in for some Borough in the West by the interest of the Bishop of Winchester; who being bound by a very considerable debt to him must serve him, tho' against his inclinations, as his Endeavours at present in that country sufficiently testify. I can make no manner of Judgment how this County [Middlesex] or its neighbour Surry will fare, for in discourse they are sure on both sides and I believe will be a hard struggle. I long to see how it will go in the West where the Boroughs are numerous.*

*Here is no publick intelligence at present. The Bank had a special Court today, being so overloaded with the quick circulation and Influx of Exchequer Bills, that they are making another Call upon the Adventurers, which makes much grumbling among those who are concerned there; and there is much of them abroad on sale In Exchange*



*Alley that there is a great discontent and like to be greater upon them . [VL (1) , p. 304]*

The following letter was written by Ralph Palmer (II) to John Verney on 14<sup>th</sup> March 1713 who had been re-elected to parliament. (See also [The History of Parliament](#) for details of John's parliamentary career)

*We must lose a very good companion, when Niece [Betty] Verney takes Coach, and we shall be much subject to the Vapors, and I am sure my Spouse will not be so well pleased a long time again, but the best friends must part... I have waited for the seasonable time of sending you my congratulations for Success in your County election when it might pass you with privilege ... And am always concerned that Fortune has not provided me a freehold in Bucks to serve you ... there has been a Universal Report all over Town that you were dead, I have had it from many hands, and on Sunday night the Lady Lyndsey sent to me her Servant to know the Truth, She having been informed so by some company that dined with her. I take it to be a lie of Wiggish Abstraction, they are so good (or rather bad) at it, who would rob you of your Life if they could do it with impunity, as willingly as I believe, some of them, as the County of your Service. But their's are Bruta fulmina God be thanked. Your little Godson [Ralph III] is very well, but indisposed a little with his teeth sometimes, of which he has gotten six . [VL (1) , p.294]*

Ralph Palmer (II) to his nephew Ralph Verney (II), 13<sup>th</sup> June 1714.

*... It's talked that the Queen will scarce pass the Schism Bill<sup>36</sup> by reason Ireland is included. The Commons have been distressed about ways and means, people begin to be alarmed at funds of 32 years which every year runs us deeper and deeper into debt, but I do not hear any likely overcharge for the raising the money within the year, so how they will determine I know not. What shall we do for hay about town? It will be £5 a load I verily believe, our Equipage I am afraid will be demolished. Surely 'tis very dry with your uplands, God send us a good long rain, these cold winds drought and heat of the sun makes it a very sickly time both in town and country, but I thank God our little*

---

<sup>36</sup>The Schism Bill of 1714 stipulated that anyone who wished to keep a public or private school, or act as tutor, must first be granted a licence from a bishop. Also, he must conform to the liturgy of the Church of England and to have taken in the past year the rites of that Church. The Act was aimed against Dissenter schools (dissenting academies), but on the day the Act was due to come into force, Queen Anne died and the Act was never enforced.

*family where we have two within a year of fourscore preserves its health to a miracle.*  
[VL (1), pp. 294-295].

The Palmers and their next door neighbours the Luttrells were occasionally at loggerheads and one of these occasions is commented on by Ralph's niece Betty Verney in a letter to her father John at Claydon written on 5<sup>th</sup> May 1717.

*Honoured Sir, - I cannot omit by the first conveyance to present you with my humble duty and the respects of this family [The Palmers] ... there has happened some difference between my Uncle and Mr Luttrell, which occasions an Intermision in their visits, having heard the matter from one side only I am not capable of judging or representing it clearly, but believe there may be faults in both. I have not seen any of that family yet but I intend waiting on my [step] mother [Elizabeth (Baker) Verney] and then this afternoon, my sister [Mary] Lovett is expected to stay a few days.* [VL (2), p. 49]

A little over a month after writing this letter Betty Verney's father, John, died on 23<sup>rd</sup> June at his lodgings in London.

As noted, The Luttrells were related to the Verneys in so far as John Verney's third wife Elizabeth (Baker) was the sister of Sarah (Baker) Luttrell the wife of the diarist Narcisus.

However, the Palmers and the Luttrells were ususally on friendly terms and often exchanged fruit from their orchards and Narcisus would sometimes make a note of when such exchanges took place:

*A Winter Musk Pear. From Mr. Palmer 9<sup>th</sup> November, 1712. A fragrant sweet pear, with a musky taste. Will keep till Christmas; however, I eat it not till February 9<sup>th</sup>, 1713, but it was kept too long, being mealy and rotten. ... And ... Virgalouze [a type of pear] - I had of Mr. Palmer, 19<sup>th</sup> October, 1712, and eaten the 27<sup>th</sup> of November, after. A charming beautiful Pear, yellow on the outside with some red, but was kept too long: another gathered the same day was in rare order.* (See [Transactions of the Horticultural Society of London, Volume 2](#))

In 1716 Ralph retired from his legal career and sends John Verney a note on 28<sup>th</sup> November:

*I have sold my Chambers in the Temple to one Mr. Samuel Gill, a Member of Parliament for Litchfield, for 300 Guineas, after having enjoyed them 28 years [from 1688]. One motive was I was pretty near being called to the Bench [i.e. being made a judge], which if I had find for would have been £50 and if I had accepted would have cost me 200 down. [VL (2), p. 34]*

21<sup>st</sup> October 1718 Ralph Palmer to his nephew Ralph Verney (II) :

*... I thank you for so kindly enquiring after my health. I am but just returned from Court, where I have been at Balls and Plays, a little to alter my way of living, that I may gain health thereby. I take nothing to be worse for health than perfect and exact regularity ... I desire my humble service to Lady Fermanagh, Sister [Betty] Verney and Mrs. [Mary] Stone, if with you, and your dear children have my best affection for them. [VL (2), p. 58]*

At the start of the 1720's much of the correspondence is taken up with the search for a home for the Verneys at Chelsea. On 24<sup>th</sup> March 1720 Palmer writes that the house of [Mr. Corsellis](#),<sup>37</sup> next to the Palmer's neighbors the Luttrells, is for rent at £20 a year, but Palmer thinks that it is:

*... too small, being but two rooms on a floor, but it has been made very conveneient, there are three garrets, a kitchen and wash-house below stairs, a stable for four horses and a room over, and two parlours which are wainscoated, as the rooms above are. [VL (2), p. 80].*

On 16<sup>th</sup> August 1720 Palmer sends news of happenings around him to his nephew:

*The news of this place is that my neighbor Mr. Luttrell has been and continues dangerously ill, of a Rheumatism, which has taken away the use of his legs, they think too his sore leg is bad, for they have kept him in bed for some time. He thinks he will die, it being his climacteric year 63 because his father died in it .... [Narcissus Luttrell in fact lived another 12 years]. Your sister [Betty Verney] is in good health and supp'd with us last night. My sister [Alice] Palmer lives now with my cousin Wisdom at his house in Orchard Street, Westminster. Lord Alington<sup>38</sup> has been very ill of a fever, but by Sir John Shadwell's care is now better and intends soon for Bath, but cannot yet get lodgings. Captain Cope at next door has made*

---

<sup>37</sup> Nicholas Corsellis, born 24<sup>th</sup> September 1661 – a student of Lincoln College, Oxford, and Lincoln's Inn, London; M.P. for Colchester 1713; died at Chelsea 26<sup>th</sup> January 1727, aged 67, buried at Layer Marney.

<sup>38</sup> Probably Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's uncle Hildebrand Alington, 5<sup>th</sup> Baron Alington of Killard, who died on 11<sup>th</sup> February 1722/23.

*a purchase of a very good seat and a little land at Hurst in Berks, at thirty year purchase; there is an Estate of one Harrison, a wild young fellow, but of an ancient family there, which it is part of. I beg my humble service to my friends at Steeple Claydon, where I hear **Cousin Churchill** is very ill; the same to you good Sir, to Mr. Butterfield and his lady.* [VL (2), pp. 80-81]

Palmer writes to his nephew on 15<sup>th</sup> October 1720:

*... Your Landlord was here yesterday from Sir Hans Sloan, who is President of the College of Physicians to invite me thither to dinner on St. Luke's Day, when there is a Latin speech in honour of their Benefactors. It is the first indication that has ever been to any of Dr. Hamey's relations since he died, which was in 1676, so I intend to go.* [VL (2), p.81]

And again on 11<sup>th</sup> November 1720:

*... I have received your Lordship's [letter] and will do as you direct as soon as we are a little come to our healths and senses; for my poor Spouse was taken so ill that I thought she would have died and were set up all night with the Hysterick Cholick. I sent for Sir R. B. at 12 at night, but he would not come out of his bed, then I sent for our Apothecary, after that to Dr. Smart of the Hospital, till Dr. Chamberlain could come, I by some neighbours' help got her a little better, Sister Folkes could not be waked. She was very ill again the next day, but by Dr. Chamberlain's prescriptions I hope I have her safe again. My poor Aunt [presumably Jane White] and I and Hamey [his son] have been laid up since with Colds and Coughs at night. I could not forbear sending you, such good friends, some account of this fright.* [VL (2), p. 81]

Later, another house comes on the market belonging to one Burchett and the Verneys negotiate through the Palmers to acquire that house.

However the search for a suitable home at Chelsea was affected by the collapse of the South Sea Company and Catherine (Paschall) Verney writes to her husband Ralph on 9<sup>th</sup> March 1721 that the house that their uncle Palmer is suggesting will:

*... cost us a great deal money and I am afraid we shall get out of the South Sea but poorly, and I'm so fearful for our younger children or else I think Sir John Cope's might be a proper house for Jack [their eldest son John] hereafter ... but I think we may very well make shift with Mrs Onslow's, for when it is washed and done up a little, I believe it will look very neat and pretty, and then it will lie us in but little Money, and I long for the time of our getting into it ...* [VL (2), p. 84]

The negotiations are lengthy; Mr. Burchett's house remains the most promising as, according to Ralph Palmer, it: *... has a little garden and a passage to the King's Road, and a straight way through his yard*. [VL (2), p.85]

And eventually an understanding is drawn up whereby Burchett agrees to rent to the Verneys.



Ralph Palmer (II) of Little Chelsea by Jonathan Richardson  
© The Pierpont Morgan Library, New York City

However Mr. Burchett begins to waiver and Catherine (Paschall) Verney writing to her husband on 21<sup>st</sup> March 1721 insists that he hold Mr. Burchett to their agreement, and make him do the repairs that he had said he would, before the Verneys moved in.

*... For I would not spend another winter in this place [Claydon House], if I thought I should live, which I verily believe I should not, for ten times the value of the estate, and tho' my Dearest I long to see you, yet I would by all means have you stay and finish the purchase either to buy or rent, lest he should devise any more shuffling tricks when you are come away.* [VL (2), p. 85]



Meanwhile Ralph Palmer corresponds with his nephew about the planting of trees at Claydon and sends him: ... *36 Norway Pines and Yews for a Hedge of 38 yards long. They are to be along the walk just as they should be planted.* And he gives careful directions about the amount of water and the quality of soil: *When they are once settled they should not be watered during the winter.* The previous trees that Palmer had sent: ... *were too much drenched at first, for in the cold soil of Claydon no plant bears watering more after once it has taken root.* Palmer also sends three of his best: ... *layers of the Burgundy Grape, and which upon a South Wall should produce ... as delicious Black grapes as ever we eat.* [VL (2) , p. 81]

The negotiations for the Burchett's house in Chelsea drag on and Ralph Palmer writes to his nephew on 15<sup>th</sup> April 1721:

*I have not tasted Pigeon since I demolished a couple, when I came in after you had dined and my good niece [Betty Verney] was pleased to draw a couple on purpose. I hope your pigeon house will make you great amends for your restitution of it and expense about it. Your fine hen turkey proved as good, tho' in the Christmas, Easter, and Whitsun holidays, our penny post comes but once a day, and we have all our letters much later ... Mr. Sloan the Doctor's nephew has bought Sir John Cope's house [in Chelsea] the Captain and his Lady have not yet left their mother, but will now soon. I spoke to my Glazier, and he will serve your Lordship at tenpence the foot with the best crown glass, and has promised me to lay by that which is most proper and clearest, as he cuts glass, for use, till you want it. I have found a reason why Burchett shuffles so, he is made a Commissioner of the Land Tax, and I believe he has no qualification to act without this freehold.* [VL (2) , p. 86]

On 29<sup>th</sup> May 1721 Palmer writes:

*We are very fine at Chelsea, the front of our house is new pointed and rubbed all with red brick and the remains of the old dead Phillarea taken quite away ... There are a thousand lies coined every day about War and Peace, but most well affected people do conclude it will be Peace, I am sure we all want it...The Lutts [Luttrells] are sadly out of conceit with their house, She<sup>39</sup> cries if her husband goes to town but for a day, and calls it a jail, and runs in Enconiums on her London dog-hole. So I suppose somebody or another will get all his expenses on it (which are not inconsiderable) into the price of his purchase in a little time when the bother ripens enough for it. The young fellow (I hear under the Rose) has had another fit in the night a bed, but the old folks know nothing of it. I heartily pity him for they have almost broke his heart. Mrs Anne Baker has the small pox at Mr Lutteral's, and was to do well when I heard last. They are in a heavy fuss about the smallpox, Mr. Baker and his lady are there and*

---

<sup>39</sup> Sarah (Baker) Lutterell the sister of Elizabeth (Baker) Verney widow of John Verney.

*Mistress Sarah, the former and last never had it, nor Mistress Lutteral.* [VL (1), p. 288]

Palmer notes that the glazier has informed him that the Bristol glass is: *supplied at ten pence a foot, but that Crown glass is generally dearer.* [VL (2), p. 86]

The next letter after the above is another from Ralph Palmer (22<sup>nd</sup> July 1721) who is having trouble with an:

*... Untoward affair at Kentish Town, with a Lease Assigned to a rascally Scrivener and he had as bad a solicitor, and unless I will pay forty pounds I must go to law and in law and equity perhaps with such rascals may spend £500 and worry my life away too with trouble about into the bargain.*

So that even a clever lawyer like Ralph Palmer could not always get his rights, to his infinite vexation. Palmer adds in a postscript:

*I have spoke to Mr. Burchett and he says by the end of this month his Corn will be in his barns, and then he will set the window frames on the threshing floors where they will stand dry and safe ...*

Finally, toward the end of 1721, Burchett leased his house to Ralph Verney (II)

*Your Lordship's two last letters had been I believe opened, for one came quite open and the last stuck but by a very little bit of wafer, and both had been pricked with pin to make it stick, where as yours has been always sealed with your coat of arms.* [VL (2), p. 88]

In August Ralph Palmer much enjoyed a visit to Claydon and found his boys (Ralph (III) and Hamey) on his return to Chelsea well, but:

*My man Tom after I sent him home has behaved so insolently and idly that I shall be obliged to discharge him, he has set my whole family in an uproar.* [VL (2), p. 89.]

In a letter dated 31<sup>st</sup> August 1721 to his nephew that discusses the progress of the house purchase in Chelsea, Ralph Palmer includes some family details.

*I received your dear Lordship's kind letter, and am very sorry to hear your head is so bad. I have great hopes our air will do you good. I beseech God to give us all our healths, for without it, this World is nothing.*

*My little man returned to school yesterday as cheerfully as he came home. His dear Mamma went with him, after she came home she had another severe fit of the Cholick; Dr Chamberlain is not to be had now, so I do all I can to persuade her to let me send for Sir Hans Sloan, for tho' she is still taking powders and Bristol waters, it must needs wear her away, poor woman ... The Boy's cough is better, I hope Brentford air will cure him ... I think Sir you need harbor no doubt of our neighbour's quitting at Michaelmas ... the place is ready for your windows, and our ways are mended; they have carried away some dirt before the house, and are laying gravel ... [VL (1), p. 90]*

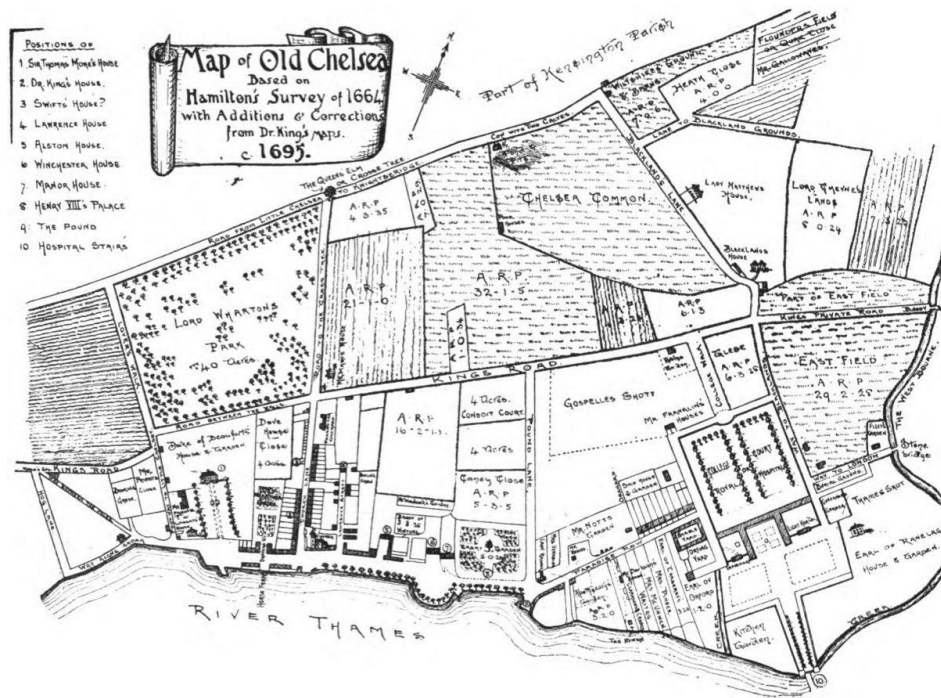
The letters go on to say that, in anticipation of the Verneys' move to Chelsea, Palmer was eager to show Hampton Court to Catherine (Paschall) Verney which he thought:

*... might have been worth her seeing and that he has: ... a miserable friend there, Mr Marriott, who has convulsions and a kind of Lethargic Fitts .*

The Mr. Marriott mentioned above is probably James or Richard Marriott who was Housekeeper and Keeper of the Privy Lodgings and Wardrobe at Hampton Court. Palmer had sent a lawyer friend of his to make Marriott's will but Marriott was too ill to accomplish it (31<sup>st</sup> August 1721). A month later Palmer writes:

*A Charitable Office called me hither [to Hampton Court] , that of assisting my infirm friend [Marriott] in making his will, for which he was unable to before but very uneasy, but he has recovered his Understanding very well, and now done it to his Mind, and I hope will be the better for it. I will put your [window] sashes in hand and my wife will take care to have them secured as I directed. My plumber was almost killed by a Vapor at the bottom of Mr Burchett's well, where he went to mend a pipe that was out of order. He was brought up dead, and lay so a long time, but Mrs Onslow saved his life. I hope your Lordship won't fail being busy on Wednesday night because Mrs Onslow stayed on purpose for you .... Sir Hans Sloan has been with my spouse, and after a thorough enquiry (of above half an hour's continuance) gives me great hopes he will put a stop to a complication of ailments, that are making their advances against her precious health, no fewer I think, than Dropsy, Rheumatism, Cholic, Stone and Jaundice ... The time now slides away a pace, and I doubt not but the happiness of our two families will be much advanced by the approach of St. Michael [29<sup>th</sup> September]. [VL (2), pp. 90-91]*

The day finally came and the Verneys moved to Chelsea but on so doing the household was overcome by smallpox and for the next three months Catherine (Paschall) Verney was very ill.



### The Deaths of Ralph and Katherine (Ernle) Palmer

Katherine died at Little Chelsea on 31<sup>st</sup> July 1731 and was buried on 6<sup>th</sup> August at St. Peter's Roydon in Essex. Her passing was noted in the newspapers.

**Last Wednesday departed this Life, at Little Chelsea, after a long Illness, Katharine, the Wife of Ralph Palmer, Esq; Councellor at Law, with whom she lived in all Conjugal Felicity, the Space of 31 Years. She was the only Daughter of Sir John Ernle, 14 Years Chancellor of the Exchequer, by the Right Hon. Elizabeth, Relict of Charles Lord Seymour, and Half Sister to his Grace the Duke of Somerset; a Lady extremely valued by all that knew her, of great Virtue, Temper, and Piety; a most excellent Wife, Mother, and Friend. She had many Daughters that died young, and two Sons, both Youths. now living.**

Last Wednesday departed this Life, at Little Chelsea, after a long Illness, Katharine, the Wife of Ralph Palmer, Esq; Councillor at Law, with whom she lived in all Conjugal Felicity, the Space of 31 Years. She was the only Daughter of Sir John Ernle, 14 Years Chancellor of the Exchequer, by the Right Hon. Elizabeth, Relict of Charles Lord Seymour, and Half Sister to his Grace the Duke of Somerset; a Lady extremely valued by all that knew her, of great Virtue, Temper, and Piety; a most excellent Wife, Mother, and Friend. She had many Daughters that died young, and two Sons, both Youths, now living.





Left Charles Seymour, 6<sup>th</sup> Duke of Somerset and far right his son Algernon the 7<sup>th</sup> Duke and in the middle the 6<sup>th</sup> Duke's mother Elizabeth (Alington) (Symour) Ernle who was the mother of Katherine Ernle who married Ralph Palmer (II) © National Trust, Petworth House

Having kept up a stream of letters to his Verney nephew and having helped his nieces Mary Lovett and Margaret Cave preserve their estates when they became widows, Ralph died in February 1745/46. His death was recorded in St. James's Evening Post (London, England), on 20<sup>th</sup> February 1745/46:

On Thursday Night died in the 79<sup>th</sup> Year of his Age, at his House in Little Chelsea, Ralph Palmer, Esq; descended from a very antient Family, formerly of Lincolnshire. He married Katherine, Daughter of Sir John Ernly, (Chancellor of the Exchequer in the Reigns of King Charles II. James II. and William III.) by Elizabeth Lady Seymour, Relict of the Lord Seymour, and Mother of the Duke of Somerset, by whom he has left Issue two Sons. He was a Man of great Probity, Virtue, and Learning, which he daily gave Proofs of in a private and retir'd Life.

On Thursday Night died in the 79<sup>th</sup> Year of his Age, at his House in Little Chelsea, Ralph Palmer, Esq; descended from a very antient Family, formerly of Lincolnshire. He married Katherine, Daughter of Sir John Ernly, (Chancellor of the Exchequer in the Reigns of King Charles II. James II. and William III.) by Elizabeth Lady Seymour, Relict of the Lord Seymour, and Mother of the Duke of Somerset, by whom he has left Issue two Sons. He was a Man of great Probity, Virtue, and Learning, which he daily gave Proofs of in a private reir'd Life

Ralph was buried at St. Peters at Roydon on 27<sup>th</sup> February 1745/46.

### The Will of Ralph Palmer II

Ralph wrote his will on 10<sup>th</sup> July 1733. He wishes to be buried as his wife was and to be so buried next to her in Roydon Church in the County of Essex. He gives to his eldest son Ralph Palmer (III) all the lands, tenements, and hereditaments settled on him by his (Ralph II's) marriage settlement and also all the copyhold lands tenements and hereditaments in or near Broxboyn [Broxbourne] and Wormeley in the County of Hertford also all lands and hereditaments in or near High Easter and Margaret Roding in the County of Essex.





Broxbourne Parish Church © Trustees of British Museum

To his younger son Hamey he devises that his copyhold estate at Putney in Surrey should descend to Hamey in accordance with the custom of the manor of Wimbeldon.

As for his personal estate and interests he bequeaths all his capital stock in the Bank of England to Hamey and one hundred pounds moreover to defray the expences of his admittances and he humbly requests that his nephew The Right Honourable Lord Viscount Fermanagh [Ralph Verney II] take upon himself the guardianship of his youngest son Hamey (his Godson) and Hamey's affairs until he comes of age [this provision was not required to be acted on as by the time Ralph Palmer died in 1745/46, his son Hamey was 30 years old] and he appoints the sum of sixty pounds a year out of the profits of his estate for Hamey's maintenance to be paid to him quarterly during his clerkship until such time as Ralph his father bequeaths to him (Hamey) his mother's string of diamonds in the middle of which is a large fauret over the diamond which was his grandmother Seymour's<sup>40</sup>. The Silver candle cup cover and spoon which was hers too together with his grandfather Palmer's picture an Oval with Dr Hamey's on the back of it in a case. Also his (Ralph II's) Dear Mother's Gold Chains the Gilt Knife and fork and Spoon of Silver in a red case and his blue turois [turquoise] stone Ring with small Diamonds and his own head (portrait) done by Boniwirk (?) He appoints his eldest son Ralph (III) as his executor.

---

<sup>40</sup> Elizabeth (Alington) (Seymour) Ernle, the mother of Katherine (Ernle) Palmer and mother of Charles Seymour 6<sup>th</sup> Duke of Somerset.

During his lifetime Ralph Palmer (II) amassed one of the most important manuscript collections of the 18th century that became known among collectors and bibliographers as *The Bibliotheca Palmeriana*. Details of the collection can be found in Part Two.

### The South Sea Bubble

In 1712 Richard and Hester (Palmer) Cradock's daughter (and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's first cousin) Susannah Cradock was widowed (for the second time) when she lost her husband the goldsmith and banker Benjamin Tudman (1682-1712).

John Verney writing to his son Ralph (II) noted the loss on 2<sup>nd</sup> November 1712:

*Mr. Tudman* [the banker] *died last week, so that now our Cousin* [Susannah] *is at Liberty to get her a third Husband, I hope she will make a wiser match than her last was.* [VL (1), p. 289]



John Blunt who married Hester (Palmer) Cradock's daughter Susannah (Cradock) (Banner) Tudman © Trustees of the British Museum

John's hope for his cousin Susannah was to have ironic consequences as she chose for her next husband John Blunt who was fast becoming the chief architect and main protagonist of the South Sea Company and whose actions eventually led to the South Sea bubble in 1720.

The collapse of the company's share prices sowed widespread financial hardship across the country and the Verneys too were affected, though not as much as many.

Before the collapse came the Verneys, their relations, and many others were as keen as the next person to purchase shares in the Company. John Verney writing to William Vickers<sup>41</sup> on 13<sup>th</sup> February 1715:

*Sir - You wrote to me about the South Sea Stock which I think is as good as any other security, so that if you and your wife do approve of it I shall not be against it, but I think it need be bought in my name in trust and I will accept of the transfer.* [VL (1), p. 236]

---

<sup>41</sup> He had married John's cousin Penelope Gardiner.

Although storm clouds were gathering over the company, Catherine (Paschall) Verney still felt the stock was worth hanging on to and she writes to her husband on 20<sup>th</sup> June 1720:

*My Dearest I am truly glad you got safe to town and shall be heartily rejoiced to see my Dear Love again. I think that the Stocks, if the subscription opens so high, it is most likely to make it rise, and then I think we had as good stay a little longer before we sell, and that will please me whichever way it is ...* [VL (II), p. 80]

But the bubble once it burst, swept all before it until Robert Walpole offered to save the country with a plan that had Catherine concerned and on 12<sup>th</sup> January 1721 she writes to Ralph (II):

*I don't understand what Walpole's scheme is, if it is in print pray send it me, and what do you hear people guess it may come to ... Do you remember what you did with the Parson's two Fast Sermons; he sent to me for 'em and I never had 'em. Pray buy me an ounce of Portugal Snuff.* [VL (2), p. 82]

Twelve days later Catherine again writes to Ralph (II) and recommends being content with interest at 4 per cent, as safer than South Sea Bonds:



Robert Walpole (see also Walpole chart)  
© National Portrait Gallery, London

*For if the [South Sea Company account] books are gone, I fear it will come to nothing at all, but it should, let us patiently and as cheerfully as we can submit to what God appoints, and be thankful for the lives and healths of ourselves and children ... I will send cousin Vickers a turkey and hare if I can get one ... Pray eat your seed buns in a morning and take great care of yourself, that we may live and enjoy one another, which will be a blessing to all our troubles.* [VL (2), pp. 82-83]

She has sent up a pint of cherry brandy to London, and desires that he will drink a little of it at night, when he is fatigued, and she continues:

*... I'm sadly afraid of dealing any more with the South Sea ...* At the same time she also needs two pairs of dark grey stockings for their son Ralph Verney (III) and a calico dress for herself. [VL (2), p. 83].

On 31<sup>st</sup> January 1721 Catherine writes to Ralph that she believes:

*.... no one here knows of Lady Appleton<sup>42</sup>'s death, if you could hear who has her things I should be glad to bye Cousin Kitty's picture .... I hope I hear something today in the City, what is the price of long annuities unsubscribed, and I hope their names [of the Directors of the South Sea Company] will be exposed who have betrayed their country for their private interest. [VL (2), p. 83]*

THE SECOND  
COLLECTION  
OF  
C A T O's  
Political Letters  
IN THE  
LONDON JOURNAL,  
Continued to the End of  
January, 1720.



L O N D O N:  
Printed for J. ROBERTS in Warwick-  
Lane, 1720.

The list of the directors' names was published and included, of course, Ralph II's cousin Susannah's husband Sir John Blunt.

Another major player was the Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir John Aislaby, who married Anne Rawlinson whose mother was a Palmer [see chart].

On 2<sup>nd</sup> February 1721 Catherine writes:

*We were invited last night to the Smiths, to supper, Betty's [Lovett] face was so swelled she could not go, so I went by myself in the Chariot and came home this morning between 2 and 3 ... There was the Lowndes, the Woodmouth's, and Mrs Piles. Mr Lowndes said the Duke of Wharton had quarreled with Dick Abell<sup>43</sup>, for not voting as he did about the Directors [of the South Sea Company]. I'm sorry these two gentleman's names are in the List because sure it must be a vast disgrace. Send me word what tis thought will be done with directors and all the news you have. [VL (2), p. 83]*

She tells Ralph that she has received petitions on his behalf from a Mr. Turner and George Caswall who plead for Ralph to look into their accounts with the South Sea Company as they have lost very heavily by it [VL (2), p. 83].

*Here was Dr Busby and his wife and children and Sue last night, I asked them to stay for supper but they refused. The Dr. talked much of his letters and newspapers, the Duke of Wharton sends them, and said the Duke had sent about the Country a*

---

<sup>42</sup> Possibly Mary Rivet who had married Sir Henry Appleton of Jarvis Hall. Henry's aunt Catherine Appleton had married Henry Paschall, Catherine (Paschall) Verney's father.

<sup>43</sup> Richard Abell MP whose father William inherited East Claydon when William Abell, the father of Mary (Abell) Verney, died.

*thousand journals one to every man in the party, that was wrote by Molesworth, by the name of Cato, about the South Sea.* [VL (2), p. 83]

On 21<sup>st</sup> April 1721, [Samuel Tufnell MP](#) informs Ralph Verney of the progress in the House of Commons of a Bill that would have impounded the estates of the South Sea Company directors (the defaulters).

*The House have appointed a very strict Call to be on Monday next, and it was understood that the Defaulters should be called over the same day and the Disposition of the House seems to be to take the Defaulters into Custody; therefore would by no means advise your Lordship to be absent. On Tuesday next, the House will come to some determination about the 7 millions<sup>44</sup>; which is the thing of greatest consequence now in hand. There will be a meeting at Mr Walpole's on Sunday night about it.*

*Tomorrow the House will go upon Mr. Cragg's Estate, which is generally believed will be brought into the Stock. Wednesday next is appointed for the Directors and Asleby's [Aislabie] Bill, which are to be consolidated and some matters of great importance of the South Sea then resolved on. The business of the House seems to be just beginning, and every day now is like to afford something of consequence.* [VL (2), p. 86-87]

Mr. [Montague Drake MP](#) for Amersham sends an urgent note to Ralph on 29<sup>th</sup> April 1721:

*The Call of the House will certainly be on Monday morning, 12 o'clock, and everybody will be taken into custody that does not attend, so think you had better come up.* [VL (2), p. 87]

Ralph takes heed and goes up to Westminster but he cannot get his usual lodgings, which was an anxiety for Catherine. She is also sorry ... *that the Stock is so low but we must look to our blessings as well as our misfortunes.* However, to the surprise and disappointment of his political allies, Ralph appears to have returned to Claydon sooner than his fellow MPs in the House had hoped and a puzzled Samuel Tuffnell writes on 13<sup>th</sup> May 1721:

[Your] *Lordships inclinations not be absent makes me wonder you should lose any Opportunity of being in the House.* [VL (2), p. 87].

Every vote was important as the margin needed to pass the various resolutions to impound the estates of John Blunt

---

<sup>44</sup>The amount of money estimated to have been lost as a result of the collapse in the value of the South Sea Company's stock.

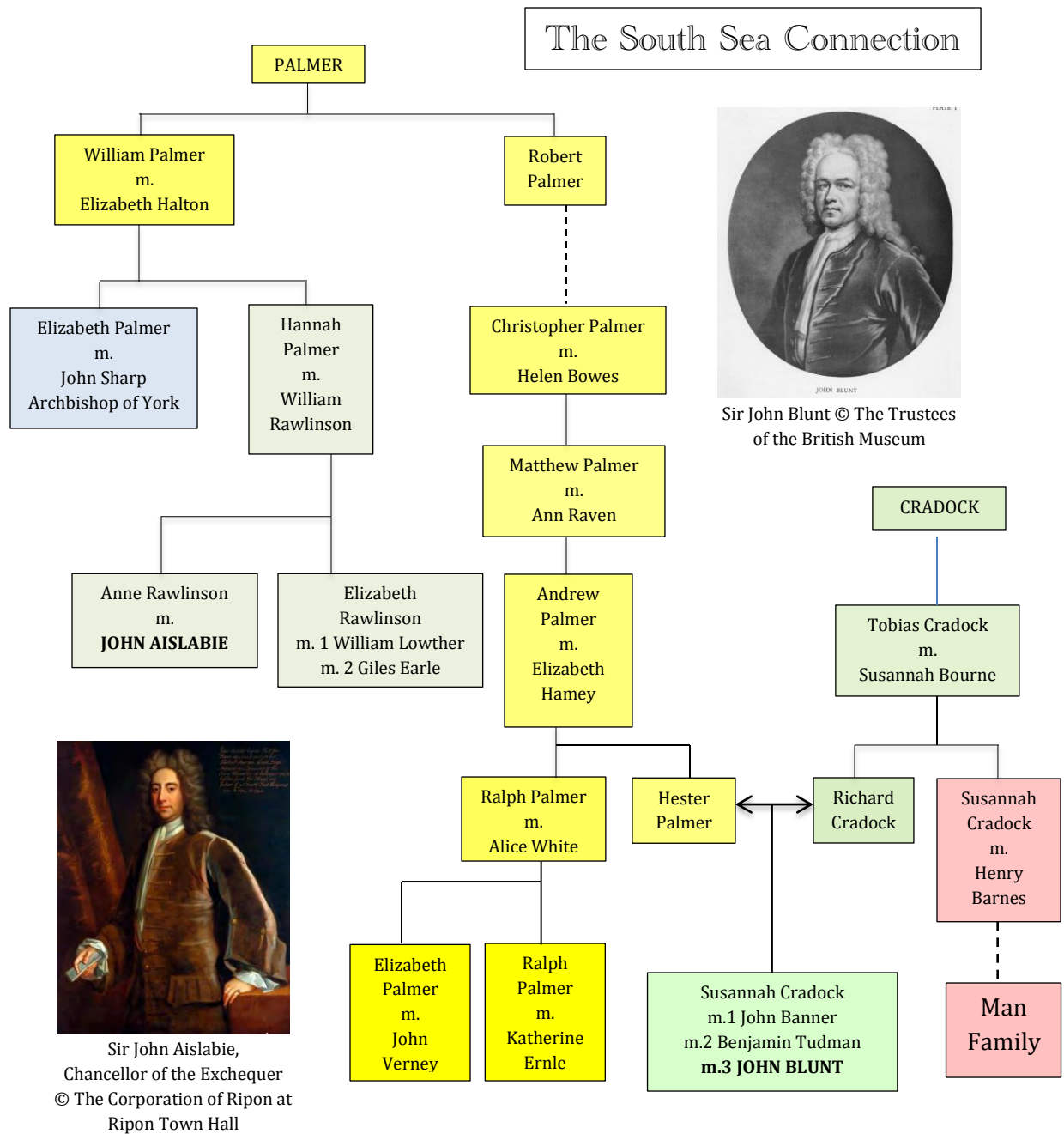


and the other company directors was narrow. Thus Ralph Verney's absence was disappointing and perplexing.

On Whitsun Eve of 1721 Ralph Palmer (II) writes to his nephew:

*..... I will let you a piece of news, a friend of mine and a member of the House in the County of Southampton was here with his Lady; she was with a very great Lady, perhaps she had said truly if she had used to a superlative degree, who mentioned your standing [for Parliament] and was very sorry for it being a very great Jacobite and your father before you, upon which she fired up prodigiously and did assure her that it was a very false assertion or information that she had received, for though you were a Tory the other was an aspersion, and the reason she had to believe it was from her opinion of me [Palmer] and my being so nearly related to you, her Spouse put in and said that he hoped you would have it and keep out a rogue, for whatever they called you he was well convinced you were a very Honest Man, and indeed I think if Honesty ever shines it will be very bright now, and command Veneration wherever it is so. [VL (2), p. 88]*

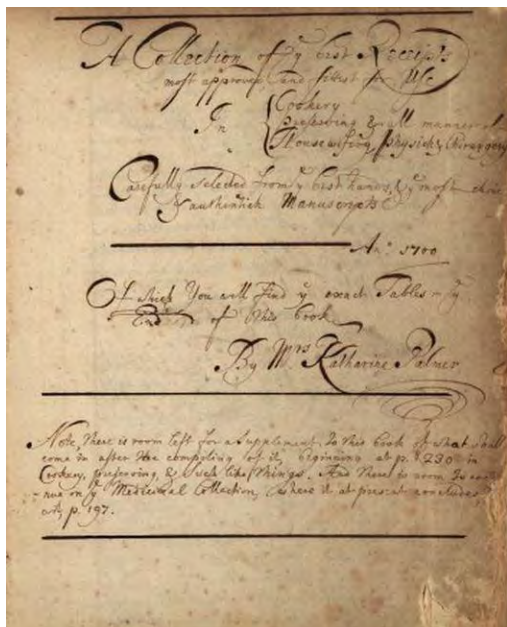
Margaret Verney the editor of *The Letters* comments that: 'the Very Great Lady' may have been Caroline, the Princess of Wales, who had a keen nose for a Jacobite, naturally.



### Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's Receipt Book

Among the historical collection of medical and scientific material at the Wellcome Library in London is a manuscript volume of recipes put together by Katherine (Ernle) Palmer. The notes below about this volume are taken from the catalogue description at the library. This author has added two newspaper articles from July 1734 that are referred to among the recipes.

Title: [Mrs Katharine Palmer, 'A Collection of ye best Receipts. Date 1700-1739.](#)



Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's Receipts Book © Wellcome Trust

Title/Description: *'A Collection of ye best Receipts most approved and fittest in Cookery, preserving, and all manner of Housewifery, physick & Chirurgery. Carefully selected from ye best & ye most choice & authentick Manuscripts. Anno 1700. Of which you will find ye exact Tables in ye End of this book. By Mrs Katharine Palmer'*

Two Tables (indexes) at end to cookery and medicinal recipes respectively, 2pp of tables of weights and measures, and on the final leaf extra remedies in several different hands, 'Bolus Arthriticum', 'For ye Bite of a Mad Dog', 'For ye bite of a Viper' (the latter 'published in ye Dayly Advertiser of July 24, 1734'). A few loose recipes, including 'For a

dropsy', as reported in 'The London Dayly Post June 15, 1739'. A number of recipes are dated much earlier (1617), possibly copied in from other sources.

Additions in several other hands. Includes numerous attributed items. Named physicians include Dr Willis (several recipes), Dr Stevens, Sir Theodore Mayerne (several recipes), Dr Short, Dr Hamey (several recipes), Dr Bates, Dr Hatton, Dr Meveril, Dr Deodatus, Dr Tresham, Dr Denton, Dr Ratcliffe, Dr Bathurst, Dr Lower, as well as 'Mrs Herbert (ye great Midwife)'. Members of the aristocracy named are Anne, Duchess of York, the Duchess of Lauderdale (several recipes), Lady Rowston, Lady Robinson, Lady Glanvil, Lady Katherine Seymour, (Katherine's mother) Lady Lucy Bright, Lady Down, Lady Keelyn, Lady Jacobs, Lady Clark, Lady Fermanagh, Lady Norcliffe, Lady Falmash, Sir William Courtney, Sir George Whitmore, Mrs Ernle,

Mrs Fettiplace, Mrs Tresham, Mrs Anne Marriott of Hampton Court (and Mr Marriott) and others are also mentioned. 'To make Oil of Swallows' p 199 and several recipes for snail-water, p 80, p 211, p 225; 'An Excellent Water for ye Jaundice', pp 113-114, also features snails and earthworms.

Historical Background: Mrs Katharine Palmer (1673-1731), was the daughter of Sir John Ernle, Chancellor of the Exchequer, who married Ralph Palmer (1668-1755), great-nephew of Baldwin Hamey (1600-1676) the younger, on 24 February 1699. The coincidence of the date of her marriage with the date of commencement of the volume strongly suggests that the compilation marked her recent change of status. Ralph Palmer was his great-uncle's favourite and protégé: he [Ralph<sup>45</sup>] erected a monument to him [Hamey] in St Luke's church Chelsea in 1717, and wrote his biography, 'The Life of the Most Eminent Dr Baldwin Hamey', 1733, now in the library of the Royal College of Physicians. There are several receipts ascribed to 'Dr Hamey' in the volume, and a loose prescription dated 26 February 1674/5 for 'Mr Palmer' which is endorsed thus: 'these are Dr Hameys pills under his own hand ... my father used them frequently on all little occasions ...'. The compiler of the volume, or someone close to her, evidently had access to Hamey's papers, as one entry reads 'a purging diet drink to clean the blood found among Dr Hameys papers 1666'. Ralph Palmer inherited Hamey's manuscripts and eventually passed them to the library of the College of Physicians. (See Hamey Family Section below)

The remedies mentioned above were sometimes inspired by events reported in the press. For instance the remedy for a viper's bite was motivated by the following tale:

**Bristol, July 20.** One day last week a carpenter sitting down in a field near Bedminster to rest himself, a viper rushed out of the hedge and bit him by the hand; the venom mortified all down the side he was bit on, before any relief could be applied by the surgeons, and he died after four days languishing in a very miserable condition: his corps was obliged to be buried without ceremony, the stench was so offensive. *G. P. D. D.*

*London Evening Post, 23rd July 1734*

---

<sup>45</sup> Ralph would have been only eight years old at the time of his great uncle Hamey's death.

There was a Paragraph in this Paper of Tuesday, of a Man who was kill'd near Bristol by the Bite of a Viper, we think ourselves oblig'd, in common Humanity, to acquaint the Publick, that in such Accidents *Sallad Oil*, apply'd warm to the Wound, is an effectual Cure.

Ralph Palmer III (1712-1755)

Although we know a little about the two sons of Ralph and Katherine (Ernle) Palmer after they had passed into adulthood, we do know something of their lives while they were growing up as children thanks to their father mentioning his sons in letters to either his brother in law John Verney or his nephew Ralph Verney (II).

The eldest son, Ralph Palmer (III) was born in August 1712<sup>46</sup> and was baptised on the 17<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. Mary Abbot, Kensington. His godfather was John Verney to whom Ralph (II) regularly sent notes on his son's progress; such as the following on 14<sup>th</sup> March 1713:

*My poor little boy your Godson has got the Hooping cough, he has been blooded in both arms, which we hope has done him some good; he has 2 teeth and three or four more lye swelled ready to cut.* [VL (1), p. 295]

And on 17<sup>th</sup> June 1714:

*Our young Spark has picked up his crumbs and is much improved in strength.*

On 17<sup>th</sup> July 1714 Ralph Palmer writes to his nephew Ralph Verney that:

*... ours is well and has got all his eye teeth and more are coming, but is a sad boy anights this hot weather, he is all life but is very weak in his legs and thighs and very poor in his flesh which makes us long till he gets more strength and substance.* [VL (1), p. 297]

And to John Verney on 8<sup>th</sup> March 1716:

*Your Godson is grown a brisk boy, and I thank God holds very well, he is the life of this house which is pretty much reduced, and with his best bow is your Obedient Godson, He*

---

<sup>46</sup> See VL (1), p. 241.



*can say his Catechise [catechism] and his prayers, and is so far the Christian you engaged he should be.* [VL (1), p. 298]

In 1721 a school at Brentford, close by Chelsea and run by William Chilcott and John Le Hunt, was chosen by Ralph (III)'s father as a suitable establishment for his son's education and on 2<sup>nd</sup> April Ralph Palmer (II) writes to his nephew Ralph Verney (II):

*My Spouse and I went to Brentford to view and discourse with Mr Le Hunt the Schoolmaster, and found all things so much to our satisfaction that we are fully preparing of putting Ralph [III] thither immediately after Whitsuntide.* [VL (2), p. 174]

John Le Hunt's great grandmother was Katherine Palmer of the same Palmer family as Ralph's (see Palmer family section below).

Ralph III's experience at the Brentford school proved so satisfactory that Ralph Verney (III) was sent there to join his cousin. Only a few years separated the four Verney - Palmer cousins thus: John Verney (1711), Ralph Palmer (III) (1712), Ralph Verney (III) (1714), and Hamey Palmer (1716).

William Chilcott was a clergyman with a parish of his own and according to *The Verney Letters* his name occurs in other walks of life: educational, ecclesiastical, and political. And, for some years he:

**... supervised the education of the Palmer and Verney boys with a syllabus of studies that was a tremendous and most unreasonable one but it probably flourished chiefly on paper.** [VL (2), p. 174].

In 1727 Chilcott was also presented with the living at Baddow in Essex by Ralph Verney (II); as well as being appointed one of the executors of his will.

**The Rev. Mr. Chilcot, Vicar of Brentford, in Middlesex, is presented, by the Right Honourable the Lord Fermanagh, to the Living of Baddow, in Essex, of about 120 l. per Annum.**

*The Daily Journal, Friday, 15<sup>th</sup> December 1727*

Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney's eldest son John (II) was not sent to the same Brentford school as his brother Ralph (III) and Palmer cousins. Instead he was sent to an establishment in Fulham run by a Mr. Vaslet<sup>47</sup> and while there he stayed at Chelsea with his great uncle and aunt, Ralph and Katherine (Ernle) Palmer.

Ralph Palmer (II) sent John (II)'s father regular updates on his progress as well as on how he was preparing for John (II)'s education at Fulham, and over the summer of 1721 he writes:

*Ralph [III] goes on very well at Brentford and always inquires after your Lordship's health ... Aunt Jennie and his Mamma were with him on Tuesday last.*

*Master Bignel was here to inquire after my son Ralph, and he had promised to be very kind and useful to Master [John] Verney when he goes to Fulham. He [Bignel] is a very good natured boy and will be I doubt not very agreeable to him.*

*... My son Ralph came home the 19<sup>th</sup> of this month, he then breaking up [from school] for a fortnight. Mr Vaslett was to pay a visit here and gives his service to you and my Lady and Master. I had the opportunity of laying strict injunctions upon him [Vaslett], as to his care and kindness to him [John Verney], which he very solemnly promises in all respects when he has the honour of his pupillage ... [VL (2), p. 133]*

Ralph Palmer (III) appears to have not gone to university as he entered the Middle Temple aged 17 on 28<sup>th</sup> January 1729/30 (See [Registers of Admissions to the Middle Temple](#), p. 308)

---

<sup>47</sup> Louis Vaslet (1666-1731) was a French Huguenot refugee who was headmaster of what later became known as Burlington House School in Fulham.

Apart from reports sent by his father such as those above when he is a child, we only find glimpses of Ralph Palmer (III) as an adult.

For instance, on 21<sup>st</sup> August 1743, Ralph Verney (III) notes that:

*Mr Palmer leaves us next week. He drinks nothing but water and perhaps half a glass a day and is very temperate.* [VL (2), p. 255]

On 20<sup>th</sup> February 1746/47 a marriage allegation (below) was made between Ralph Palmer Esq. and Miss Elizabeth Peacock at the chapel called May Fair on Curzon Street.

109  
20 Feb 1746  
Appeared personally Ralph  
Palmer of the parish of St George's in the County of Middlesex Esq.  
and upwards of twenty four years of age and offered that he intended to marry to the daughter of the parish of St John the Evangelist in the City of West in the said County of Middlesex aged upwards of twenty one years and upwards of

And that he himself of no lawful blood nor impediment by reason of any blood or consanguinity, affinity, or any other lawful means whatsoever to her, nor that he intended to marry her of the birth of which he made oath and married in the Chapel of St George's in the City of West in the County of Middlesex

Witness my hand and seal this 20th day of February 1746

Ralph Palmer  
Robt Chapman Surgeon.

KNOW all Men by these Presents, That We Ralph Palmer of the parish of St George's in the County of Middlesex Esq.  
myself become bound unto the Right Reverend Father in God Archbishop of Divine Providence, Lord Bishop of London, in the Sum of Two Hundred Pounds of good and lawful Money of Great Britain, to be paid to him the said Right Reverend Father in God, or his lawful attorney, Executor, Successor, or Assigns: for the good and faithful Payment of which Sum we do bind ourselves, and each of us jointly and severally, for the Whole, our Heirs, Executors, and Administrators, unto the said Right Reverend Father in God, or his lawful attorney, Executor, Successor, or Assigns: in the Year of our Lord 1746

THE Condition of this Obligation is such, That if hereafter there shall not appear any lawful Let or Impediment, by reason of any Pro-Contract, Consanguinity, Affinity, or any other lawful Means whatsoever; but that we above named Ralph Palmer Esq. and Elizabeth Peacock daughter of the said Right Reverend Father in God, may lawfully Solemnize Marriage together, and in the time afterwards lawfully remain and continue for Man and Wife, according to the Laws in that behalf provided: And moreover, if there be not at this present Time any Action, Suit, Plea, Quarrel, or Demand, moral or depending before any Judge Ecclesiastical or Temporal, for or concerning any such lawful Impediment between the said Parties. Nor that either of them be of any better Estate or Degree, than to the Judge in granting of the Licence is suggested.

And lastly, if the said Marriage shall be openly Solemnized in the Church, in the Licence specified, between the Parties appointed in the Constitutions Ecclesiastical confirmed, and according to the Form of the Book of Common Prayer, now by Law established; and do save harmless, and keep unimpaired, the above named Reverend Father in God, his Chancellor and Surrogates, and all other his Officers and Ministers whatsoever, by reason of the Premises; then this Obligation to be void, or else to stand in full Force and Virtue.

Signed and Delivered in the Presence of  
Ralph Palmer  
Robt Chapman Surgeon.

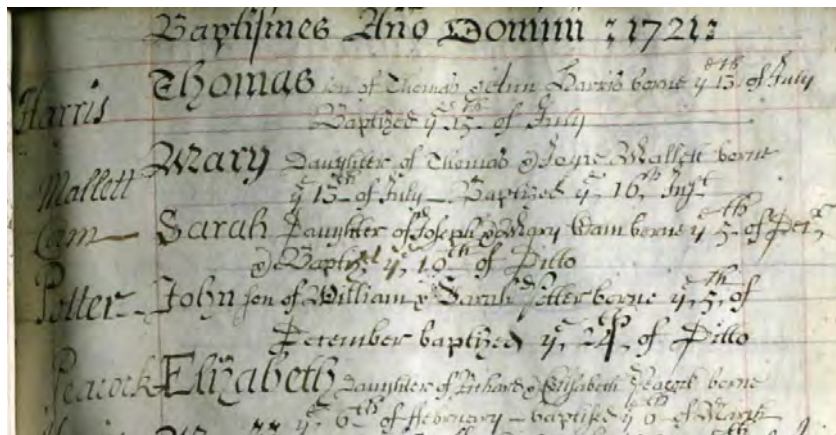
Ralph (III) married Elizabeth Peacock on or about 20<sup>th</sup> February 1746/47, although a record of the marriage itself has so far not been located. The *St James's Evening Post* noted the marriage on 24<sup>th</sup> February 1746/47:

**On Monday last Ralph Palmer, Esq; a Gentleman of good Estate, was married to Miss Peacock, a young Lady of 20,000 l. Fortune.**

However a faint taint hangs over this marriage as it was performed at the Mayfair / May Fair Chapel which has been described in *The Streets of London* by John Thomas Smith as follows:

Much about the middle of the last century, when marriage ceremonies were performed at a minute's notice, a person of the name of Keith, who had a chapel in the Fleet Prison, also officiated... , where Curzon Street Chapel now stands; and this spot, at the time of May Fair, was much frequented for that purpose; but this disgraceful custom was only practised by profligate and ruined characters, and was entirely abolished by the Marriage Act in 1754. (For more see [Wikipedia](#))

Elizabeth Peacock was born on 6<sup>th</sup> February 1721/22 and baptised on 6<sup>th</sup> March at St. Clement in Eastcheap, the daughter of Richard and Elizabeth (Unknown) Peacock.



Peacock Elizabeth Daughter of Richard & Elizabeth Peacock borne  
ye 6<sup>th</sup> of february – baptized ye 6<sup>th</sup> of March

It was also about this time that the Palmers decided to quit Chelsea and move to Mayfair. In doing so they sold the old Palmer home to their Verney cousins.

Meanwhile the Verneys kept tabs on their Palmer cousins (Ralph (III) and Hamey) and before Ralph's marriage to Elizabeth Peacock Ralph Verney (II) received a report from a Captain Tench on the state of the Peacock family. Ralph Verney (II) (by now Earl Verney) then sent his son Ralph

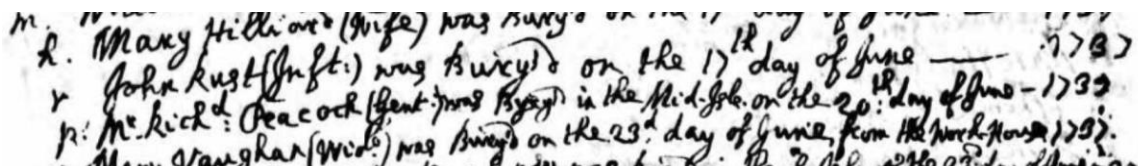
Verney (III) a short summary of what he had been told by the Captain in a letter dated 11<sup>th</sup> February 1747.

*Miss Peacock's father was first a footman to Sir John Forebes, a merchant in the City, who made him afterwards his Clerk, as Merchant and Justice of the Peace.*

*[Richard] Peacock married Sir John Forbe's Cook, of an ordinary Character, by whom he had the present Miss Peacock and one son a profligate who married and left one daughter, to whom he had given 500 pounds. The Estate of Money and Land of 6,000 value has fallen to Miss Peacock by her brother's dying before he was 25 years old. Miss Peacock's Mother is quite deaf. The above account was given me by Captain Tench on Wednesday 11<sup>th</sup> Feb 1746-7. [VL (2), p. 256]*

Richard Peacock may have been 'just a footman' but he managed to accumulate quite an estate by the time he wrote his will.

Only a week followed between Richard writing his will on 13<sup>th</sup> June 1737 and his being buried on 20<sup>th</sup> June 1737 at St. John at Hackney, Richard Peacock died.



Mr. Rich<sup>d</sup> Peacock (Gent) was Buried in the Mid-Isle on the 20<sup>th</sup> day of June - 1737

### Richard Peacock's Will

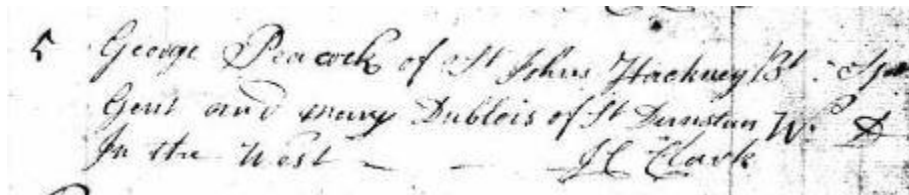
On 13<sup>th</sup> June 1737 Richard Peacock, Gentleman of Hackney in the county of Middlesex wrote his will in which he first left three hundred pounds to his wife Elizabeth along with an annuity of fifty pounds a year arising from rents from his various properties. These included land at Bowers St. Mary in Suffolk; Bensington at Benson in Oxfordshire, which was leased from Magdelene College, and a piece of land at Durham. Likewise he gives forty pounds maintenance per year to his daughter Elizabeth until she reaches twenty one or marries whichever comes first. He gives sixty pounds a year to his son George for his maintenance until he reaches the age of twenty five. Once the children reach their ages of maturity (25 for George and 21 for Elizabeth or when she marries) then the lands that Richard owns are to be transferred to son George for his own use and benefit. But if he dies before age twenty five then his portion is to be held in trust for Elizabeth until she reaches age twenty one or marries whichever comes first. Once George, or if he



dies his sister, receives the property he or she is to continue paying their mother her fifty pounds annuity out of the rents derived from the property. Elizabeth is to receive two thousand five hundred pounds when she reaches twenty one or marries whichever comes first. Richard Peacock's siblings receive forty pounds each and his nephews and nieces are to receive forty pounds divided equally among them. Household plate jewellery, furniture, etc. is to be first for the use of his wife and then shared equally among her and their two children when they reach their ages of maturity. The executors are Charles Palmer (no relation to 'our Palmers'), Thomas Prime, and Bryan Benson. The will was proved on 10<sup>th</sup> October 1737.

### George Peacock

In July 1737, less than a month after his father died, George Peacock married Mary Deblois/Dublois at the Fleet Prison. Not necessarily because George was a bankrupt but because the Fleet was a quick and easy place to get married; especially if objections might be raised by one's family.



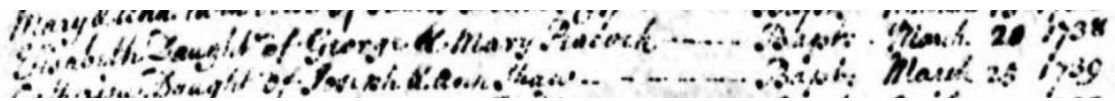
George Peacock of St Johns Hackney  
Gent and Mary Dublois of St Dunstan  
In the West

Then, in November 1737, George Peacock brought an action in Chancery against his father's estate in which he claimed the whole of his father's estate for himself; even denying his mother her annual pension and his sister her right to inherit under it. Peacock basis his claim on one or other or all of the following: 1) His father Richard never actually made the will that is under dispute and the will is some sort of forgery and is not his actual will and, 2) but just in case his father's actual last will and testament will should appear or the will now being disputed turns out to be his father's actual will then whatever it may contain his father was not 'of a sound and dispensing mind and memory' when he wrote his will and therefore he did not have the capacity to make a proper will and 3) even if the will did materialize and had been made in a proper and sound manner then his father never had the right to

dispose of his leasehold and freehold property in the manner in which he did because the way in which his father had inherited the property in the first place was somehow defective. As a result of all these arguments or one or other of them whichever of them holds true then George Pecock claims that his father had no right to limit his income to £60 a year and that all the income derived from his father's leasehold and freehold property should devolve immediately to him, George. This extraordinary argument had no time to be considered as George died soon after making it and even if it had been given the chance of being heard in court it is highly unlikely that George would have got his way. Whatever else, it does cast a light on George's character which may well have fitted Verney's description of 'profligate'.

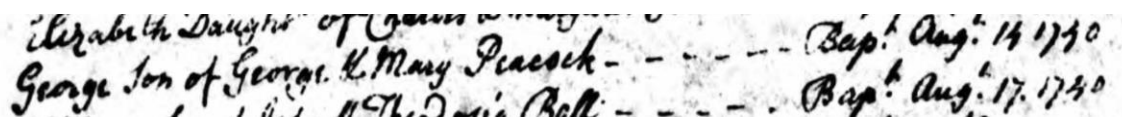
As noted, Richard Peacock structured his will such that his son George would inherit on reaching the age of 25 while daughter Elizabeth would inherit on her reaching the age of twenty one or on marrying whichever came first. Since George was born in 1719 this meant that he would inherit in the year 1744 and Elizabeth in 1743. However George died in 1741 at age 21/22 without having inherited and thus clearing the way for Elizabeth to inherit all of that which would have been his. Thus, by the time she married Ralph Palmer in 1746/47 the 24 year old Elizabeth Peacock was already possessed of a quite substantial estate having come into her own inheritance at age 21. And, a year later she inherited her brother's estate.

In March 1738/39, a daughter Elizabeth was born and baptised on the 20<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. John's Hackney.



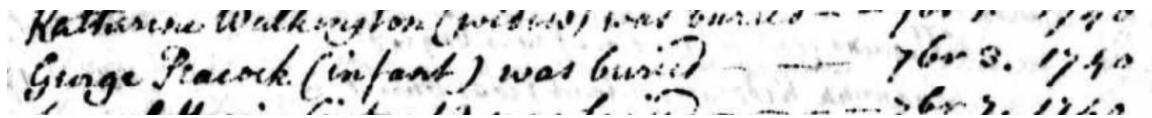
Elizabeth Daught<sup>er</sup> of George & Mary Peacock .... . Bapt: March 20 1738

A son George was born in August 1740 and baptised on the 14<sup>th</sup> of that month, also at St. John's.



George Son of George & Mary Peacock ..... Bapt Aug<sup>t</sup> 14 1740

In less than a month the infant George died on 3<sup>rd</sup> September 1740 and was buried in the same parish as he had been baptised.



George Peacock (infant) was buried ----- Sbr 3. 1740

### The Murder of Ralph Palmer (III)'s brother in law: George Peacock

On the night of 7<sup>th</sup> February 1741/42, Christopher Mason and George Peacock were walking on the King's Highway when three men attacked them: Thomas Robinson, Charles MacCleave, and Andrew Macmanus of St. Leonard Shoreditch. During the assault Macmanus took from Christopher Mason a hat valued at 2 shillings, a peruke (wig) valued at 20 shillings, a Ruler valued at 1 shilling, and a Pair of Compasses valued at 3 shillings; all these being the goods of Christopher Mason. While Mason was being robbed by Macmanus, Thomas Robinson struck George Peacock with a steel object which caused him a mortal wound to his forehead. Neither Robinson nor MacCleave appear to have been apprehended, but Macmanus was.

*The London Evening Post* reported the assault as follows:

Laft Saturday, between Seven and Eight in the Evening, Mr. Peacock, a Gentleman of a good Estate at Hackney, and Mr. Mafon, his Companion, were robb'd on the Causeway near Noman's-Land, in their Return from Newington. They were attack'd by three Men furnifh'd with Fire-Arms and Cutlaffes; Mr. Peacock receiv'd a Wound on his Head, which it is not fuppos'd he can outlive; the other was thrown into a Ditch and feverely beat; both diligently fearch'd and plunder'd, tho' but of a Trifle: Soon after the Robbery was committed pafs'd by two Soldiers, who, rather insulting than compassionating thefe two Gentlemens Distrels, it is to be greatly fufpected were Accomplices, and that the whole Gang was of the Military Sparks. Thus are we heartily loaded to pay Idlenefs, if not Villany; widely different is the Cafe in France, where their Army not only guard their Towns and Cities, but even cleanse and pave them; but this is in a Country of arbitrary Power.

10<sup>th</sup> February 1741

Last Saturday, between Seven and Eight in the Evening, Mr. Peacock, a Gentleman of a good Estate at Hackney, and Mr. Mason, his Companion, were robb'd on the Causeway near Norman's Land, in their Return from Newington. They were attack'd by three Men furnished with Fire-Arms and Cutlasses; Mr. Peacock received a Wound on his Head, which it is not supposed he can outlive; the other was thrown into a Ditch and severely beat; both [were] diligently search'd and plunder'd, tho' but of a Trifle: Soon after the Robbery was committed pass'd by two Soldiers, who, rather insulting than compassionating these two Gentlemen's Distress, it is to be greatly suspected were Accomplices, and that the whole Gang was of the Military Sparks. Thus are we heartily loaded to pay Idleness, if not Villany; widely different is the Case in France, where their Army not only guard their Towns and Cities, but even cleanse and pave them; but this is in a Country of arbitrary Power.

Two days later Peacock was reported to be lying at The White Lion Inn at Hoxton, near the point of death.

Mr. Peacock, who was robb'd and wounded some Nights ago near Hoxton by three Ruffians, lay last Night at the Point of Death, at the White Lyon in the said Town, of the Wounds he receiv'd from those Villains.

The Morning after they committed the said Fact, they robb'd a poor Woman, who makes Tarts, &c. and and sells them to the Families in that Neighbourhood, and us'd her in a very cruel manner.

*London Evening Post, 12<sup>th</sup> February 1741*

Mr Peacock, who was robb'd and wounded some Nights ago near Hoxton by three Ruffians, lay last Night at Point of Death, at the White Lyon in the said Town, of the Wounds he receiv'd from those Villains.

The Morning after they committed the said Fact, they robb'd a poor Woman, who makes Tarts, &c. and sells them to the Families in that Neighborhood, and us'd her in a very cruel manner.

Ten days later George died of his wounds and the newspapers reported it thus:

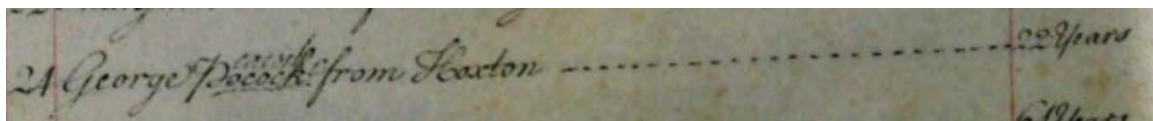
**Blackley in Northamptonshire.**

**On Saturday Morning last died at Hoxton, Mr. George Peacock, of Hackney, of the Wounds he receiv'd that Day Fortnight, when he was attack'd by three Villains, who wounded him in a most desperate Manner. And**

**On Monday the Coroner's Jury sat on the Body, and brought in their Verdict *Wilful Murder* against Persons unknown.**

21<sup>st</sup> February 1741/42

George's murdered body was taken to St. Leonard's in Shoreditch and buried there on 24<sup>th</sup> February. The burial record notes that he was from Hoxton where he had died and that he was 22 years old:



24 George Peacock from Hoxton..... 22 Years

On 4<sup>th</sup> May 1741 at the Old Bailey trial of Andrew Macmanus, Christopher Mason stated that: *On the 7th of February last, about 7 at Night, I was coming with Mr. Peacock from Newington to Shore-ditch, and about 150 Yards on this Side the Watch-house, I met a Person that passed us both. He gave some By-Word and immediately the Prisoner [Macmanus] jumped out of the Ditch, and ran a Pistol against my Face. I had no sooner turned myself about, but he snapped his Pistol twice, and damn'd it because it missed Fire. I desired him not to use me ill, for what I had he was welcome to. He then took from me my Hat and Wig, a Rule, a Pair of Compasses, a Socket, and a Pencil. While he was searching me, the Fellow [Thomas Robinson] that cut Mr. Peacock came up to me, and on my holding up my Cane to*

*defend myself, he cut it almost asunder with the same Instrument with which he wounded Peacock, and I fell into the Ditch.*

Although he was never apprehended and therefore probably managed to get away with Peacock's murder, Thomas Robinson was charged in absentia with the killing of George Peacock and the indictment read:

On the 7th of February, with a certain Hammer made of Iron and Steel, Value 2 s. which he in his right Hand then and there had and held, on the fore Part of the Head of him the said Peacock, feloniously, wilfully, and of his Malice aforethought did strike and cut, giving him, &c. one mortal Wound of the Length of seven Inches and Depth of one Inch, of which from the said 7th of February, to the 21st of the same Month, he the said Peacock languished and languishing lived, and then on the said 21st of February in the Parish of St. Leonard-Shoreditch died; and that Andrew Macmanus and Charles Maccleaver were present, aiding, abetting, comforting and maintaining him the said Robinson, the said Murder to commit and do.

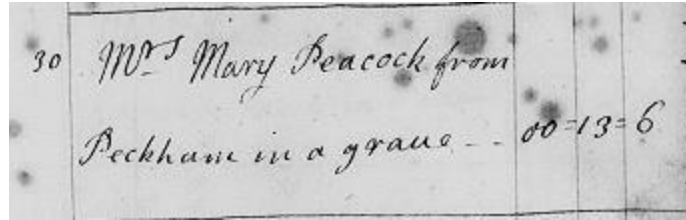
Macmannus was found guilty of robbing Christopher Mason and was hanged at Tyburn.

Was the murdered George Peacock Elizabeth (Peacock) Palmer's brother? At this stage we cannot tell for sure but given the fact that the murder occurred in both the same year and month in which George died and the murdered George was the same age as Elizabeth's brother strongly suggests that he was. Also, the newspaper article refers to George as being 'of Hackney', the same descriptor that is often used for a number of Peacock family members including George and his father Richard.

The sudden death of George Peacock in February 1740/41 at a young age certainly needs to be accounted for and the newspaper stories of the murder along with the burial record would certainly be one way of doing so.

In August 1742 George's widow Mary (Deblois) Peacock died and on the 30<sup>th</sup> of that month was buried at Bun Hill cemetery in north London:





George's mother Elizabeth Peacock writes her will on 11<sup>th</sup> July 1746 widow of Westminster. She gives all that she is possessed of whether it be Money, Stocks, Securities, Goods, Chattels, etc. to her granddaughter Elizabeth Peacock [George's daughter] for her own use and benefit however this bequest is made on the condition that her granddaughter Elizabeth does not make any claims or demands whatsoever on any part of the estate of Richard Peacock, the widow Peacock's late husband. She does this to protect her daughter Elizabeth from any possible claim her granddaughter may make on her grandfather Richard's estate since Elizabeth her daughter was the main beneficiary of that estate after her brother George had died. She appoints her daughter Elizabeth Peacock, Spinster, sole executrix.

On 3<sup>rd</sup> August 1754 Elizabeth added a codicil. She is living on Wigmore Row in the parish of Saint Mary le Bonne. She gives to her daughter Elizabeth Palmer one hundred pounds which she is to expend on her granddaughter Elizabeth Peacock's education. This would suggest that Elizabeth (Peacock) Palmer may have been actively involved in raising her brother's daughter. The will and codicil were probated on 21<sup>st</sup> June 1756. So far no burial record for Elizabeth Peacock has been located.

On 21<sup>st</sup> September 1748, Ralph Palmer (III) writes from Roydon in Essex to his cousin Ralph Verney (II):

*My Lord – I trouble your Lordship with this to enquire after Lady V's health and That of Your Self and Lady Catherine. We have had the misfortune of my Brother [Hamey] being seized with a very bad Fever, which has now Confined him for a week. He has been attended from the beginning by Dr. Hale of Bishop's-Storford, an old Physician of great Repute here, and indeed a very Able One. He has given him the Bark, but hitherto without Success; and yesterday he blistered him. We flatter ourselves however that he is not in danger. This Accident has put a stop to our Enjoyment in the Country. My Wife and Brother join me in Respect and Complements to Your Lordship, Lady Verney and Lady Catherine, and I am, My Lord, Your Lordship's most Obligated and Affectionate, Friend and Servant. Ralph Palmer [VL (2) , pp. 242-243]*

Some of what we know of Ralph (III) also comes from the fact that the composer George Frederick Handel bequeathed £100 to Ralph's widow Elizabeth (Peacock) Palmer<sup>48</sup>.



George Frederick Handel  
© The National Portrait Gallery, London

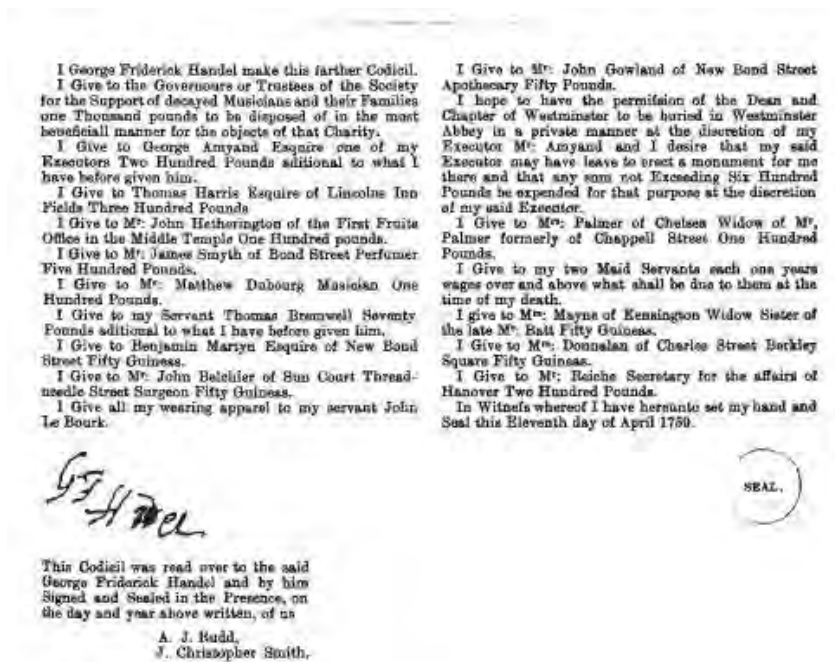
This entry from *The Cambridge Handel Encyclopedia* edited by Annetter Landgraf and David Vickers (2009) refers to Handel's legacy:

Palmer (nee Peacock) Elizabeth b. London 6 Feb 1722 baptised on 6<sup>th</sup> March d. London 1764 married to Ralph Palmer cousin to Ralph 1<sup>st</sup> Earl Lord Verney, in Feb 1747. Little is known. From 1746 the Palmers lived near Handel in a double house on Curzon Street where her husband died in 1755. Mrs Palmer moved briefly to the corner of Parls Street and Alfrod (formerly the 'Chapel Street' mentioned in Handel's will) and thereafter to Chelsea. She sold

the Curzon Street house to Ralph 2<sup>nd</sup> Lord Verney in 1758. Her final account at the Bank of England was closed on 18<sup>th</sup> June 1764. Handel left her a bequest of 100 pounds. [Handel's will was probated on 26<sup>th</sup> April 1759]

---

<sup>48</sup> The references to Handel were first made by me in 2012 however in 2014 Ellen T. Harris published a book on Handel and his social circle which included references to Ralph and Elizabeth (Peacock) Palmer most of which I had already come across. However Harris has more details on the Peacock family which I did not and I have included some of these here.



The documents below can be found with Ralph III's parents' marriage settlement at the East Sussex Records Office.

- Deed to declare the uses of a fine by Ralph Palmer of Curzon Street, St George's, Hanover Square, Middlesex, esq and Elizabeth his wife to Hugh Marriott of the Inner Temple, London, esq [FRE/8356] 3 Jul 1747 Final concord between Hugh Marriott, esq, plaintiff v Ralph Palmer and Elizabeth his wife, defendants [FRE/8357] [n.d.] Deed to raise a tenant to the praecipe (lease and release) between Ralph Palmer of Curzon Street, St George Hanover Square, Middlesex, esq, Hugh Marriott of the Inner Temple, London, esq and Fontaine Cook of Clements Inn, Middlesex, gent [FRE/8358-8359] 22 & 23 Jun 1748.
- Exemplification of a common recovery between Hugh Marriott, demandant, Fontaine Cooke, tenant and Ralph Palmer, vouchee [FRE/8360] 29 Jun 1748 Conveyance (lease and release) for £3000 by Ralph Palmer of Curzon Street, St George Hanover Square, Middlesex, esq to William Scott of Market Overton, Rutland, esq [FRE/8361-8362] 29 & 30 Sep 1748.
- Bargain and sale enrolled between Ralph Palmer of Curzon Street, St George Hanover Square, Middlesex, esq and William Scott of Market Overton, Rutland, esq [FRE/8363] 30 Sep 1748 Covenant to produce deeds by Ralph Palmer with William Scott to produce his deeds of the marriage Settlement [FRE/8354-8355] and have them enrolled in one of His Majesty's Courts of Record at Westminster [FRE/8364] 30 Sep 1748.

Ralph Palmer (III) died of an 'apoplectick' at Roydon in Essex on 23<sup>rd</sup> January 1755, aged 43 and was buried there at St. Peter's. His passing was noted in *The Gentleman's Magazine* below:

92      *Deaths, Preferments, B*  
          *A List of Deaths for the Year 1755.*  
*Jan. 23. R*alph Palmer, Esq; at Roydon  
          Lee in Essex, of an apoplectick.  
          at Han. Wm Hawley Esq. Gent. Usher

Jan. 23. Ralph Palmer, Esq; at Roydon Lee in Essex, of an apoplectick.

Ralph wrote his will on 26<sup>th</sup> August 1750; almost five years before he died. He calls himself Raphe and states that he lives at Curzon Street in the parish of Saint George, Hanover Square. His first wish is to be buried near his mother and father at Roydon. His will is structured quite simply. Nearly all items are left to Elizabeth his wife for her use and enjoyment during her lifetime after which the items then pass to Ralph's brother Hamey and his heirs. For instance land that Ralph owns at Roydon goes to Elizabeth and then Hamey. The house they live in on Curzon Street can either be kept or sold by Elizabeth and if sold she can enjoy the proceeds for the term of her natural life after which Hamey can inherit whatever is left over. Likewise all his stocks, bonds and securitites are for Elizabeth's benefit after which Hamey inherits. If Elizabeth keeps the house on Curzon street then it will pass to Hamey. As for all his pictures, statues, busts, books, etc. they all go to Elizabeth to dispose of in a manner she thinks fit.

Elizabeth was appointed sole executor and the will was proved on 13<sup>th</sup> February 1755.

We learn from the following notice that appeared in a London newspaper in March 1755 of an auction of Ralph's property including paintings by Raphael, Titian, Corregio, Carravaggio, Rubens, Vandyke, Rembrandt, among others. Thus, Elizabeth would appear to have disposed of the entire

contents of the Curzon street house, which she also then sold to Ralph Verney (III).

**To be SOLD by AUCTION,**  
By **Mr. PRESTAGE,**  
At his Great Room the End of Savile-Row, next Conduit-Street, Hanover-square, Thursday and Friday the 10th and 11th of April,  
**THE** genuine and entire Collection of fine  
Italian and other Pictures of **RALPH PALMER, Esq;** deceased, late of Curzon-street, May-Fair; among the Pictures are the following capital Masters, viz.

Raphael,	Caravaggio,	Salvator Rosa,	Vandyke,
Titian,	Guido,	Luca Jordano,	Rembrandt,
Correggio,	Paulo Veronese,	Nich. Poussin,	C. Lorraine,
Ann. Carracci,	Tintoret,	Rubens,	&c.

The said Collection to be view'd on Tuesday the 8th of April, and to the Hour of Sale, which will begin each Day exactly at Twelve.  
Catalogues will be given gratis at Mr. Prestage's aforesaid.

---

**To be Sold by AUCTION,**  
By **Mr. PRESTAGE,**  
At his Great Room the End of Savile-Row next Conduit-Street, Hanover-square, on Tuesday April 22,  
**PART** of the rich Household Furniture of  
**RALPH PALMER, Esq;** deceased,  
Late of Curzon-street, May fair.  
Consisting of nine fine Mahogany Bookcases, a Library Table, Chairs of exquisite Workmanship, carved and neatly ornamented, Sconces, Marble Tables, and several other Pieces of good Furniture.  
The same may be viewed on Saturday the 19th to the Time of Sale (Sunday excepted) which will begin at Twelve o'Clock.  
Catalogues will be given gratis on Friday the 18th, at Mr. Prestage's the End of Savile-Row.

Among the objects put up for auction was Rembrandt's *A Turkish Bashaw [Pasha]* for £28. 17s, which was bought by Sir Paul Methuen. Since then the painting has become known as *Man in Oriental Costume* and it now hangs in the Metropolitan Museum of Art in New York City.





Rembrandt's *Man in Oriental Costume* that was once owned by Ralph Palmer (III) © Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York



*St. Andrew on the Cross* by Caravaggio © Cleveland Museum, Ohio another of Ralph's painting disposed at auction by Elizabeth

Another painting from Palmer's collection is Poussin's *Destruction and Sack of the Temple* which today is to be found at the Israel Museum. Caravaggio's *St Andrew on the Cross* ended up in the Cleveland Museum. Where else Palmer's collection found its way to we do not know.



Poussin's *The Destruction and Sack of the Temple*  
© The Israel Museum

We have yet to find a record of Elizabeth's death and burial. She did not make a will probably because of the way her husband's had been structured so all that she died possessed of went to Hamey Palmer.

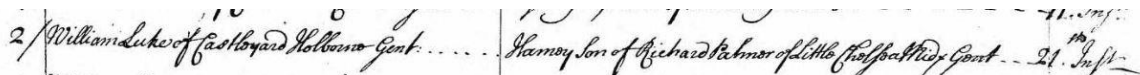
### Hamey Palmer (1716 – 1771)

We know even less about Hamey Palmer than we do his brother Ralph (III). On the occasion of his son Hamey's baptism Ralph Palmer (II) sent John Verney the following note dated 29<sup>th</sup> August 1716:

*This day we christened our little son Hamey, in memory of my good Uncle. I thank God both he and his Mother and your Godson [Ralph III] are well. Mr. [Ralph] Verney [II] and Sir Thomas Cave are so kind as to be Godfathers.* [VL (1), p. 298]

According to her will Betty Verney was also Hamey's godmother.

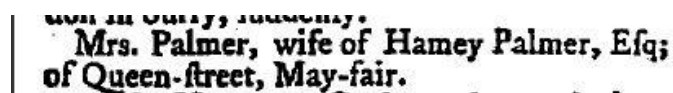
When a young man, Hamey was indentured on 21<sup>st</sup> July 1733 as an apprentice to a Mr. William Luke of Castleyard, Holborn. However, the record (below) mis-transcribed his father's name as 'Richard' and not Ralph Palmer of Little Chelsea. We also do not know the occupation to which Hamey was apprenticed:



2/William Luke of Castleyard Holborn Gent. .... Hamey Son of Richard Palmer of Little Chelsea Gent. 21 July 1733

We do not know yet whom Hamey married although her first name was Mary with whom he had two children: Charles Hamey and Julia Marie.

Hamey Palmer's wife died at the end of March 1764 and her death was announced on 2<sup>nd</sup> April 1764:



**Mrs. Palmer, wife of Hamey Palmer, Esq;  
of Queen-street, May-fair.**

There is a passing reference to Hamey in *The Verney Letters* by Ralph Verney (III) to Ralph Verney (II) on 29<sup>th</sup> June 1746 although the various events he refers to are obscure. However we hazard a guess that the letter was prompted by

the Verneys' purchase of the Palmer's home in Little Chelsea, after which the Palmers moved to Mayfair:

*I give you joy of your new purchase. I think I heard Hamey Palmer say sometime ago, Cards could have sold their house but could not make a title. Perhaps when this affair has taken place, it will be more convenient for you to be at Claydon, as you may like to be there when the Palmers quit.* [VL (II), p. 216]

In the British Museum there is a print once owned by Hamey Palmer (image right) and described as a:

... male nude stepping forward onto the right foot, drawing back with a stick in his right hand, punching upwards and forwards with the left, after a statue in the Villa Borghese, 1746. Lettered below the image with the title, is a dedication from Dalton to Hamey Palmer and R Dalton del / B. Baron sculp. / Published according to Act of Parliament 20 March 1746.



©The Trustees of the British Museum

Hamey was a member of the court of King George III, being appointed on 12<sup>th</sup> December 1760 as a Gentleman Usher of the Privy Chamber.

***Gentlemen Ushers of the Privy  
Chamber, 200l each  
Joseph Hudson, Esq;  
Richard Bagshaw, Esq;  
Hamey Palmer, Esq;***

A reference to Hamey Palmer can be found among notes on the life of doctor Sydenham that appeared in *The Works of Thomas Sydenham, M.D.*; an edited version of which appears below:

*My uncle Samuel Merriman, M. D., lived in Queen street, Berkeley square, opposite to the house in which Mr. Hamey Palmer resided and he was in the habit of attending that family professionally, and where he had seen and read many Latin letters. It was the custom among Physicians, at the beginning of the seventeenth century, to correspond with each other in Latin. The late Hamey Palmer, Esq., of Queen street,*

*Berkeley square, was possessed of a large collection of Latin Letters, addressed to his maternal grandfather [great uncle] Dr. [Baldwin] Hamey, by the most eminent physicians his cotemporaries. (It is to be feared that these Letters are irrecoverably lost). What a prize they would prove to a modern collector! Among these were several, in very elegant Latinity, by the celebrated Sydenham, — an irrefragable proof of his competency to write in that language, which some writers have much questioned. When the [Palmer] family left town the house was left in the care of some attendant, and Dr. M. was asked to occasionally see that proper care was taken of it. On several of these occasions his attention was given to a large cask, full of letters, many of which were notes between Dr. Hamey and other physicians of that period, among which were several, written, as Dr. M. said, in very elegant Latin by Sydenham, whose critical knowledge of that language has been questioned. My uncle told me that he had often thought of asking Mr. Palmer for these medical notes and letters, but his natural diffidence prevented it. S. M., Dec. 16, 1827. My uncle died in August 1818, in the 87th year of his age. I remain, dear Sir, yours faithfully, "SAMUEL MERRIMAN."*

SYDENHAM SOCIETY

INSTITUTED

MDCCCXLIII



It may well be that this collection of letters was not 'irrecoverably lost' but rather comprises those that were donated to the Royal College of Physicians by Hamey's son in law Nathaniel Gundry and others over the years.

Below the Queen Street land tax entries for Ralph Palmer (III) and his brother Hamey.

Turner	5	17-9
Hamey Palmer Esqr	10	18-2
Edward Samson	6	11
Do	6	11
Ralph Palmer Esqr	70	6-6-0
J <sup>r</sup> Walter Blackett	70	6-6-6

Below is the land tax paid by Hamey Palmer in 1754 for a house on Queen Street in Mayfair.



M <sup>rs</sup> Weather	22	3-19-
Lord Penwiscourt	26	4-14-6
John Joliff Tuffnell Esq.	26	4-14-6
Eliz: Hault	26	4-14-6
Lord Poutney	26	4-14-6
Hamey Palmer Esq.	26	4-14-6
Colt. West	24	4-7-
M <sup>rs</sup> Granville	24	4-7-
M <sup>rs</sup> Pollard	24	4-7-

Hamey died toward the end of July 1771 at Dean Street, London, and his death was announced on 3<sup>rd</sup> August. A burial record for Hamey has so far not been located.

**possessed of an estate of 4000l. a year. Thursday, in Dean-street, Hamey Palmer, Esq. Friday**

Given the fact that Hamey had inherited what was left of his brother's estate after Elizabeth (Peacock) Palmer had disposed of the contents of the house on Curozn Street as well as the house itself; we assume that Hamey had a fairly substantial estate to dispose of himself. Including what he had inherited from his godmother Betty Verney, his aunt Alice Palmer, and others.

Below Hamey's will:



only to administer

Hamey Palmer of little Dean Street in the Parish of St George's Hanover Square do make this my Last Will and Testament in manner and form following I give unto my son Charles Palmer all the Money I have lent him and borrowed of the legacy left him by Mrs Verney that is to say the five hundred pounds I sent with him to India and the Money it Cost me in fitting him out likewise my Gold watch Chain and seals

and all my pictures all the rest and residue of my fortune I give to my daughter Julia Maria Palmer and do hereby declare and appoint Richard Heron Esquire and Mrs Heron of Great Russell Street Bloomsbury Executors of this my last will and Testament and Guardians to my said children In witness whereof I have here unto set my hand and seal (the erasure being first made by me) this twenty second day of December in the year of our lord one Thousand Seven Hundred and seventy

Hamey Palmer

5<sup>th</sup> August 1771.

I Hamey Palmer of little Dean Street in the Parish of St George's Hanover Square do make this my Last Will and Testament in manner and form following I give unto my son Hamey Charles Palmer all the Money I have lent him and borrowed of the legacy left him by Mrs [Betty] Verney [his god mother] that is to say five hundred pounds I sent with him to India and the Money it Cost me in fitting him out likewise my gold watch chain and seals and all my pictures all the rest and residue of my fortune I give to my daughter Julia Maria Palmer and do hereby declare and appoint Richard Heron Esquire and Mrs Heron of Great Russell Street Bloomsbury Executors of this my last will and testament and Guardians to my said children In witness whereof I have here unto set my hand and seal (the erasure being first made by me) this twenty second day of December in the year of our lord one Thousand Seven Hundred and seventy [1770] Hamey Palmer 5<sup>th</sup> August 1771

Margaret (Verney) Cave bequeaths in her will to her eldest son Thomas and his eldest son Thomas certain lands, messuages, and tenements that make up the bulk of her landed estate but should her son Thomas or his son Thomas

both predecease her then that estate would have passed in equal share to Ralph Verney (III) and Hamey Palmer.

**Hamey Charles Palmer (175? – 1811)**

Hamey Charles Palmer was the only son of Hamey Palmer and his as yet unidentified wife and as such was the last male descendant of Mathew Palmer and Ann Raven of Cripplegate. A baptismal record for Hamey Charles has so far not been recovered. We know very little about Hamey. His godmother was Betty Verney. We gather from 1420-1799 *Lincoln's Inn* by William Paley Baildon that he entered Lincoln's Inn on 31<sup>st</sup> October 1772.

---

472      **Lincoln's Inn Admission Register: 1420-1893.**

---

folio 192.

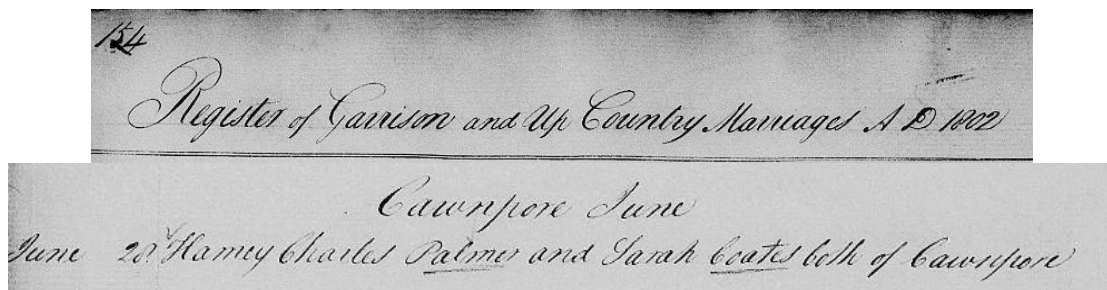
1772	July	25	THOMAS PECHELL, Esq., eldest son of Col. Paul P., of Berkhamstead, Herts, Esq. [Soho, Esq.]
	"	31	GEORGE PRICE SPILLER, Esq., son of Berry S., of Wardour St.,
	Oct.	13	WILLIAM ELLIS, Esq., 2nd son of Richard E., of co. Cavan, Esq.

folio 193.

	"	23	WILLIAM THOMAS MONSELL, Esq., only son of Wm. M., of Tervoe, co. Limerick, Esq.
	"	31	HAMEY CHARLES PALMER, only son of Hamey P., late of Little Dean St., London, Esq., decd. [Gledhow, Leeds, Esq.]
	Nov.	5	JOHN DIXON, gen., eldest son of Jeremiah D., of Allerton

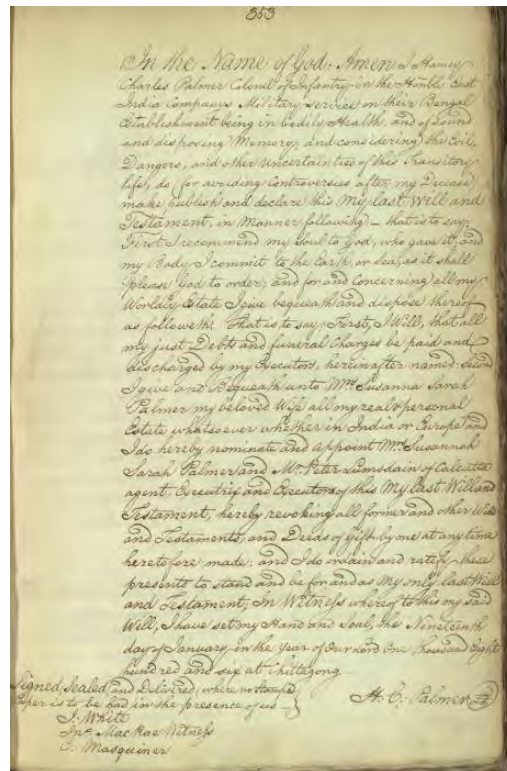
His father's will mentions Hamey being kitted out for India as early as 1770 although from the above it would appear that Hamey Charles was headed for a legal career in 1772. However. By 1798 his name occurs as a Major in the service of the [East India Company](#) (EIC).

A marriage record showing that Hamey Charles Palmer married Sarah Coates on 28<sup>th</sup> June 1802 at Cawnpore, Bengal, India has been located online at the India Office, London.



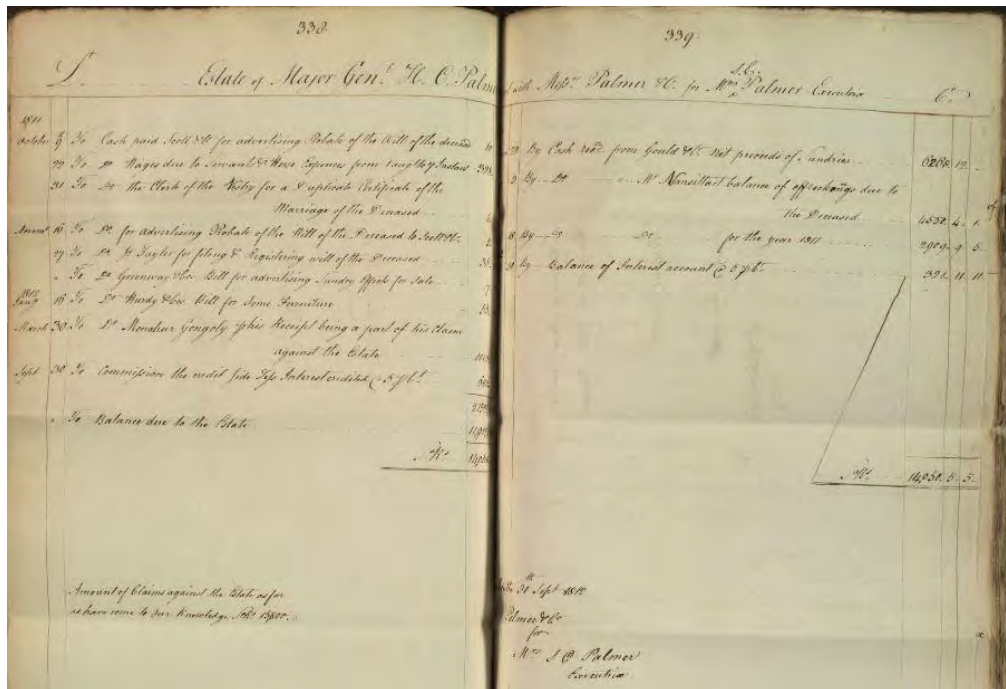
He benefited from the will of his godmother Betty Verney to the tune of five hundred pounds, as likewise did his sister Julia. Under the will of Elizabeth Lovett the daughter of John and Mary (Verney) Lovett, Hamey and his sister Julia also recieved five hundred pounds apiece. From Elizabeth's brother Verney Lovett's will Hamey and his sister received five guineas each. From Margaret (Verney) Cave Hamey and his sister recieved five guineas a piece for mourning.

Colonel Hamey Charles Palmer wrote a will on 19<sup>th</sup> January 1806 at Chittagong and probate was granted in 1811 by which time he was a Major General. The will (shown below) is straightforward in which Hamey leaves his entire estate to his wife.



Hamey Palmer's will

His estate was calculated to have a net value of £11,917.00.



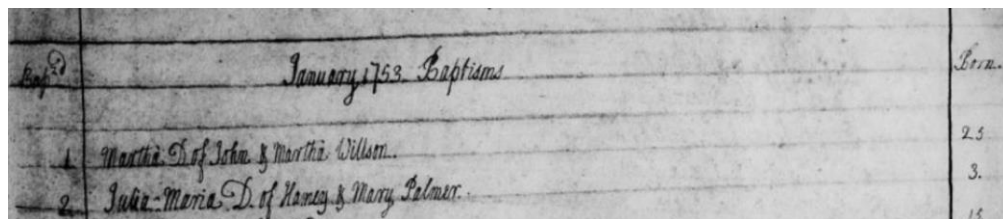
Given the medical expenses on his probate record, Hamey was probably being treated for some illness that may have been the cause of his death.

At the India Office (1814-1821) is this:

Copy minutes recommending pension increases for Mrs S. S. Palmer, widow of Maj-Gen Hamey Charles Palmer, Bengal Army.

#### Julia-Maria Palmer (1753 - 1791)

Julia-Maria was the only daughter of Hamey and Mary (Unknown) Palmer. Julia was born on 3<sup>rd</sup> January 1753 and baptised the next day at St. George's, Hanover Square.



4 Julia-Maria D. of Hamey & Mary Palmer

3

Julia married Nathaniel Gundry at St. George's, Hanover Square on 23<sup>rd</sup> May 1775.



		ST. GEORGE, HANOVER SQUARE.	253
1775			
May 23	Lewis Wagniere & Elizabeth Watts		
May 23	Nathaniel Gundry, of Uddens, co. Dorset, Esq., & Julia Maria Palmer,		
	of this parish. Licence		

[\*The Town and Country Magazine\*](#) ..., Volume 7, noted the marriage:

None,	25. [May] Nathaniel Gundry, Esq; of Dorsetshire, to Miss Palmer, a relation of the Duke of Northumberland.
25. Nathaniel Gundry, Esq; of Dorsetshire, to Miss Palmer, a relation of the Duke of Northumberland.	

The 'relation' to the Duke of Northumberland is a stretch and may have arisen because of the marriage of the Duke's daughter Elizabeth Percy to the 6<sup>th</sup> Duke of Somerset whose mother Elizabeth (Alington) (Seymour) Ernle was Julia Palmer's great grandmother (See Ernle Family).

There is among *The Verney Letters* one from Sir Richard Heron written in August 1790 to Ralph Verney (III) but lack of context makes it obscure:

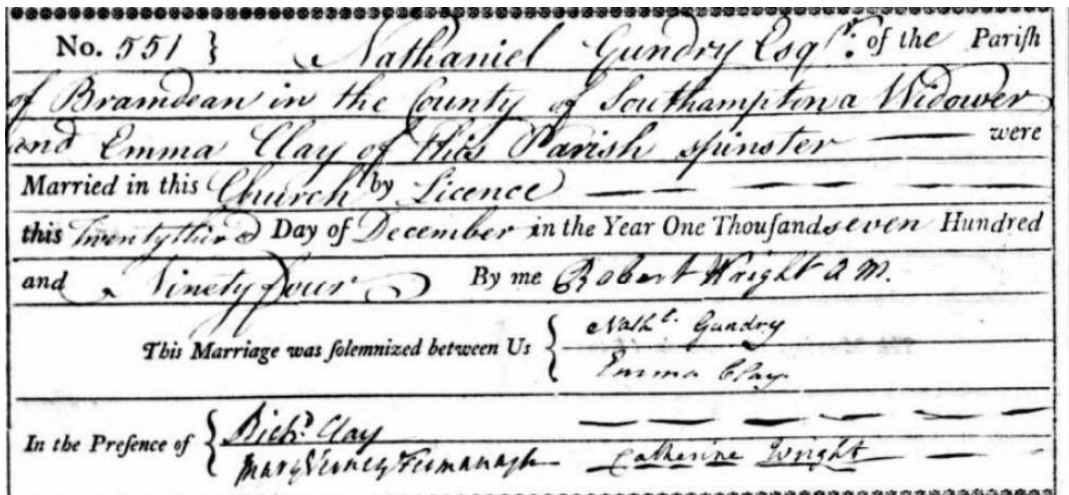
*Dear Sir I am faced with your Letter of the 18<sup>th</sup> inst. Respecting Mr. and Mrs Gundry: but I should first be glad to see the Draft of the Deed I am required to execute, as settled by Counsel. Whatsoever is judged proper for me to do I shall be happy to concur in, as I am not present sufficiently master of the Business to give a definitive answer.*  
[VL (2), p. 300]

Below, the death announcement of Julia Maria (Palmer) Gundry on 3<sup>rd</sup> March 1791, aged thirty-eight.

**Ongar in Essex.—Wednesday, after a short illness, Mrs. Gundry, wife of Nathaniel Gundry, Esq. of Bramdean in Hampshire, and daughter of the late Hamey Palmer, Esq.—**

After his wife's death Nathaniel married Emma Clay on 23<sup>rd</sup> December 1794 at St. Mary le Bone.





Note that the witnesses are Emma's father Richard Clay and Mary Verney, the daughter of John Verney (II), and also the last of the Verneys.

In a footnote (27) from *The Letters of Sarah Harriet Burney*, it states that Emma Clay (c 1767 - 1824) was a daughter of a director of the Bank of England, Richard Clay, and that after her husband, Nathaniel Gundry, had sold the lease of his paternal estate at Uddens in Dorsetshire, the couple resided at Richmond in Surrey. More precisely they lived at South Lodge in Enfield Chase which is noted in *The Beauties of England and Wales...* Volume 14, Part 4, p. 733 as follows:

**The South Lodge** afforded an occasional retirement for several years to the Right Hon. William Pitt, afterwards Earl of Chatham. That eminent statesman expended a considerable sum in laying out the grounds, and in improving the whole of the premises. The mansion, after an intermediate tenancy, was occupied by the late Thomas Skinner, Esq. an alderman of London, who served the office of Lord Mayor in 1794. It was lately in the occupation of Nathaniel Gundry, Esq. but at present appears to be sinking through neglect into dilapidation.

Below South Lodge the home of Nathaniel Gundry.



South Lodge at Enfield Chase

Nathaniel Gundry died on 30<sup>th</sup> June 1830 at Bath. His father, Sir Nathaniel Gundry (1701?-1754) was a lawyer and politician (see note below).

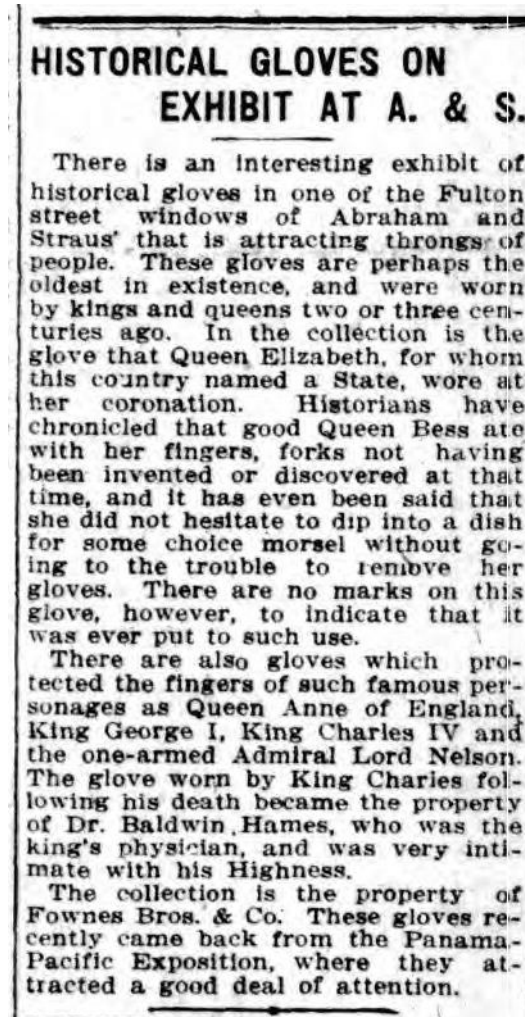
Various items relating to the life of Julia Maria's great X 3 uncle Baldwin Hamey were presented to the Royal College of Physicians on 22<sup>nd</sup> December 1824 by Nathaniel Gundry (see Keevil *The Stranger's Son*, p. 197). These items included Ralph Palmer (II)'s tediously laudatory biography of his great uncle as well as Hamey's antimonial cup. For details on the cup and the biography see Baldwin Hamey's section below.

Baldwin Hamey also had a large collection of Stuart family memorabilia which found their way to the Gundry family via Julia's marriage to Nathaniel, and from that family by marriage to Ridout Bingham (father of Wellington's general Sir George Ridout Bingham.) Some of Hamey's relics even went back to the Royal family such as this miniature of Henrietta Maria:



Henrietta Maria miniature; once owned by Baldwin Hamey, Jnr. © The Royal Collection Trust.

Right: An article from the *Brooklyn New York Standard* for 9<sup>th</sup> November 1915 with a reference to a glove belonging to King Charles I and once owned by Baldwin Hamey, Jnr.



Note on Nathaniel Gundry, Snr.

Nathaniel Gundry was born at Lyme Regis, and entered as a member of the Middle Temple in 1720. In 1725 he was called to the bar, when he migrated to Lincoln's Inn. In 1741 he was returned to parliament for the borough of Dorchester, and was re-elected in 1747. He took his place among the opponents of Sir Robert Walpole, and on their triumph he was made a king's counsel.

He was considered a possible candidate for Solicitor-General, but he was passed by, possibly because his manners were stiff and pretentious. On the death of Sir Thomas Abney in 1750 Gundry was appointed a judge of the common pleas. After he had been on the bench four years he, like Abney, was carried off by gaol fever, while on circuit at Launceston, Cornwall, on 23 March 1754, aged 53. He was buried at Musbury, near Axminster, and a tablet to his memory was placed against the western side of the south aisle of the parish church. (More details on [Wikipedia here](#))



### Conclusion

On the death of Charles Hamey Palmer the male line of Palmer as descended from Andrew and Elizabeth (Hamey) Palmer ceases. Descendants along the female line, i.e. those of Andrew and Elizabeth's eldest daughter Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney and their youngest daughter Hester (Palmer) Cradock continued, and there are living descendants of each of these daughters in the form of such families as the Duke of Suffolk, Earl of Jersey, Earl of Westmorland, Earl of Bessborough, etc. We turn now to Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's children.

### Ralph Palmer (I)'s Verney grandchildren.

Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer had six surviving grandchildren. Two of these were the sons of Ralph and Katherine (Ernle) Palmer: Ralph and Hamey. The latter two we have already discussed, here we turn to the four children of John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney: Elizabeth (Betty) born in 1681; Ralph baptized on 18th March 1682/83; Mary born in 1682, and Margaret born in 1685.

### Elizabeth (Betty) Verney (1681 - 1767)

Elizabeth was the eldest daughter of John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney. She was born in 1681. She never married and from her letters she comes across as independent,



Elizabeth (Betty) Verney.  
© Claydon House Trust

forthright, and somewhat acerbic. She seems not to have accepted her two step mothers Mary Lawley and Elizabeth Baker, especially the latter towards whom she was quite antagonistic. The editor of *The Verney Letters* gives a possible explanation for this:

Unlike her sisters, who were as much devoted to Elizabeth (Baker) Verney as if she had been their own mother, Betty had always taken up an attitude of opposition. Possibly as the eldest daughter, she felt that but for her step mother's presence she would have been mistress in her father's

house. [VL (I), p. 395].

And, as an example of how Betty felt toward her step-mother, the editor chooses the following letter written by Betty to her brother Ralph (II) on 26<sup>th</sup> March 1717, a few months before their father's death.

*Dear Brother, Since you had the account of my father's indisposition he is much amended, but he has not quite finished Doctor Tramplon's prescriptions, which have been very successful in removing the pain in his side, but his cough and spitting is the same as when you saw him, and I believe must continue until the humour turns another way, her ladyship [Elizabeth (Baker) Verney] has consulted with the physicians being bloodied, blistered, vomited, and purged, and as yet is out of order and complaining. I'm apt to think they don't fit her distemper, but make the old proverb good. Her two nieces are still here, to his Honour's great dissatisfaction, which he has discovered in their hearing, but she says they shall go never the sooner for his being rude to them, she'll keep them for her own pleasure, so he makes himself their scorn to no purpose, which I cannot but be very sorry for; he's so led away by her, that nobody else dares tell him anything to his own advantage ....*

Mrs. Jordan [Christian Chaloner] *is gone to her new habitation and is very much missed here, I am sure by me, who am obliged to attend in her room [in place of her]; his Honour don't like the new one nor did I ever think he would. I am summoned to write a letter for him, if it's to you I'll enclose this in it, with respectful salutes, from dear brother, yours, and my Sister's, affectionately and sincerely, EV* [VL (I), p. 396].

Betty spent much of her time at Bath and when she did come to the Verney home at Middle Claydon she tended to stay with her cousin Helen (White) Starkey. Elizabeth died on 5<sup>th</sup> June 1767 aged 86 and was probably buried with the rest of the Verneys at Middle Claydon.

**WITH A FORTUNE OF 20,000.  
On Friday died at her house at Chelsea, the  
Hon. Mrs. Elizabeth Verney, a near relation  
of Lord Verney.**

The Will of Elizabeth (Betty) Verney

Because she wrote her will more than twenty years before her death, Betty added a series of codicils to keep up with the changes that took place over those intervening years.



Will of Elizabeth Verney of Middle Claydon Bucks To her niece and goddaughter Catherine Verney [Kitty] three hundred pounds to her nephew and godson Sir Thomas Cave three hundred pounds to nephew and godson John Lovett same to her brother the Earl Verney fifty pounds for mourning to her nephew Ralph the Viscount Fermanagh and his lady fifty pounds for mourning to her niece Lady Elizabeth Verney twenty pounds for mourning to her niece the Lady Catheirine Verney (already mentioned) ten pounds for mourning to her nephew Sir Thomas Cave and his Lady forty pounds for mourning, to her nephew Verney Lovett One Hundred Pounds and ten pounds for mourning to her niece Elizabeth Lovett One Hundred Pounds and Ten pounds for mourning to her nephew John Lovett ten pounds for mourning to her uncle [Ralph] Palmer his sister Alice Palmer and her two cousins Ralph and Hamey Palmer ten pounds each for mourning. She gives to Sarah Chaloner daughter of Henry Chaloner<sup>49</sup> one hundred pounds and five pounds for mourning to her goddaughter Elizabeth Webb fifty pounds to her goddaughter Elizabeth Jordan [daughter of Christian (Chaloner) Jordan] five pounds per annum during her life. She appoints her two sisters Margaret Cave and Mary Lovett to be Executors who are also her residuary legatees. Signed 31<sup>st</sup> August 1744 Witness by Richard Williams, Thomas Stone etc.

She adds a series of codicils which detail further distributions of her estate. The first codicil discusses various charities, especially money for the putting into trade boys and girls from among the various local villages as well as to be distributed among the poorest widows and families of those villages, etc. (Added 6<sup>th</sup> March 1750) She appends a third codicil whereby she distributes among family members listed above such items as her gold watch chain and seal, and large Bible which go to her niece Elizabeth Lovett, her silver tea kettle and lamp and stand to her nephew Verney Lovett, to cousin Hamey Palmer a striking watch with two cases one studded and one silver that were his grandfather Palmer's as well as a silver tankard, to Master Thomas Cave three pairs of window curtains wrought with yellow silk and seven chairs with

---

<sup>49</sup> See Chaloner family below.

seats of the same which she hopes will be used up at Stanford. To Elizabeth Webb her goddaughter her silver cup with two handles to Mrs Farkson [?] a large Bible with silver clasps that her aunt Ruth (Verney) Lloyd left her [Betty Verney]. Her old servant Sarah Steven's sister Eleanor Stevens at Wirkham or her heirs a Ring of White enamel with her hair and her name on it. Anything not distributed so far to be divided between Sir Thomas Cave's daughters and younger son.

She then adds another codicil on 5<sup>th</sup> June 1759 in which she names eleven people, viz: Miss Verney; Mrs Calvert; Mrs Thomson; Miss Thomson; Mrs Palmer widow [wife of Ralph Palmer (III)]; Mr Hamey Palmer and Mrs Palmer his wife; Mrs Farkson; Mr Jonathan Lovett; Mrs Green; Mrs Rine (?). To those she names, she bequeaths twenty pounds each for mourning and to Mrs Gibon the sister of Mrs Green Ten pounds to be given to the person with whom she is lodging at the time of her decease and a few more charitable donations.

She then adds a fourth codicil in which she bequeaths to Ralph Earl Verney ten East India bonds worth one hundred pounds each to be disposed by him in the following manner: to her cousin and godson Hamey Charles Palmer seven of the above mentioned bonds to be delivered to him when he reaches the age of 21 or a part of them sooner if her trustee thinks it proper and she wills that the interest of the said seven hundred pounds shall be made use of in fitting her said godson for any way of life he is designed for or shall be inclined to when her said trustee shall judge him capable of choosing for himself and if Hamey Charles Palmer should happen to die or shall marry before he attains the age of 21 without his father's and her said trustee's consent then the said seven hundred East India bonds shall be equally divided between her brother and her sisters. And she gives to her cousin Julia Palmer sister of her said Palmer Godson the three remaining East India Bonds when she attains the age of twenty five or on her marriage with her father's consent but if she marries without such consent then the bonds are to be divided equally among her

(Julia's) surviving brothers and sisters. Betty's will was probated a month after her death on 10<sup>th</sup> July 1767.

### Ralph Verney (II) (1682/83 - 1752)

Ralph Verney was the only son and heir of John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney. He was born at the Palmer's home at Chelsea in March 1682/83 and was baptized on 18<sup>th</sup> March 1682/83 at St. Mary Abbott's, Kensington. Because there were three Ralph Verneys in as many generations we continue to use numerals to distinguish among them and so this Ralph is (II).

Below the portraits of Ralph Verney (II) and his wife Catherine (Paschall) Verney with their eldest son John. When Ralph was born not even his father was expected to inherit the lands and title that he eventually did.



Ralph Verney (II) © Claydon House Trust



Catherine (Paschall) Verney with her eldest son John Verney (II) © Claydon House Trust

In *The Verney Letters* it states that: We have no details of Ralph's early education. As an only son he was infinitely precious and much welcome everywhere, but not over indulged. His mother's family the Palmers, took a great interest in him [as they did all Elizabeth's children]; his grandmother [Alice (White) Palmer] had a special tenderness for him – he was a Sunday's child born, at her house in Little Chelsea, 18<sup>th</sup> March 1683, and christened on the Tuesday following by Mr. Seward at St. Mary Abbott's, Kensington, as is shown in the Parish Register of

that church: Gossips [godparents], his two Grandfathers, Sir Ralph Verney and Ralph Palmer, and Lady Elizabeth Wiseman, daughter to Lord North, since Countess of Yarmouth [See Wiseman Connection (below)] . He lost his mother Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney when he was just three years old . [VL (1), p. 91] .



St. Mary Abbott's, Kensington, where Ralph was baptised © The Trustees of the British Museum

Many of the details of Ralph Verney's early life come from his father's letters and those written to him by his uncle Ralph Palmer (II) which in the latter's case amounted to some one hundred and seventy three [Whyman, p. 134] .

Although only sixteen years separated nephew from uncle, the latter adopted a caring concern for the former throughout his life.

Ralph Palmer (II) to Ralph Verney (II) on 27<sup>th</sup> January 1695.

*Dear Nephew You give your friends such extraordinary hopes of your making a fine Gentleman, as well by your early inclination to goodness, as your industrious progress in Learning (for both have an equal share in the Consitution), that you deserve the greatest encouragement. The Books I here send you I desire you to accept as a pledge of my affections, they are the Works of the Author of the Whole Duty of Man. I need not desire you to read them, because I know you will make the best Use of them, and when I see you next I will furnish your closet with some books of another kind that may be serviceable to your Selfe and country; which are the hearty wishes of your most affectionate uncle, R. Palmer* [VL (1), p. 92]

The subject of these hopes was in his thirteenth year and is attending a school run by a Mrs. Moreland where he

remained until the age of 16, after which he entered Merton College, Oxford.



Richard Allstree's 'Whole Duty' series

Mrs. Alice (White) Palmer on 5<sup>th</sup> July 1699 writes to her grandson Ralph Verney (II) at Mrs. Moreland's School in Hackney:

*Dear Child I begin now to think the time long since I heard how you do; this hot weather and fruit being now in season, without prudent care, makes many people sick, but I hope the same overseeing eye of Providence will preserve you as he has hitherto, and hope for some great good end ... I would gladly have you here Bartholomewtide, but I am satisfied you are to be where you fare better, and my prayers attend you everywhere ... I charge to let me hear how you do sometimes; it will be a pleasure as much as a comfort to Your ever loving and indulgent Grandmother. [VL (1), p 92]*





Mrs Moreland's School © The Trustees of the British Museum

Ralph Palmer (I) writes from Little Chelsea to his son in law John Verney on 2<sup>nd</sup> August 1699.

*We lately heard from Master [Ralph Verney], by a letter from him, who is well and is mightily improved in writing; we thought to have had him at Bartholomewtide, but he says he is for Claydon, which contents us.* [VL (1), pp. 92-93]

Ralph Palmer (II) writes to his nephew on 29<sup>th</sup> October 1700 who by now has progressed to Merton College, Oxford, and is in his first term:

*I am extremely pleased to hear under your own hand that you like the University and your College so well, as you express you do, and though you are debarred the advantage of a Common Room (which really was very great), yet there is choice of Worthy Men, I doubt not, for your Conversation, and I question not in the least your Judgement and Information to single such out for that purpose, tho' the worse are always more apt to court your acquaintance, which you must easily distinguish, I hope for your own Good and the comfort of those that Love you. I have heard so much of my Nephew Ernle of New College<sup>50</sup> that I cannot but tell you he is highly worth your acquaintance, which if ever you gain pray present him my hearty service.*

---

<sup>50</sup> This is John Kyrle Ernle the son of Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's half-brother John Ernle. He was educated at Winchester before entering New College. (see Ernle Family)



Merton College, Oxford © The Trustees of the British Museum

According to the editor of *The Verney Letters* Ralph Verney (II) :

... is a rather colourless character. He was not strong in health, but this was the only anxiety he ever caused his father, with whom he was on the best of terms. He appears to have done what was expected of him without much exhortation from others. He also appears to have been the only member of his family (apart from his uncle Palmer) who read and appreciated books. Most of the other men in the family were more like his brother in law, Sir Thomas Cave, who preferred the outdoor life of hounds and horses, although his letters are always well written and interesting. [VL (1), p. 94]

After leaving Oxford, Ralph Verney (II) was at a loss as to what to do with himself and soon after graduating he fell ill and was sent to Bath to regain his strength whereupon his uncle Ralph Palmer proposed in a letter dated 30<sup>th</sup> June 1705 that his nephew join him at the Temple and begin a career as a lawyer:



William Lowndes MP, friend and neighbour of the Verneys

*It comes to my mind that the air of the Temple (which is the best in London), may best agree with you; if you think so; my Chambers are at your service, where your man may be with you. I hope you'll bring your horses with you, for riding of all things is what's*

*proper in your case, and then we may often take a ride together ...* [VL (I), p. 100]

Having suggested that his nephew join him in London, Ralph Palmer (II) writes to John Verney on 11<sup>th</sup> February 1706 that his son has accepted his offer:

*... my nephew is pleased to accept my apartment in the Temple. Where he shall not want any assistance I can give him, for my Dear Sister's sake (whose memory is Sacred with me), the Respect I have for your Lordship, and his Personal Merit. He has begun to learn French, and I was with him most of last Week, which gave me an Opportunity of Introducing him into some of my acquaintance, besides which he has some sober young gentlemen of his own in those parts ... Your neighbour [Mr. \[William\] Lowndes](#) proposed in the H of C a project upon Hides and Tallow, but was buz'd by the Landed Men into his Seat & Silence.* [VL (1), p. 101]



**The Middle Temple Courtyard**  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

In the end Ralph Verney's address after Oxford became his uncle Palmer's at The Middle Temple which was: *In Barbon's Building, up the steps and one pair of Stairs, number 8 over the Door, by the Water Gate in the Middle Temple, London. To be thrust under the door if shut.*

On 7<sup>th</sup> April 1706 Ralph Palmer (II) writes to his nephew on a topic perhaps closer to his heart:

*Yesterday I was a Hunting Buck on Putney Heath with the Queen's Buckhounds. There was a great appearance of Gentlemen though a bad day, they did not turn out before 1 o'clock, so we had a fair riding and good though short sport.* [VL (1), p. 100]



On 22<sup>nd</sup> October 1706 Ralph Palmer writes to Sir John Verney suggesting that by being with him in London his nephew:

*... might found a good and improving Acquaintance in the world, and accomplish himself by the useful additions of a little French, Fencing, etc. as well as be in the way of a happy marriage, to your Contents and satisfaction.* [VL (1), p. 101]

Once his career as a lawyer (which he appears never to have actually taken up) had been chosen, more attention could next be paid to securing a bride for young Ralph, and in this regard Ms. Catherine Paschal / Paschall / Pachall, etc. of Baddow Hall in Essex<sup>51</sup> fitted the bill nicely with her portion of £8,000. We have already noted Catherine's correspondence on certain topics such the South Sea Company and the buying of a house in Chelsea aided by the Palmers.

One Verney relative, Elizabeth (Verney) Adams (Aunt Adams), claimed that a *'better humored or discreeter woman cannot come into a family'*. Catherine's father was Henry Paschall a successful London merchant and her mother was Catherine daughter of Sir Henry Appleton of Jarvis Hall, South Benfleet in Essex and Sarah Oldfield daughter of Sir Thomas Oldfield of Spalding. Sir Henry was the last male Appleton to produce an heir.

Below the marriage record of Henry Paschall to Catherine Appleton on 15<sup>th</sup> June 1680 at St. Sepulchre in Holborn (fourth line down from the top).

Month	Day	Marrid.	Atms.	By
	20	Edward Glasbroke & Jane Sherwood		By Lychense
	25	Abraham Astley & Hanna Nelson		By Lychense
June	1	Edward Powell & Abigail Dalbey		By Lychense
	10	John Roberts & Ann Madland		By Lychense
	15	Henry Paschall & Katherine Appleton		By Lychense
	17	Arthur Squibb & Elizabeth La. Fork		By Lychense
	20	Richard Glasbroke & Mary Lane		By Lychense

15 Henry Paschal & Katherine Appleton By Lychense

The Verney's connection to Baddow Hall had been long in the making as Aunt Adams's husband the Rev. Charles Adams had

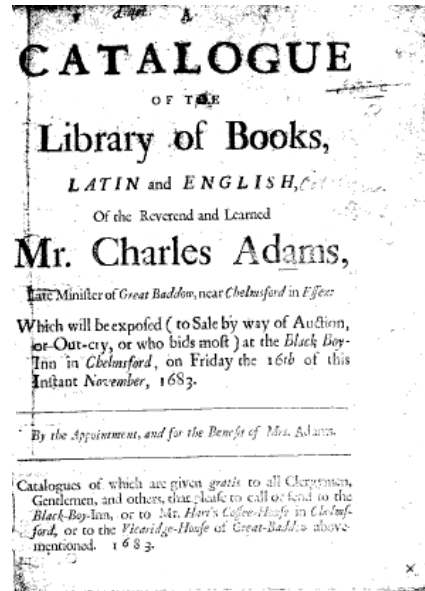
---

<sup>51</sup> Demolished, like so many others, in the 1960s.

been the local parish priest at Baddow and knew the Paschall family well.



Elizabeth (Verney) Adams  
© Claydon House Trust



**Mrs. Adams of Covent-Garden, a rich Gentlewoman,  
a near Relation of the Lord Fermanagh, died last Week.**

Death notice of Elizabeth (Verney) Adams from *The Saturday Post* 6<sup>th</sup> January 1722  
She was the sister of Ralph Verney (I) and aunt of John Verney.

But competition was fierce as by the autumn of 1706 some dozen offers of marriage had been made to Sir John for his son and negotiations had been opened up on various fronts.

On 16<sup>th</sup> February 1707 John Verney wrote to his Aunt Adams:

*I suppose the good company of the Badow Hall Ladies contributes much to your good health, for certainly there is no remedy for the Vapours like pleasing Society. You know I have ever had a great veneration for those pretty creatures whose Father [Henry Paschall] is expected in town, and I doubt not but many considerable matches have been and will be proposed to him for them ... As to my son if she [Catherine Paschall] does not dislike him I shall be very ready to wait on their Father in London tho' Journeys are troublesome to one of my years and Infirmities. But on the good opinion I have of his integrity and desire to see his daughters well disposed of, I will attend him ... I have never mentioned her [Catherine] to my Son in that way, nor do I think it proper to do so until I see whither its like to come to anything. [VL (1), p. 174]*



However this resolution to not mention Catherine to his son Ralph was not kept and John's opinion of Henry Paschall's character is expressed quite differently in a letter he sent to his son the same day; shifting away from being that of a good one to one that John thinks he should be wary of.

*I confess the Character I have heard of Mr Pachall makes me very wary of how I deal with him, but I hope what I heard at Bath, and also at London was spoken more out of malice than anything else. God grant us his blessing in this important affair, and that it may prove to your future happiness is my earnest desire and hearty Prayer ... Let me know anything that you can fish out of Aunt Adams, tho' it be not to be depended upon for she is extremely in their Interest. [VL (1), p. 174]*

Later, in March 1707, John Verney turned to his brother in law Ralph Palmer (II) and dispatched him to Baddow Hall, along with Palmer's kin Joseph Churchill, to find out the nature of Catherine Paschall and the household in which she was raised. He also instructed Palmer and Churchill to estimate how much income could be derived from the lands at Baddow. John was expecting a portion of more than £6,000 for his son and he believed that Catherine's inheritance, which was valued at £8,000, was perhaps inflated and he was growing increasingly doubtful about the value of the estate and the various debts and charges secured on it.

On 7<sup>th</sup> March Palmer reported back, not on the value of the estate, but the character of Catherine and her family:

*As for our Usage it was very handsome indeed, and it being a pretty difficult province of a Young Lady who rules her father's house to split the hair between Common courtesie and too much freedom on such an occasion ... Her Conduct in that respect could not be more Exact, that is, less Forward nor more Obliging. To this her managing of the Table seem'd equal which I never saw more prettily contrived nor more frugally filled, and by her manufacture of Wines I could have fancied myself in Italy, in which we often drank your Lordship's health. As to my nephew's conduct you have read his in hers, for I never saw two Young people on such a design carry themselves in all respects with so exact decorum. Mr [Henry] Pachall was extremely Courteous, and seems a very Great Husband and Indulgent Father and good man. [VL (1), p. 176]*

In a further letter dated 20<sup>th</sup> April 1707, Palmer concludes that if the marriage were to go ahead there maybe enough

money: ... *to let them live comfortably, though not sumptuously, by which they will learn to use More Well by managing a little, so* . (Ibid) which would suggest that perhaps the estate at Baddow was more encumbered and would produce less income than had been expected.

On 9<sup>th</sup> August 1707, the negotiations over the marriage settlement between Ralph (II) and Catherine were described by John Verney as jogging along:

*... slowly in the Lawyer's hands, the Wedding garments are buying and the Coach a making.* [VL (1), p. 178],

And possibly to help divert his mind from these preparations, Ralph Palmer decided to write to his nephew a gossip letter filled with local and national news (9<sup>th</sup> August 1707):

*... Sister Alice [Palmer] is here and by a fortuitous thrust of her backside threw Mirtilla (Mathilda) out of my Mother's Chamber Window into the Courtyard. Great was the Lamentation, but the dog was a little bruised and stunned with the fall but is pretty well again ... Young Sir John Cope &c. are arrived at Edinburgh. They are lodged four pair of stairs high in the Castle, and were conveyed thither by a Coach and three horses and a postilion, for the honour of Scotland. There has been a Robbery committed at a School house in Fulham; a fellow broke in at a window and an old Gardener without any arms [i.e. he was unarmed] ventured to go to him and was shot at, then they struggled and one without fired in at him, but shot his companion through both the legs, after which (the Gardener being run through with a sword and shot too) they made shift to draw the Rogue out of the window where some of his buttons were tore off and left; the Fellow was pursued to the Duke of Buckingham's house by the blood, and there taken, and now in Newgate, but the Gardener died the next day ... I forgot to tell you my spouse had a letter from your sister Verney out of Ireland [Mary Lovett], where all are well, but the new air of Gravity is the mode by the example of their Viceroy<sup>52</sup>, the reverse of the Former.*

*But I forget all this while the trespass I commit upon your patience and the Ladies' good nature by interrupting conversation so long together, and therefore referring you to the Little Summer House at the end of the Terrace Walk, or if you are inclined to a*

---

<sup>52</sup> Thomas Herbert, 8th Earl of Pembroke (c. 1656 – 22<sup>nd</sup> January 1733). His daughter Barbara married Dudley North whose sister Mary North married Charles Long whose brother Beeston Long married Sarah Cropp a direct descendant of Hester (Palmer) Cradock's.

*promenade to the rising vista at New Hall, or the more Artless and Enchanting Covert of a Shady Grove or Rambling Thicket, I shall take my leave of you, flourishing on your Flute to serenade your lady amidst a Chorus of Nightingales, wishing you all many divertive Hours and improving Pleasures. [VL (1), pp. 176-177]*

The editor of *The Verney Letters* notes that:

It is evident that his [Palmer's] warm sympathy meant a great deal in young Ralph's life; his father was capable of a deep affection, but could never have written such a letter as the last "Nightingales" and "Shady Groves" were not at all in his line of business. Indeed, he wrote at about this time that Ralph had left Claydon ... *and is gone a caterwauling in Essex.*

But his uncle's letter was, according to Whyman, also accompanied by ... a list of negotiating points to consider: jointure, maintenance, portions, pin money and securing Catherine's inheritance in default of issue. Another Palmer relative Joseph Churchill [described as Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's first cousin] was asked by John Verney to journey into Essex and check on the Pachall holdings and to appraise Baddow Hall, the lands, rents and even the silver. The question of who should pay an estate debt threatened to stop the match and John accused Pachall of inflating values. [Whyman, p.135]

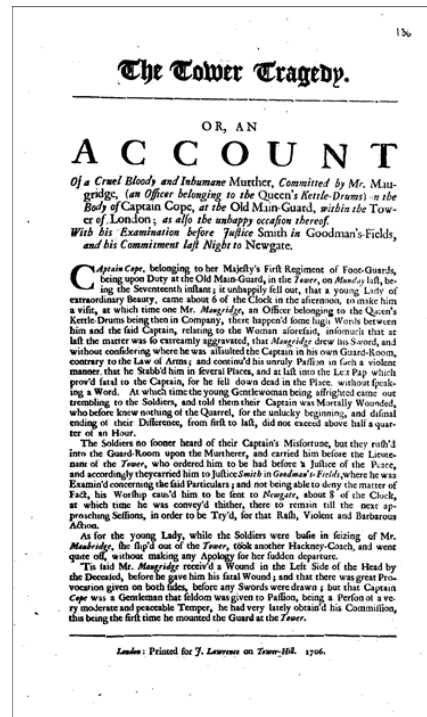
On 23<sup>rd</sup> June 1706 Ralph Palmer sends his nephew a note, unrelated to the marriage negotiations, about a Chelsea neighbour Sir John Cope:

*Sir John Cope's third son was killed by a kettle drummer, about a woman; he is in Newgate; it was the first time he mounted guard at the Tower, and his commission of lieutenant in the guards (which is styled captain) cost his father, but 2 months ago, £800 altogether.*

Below, a contemporary hand bill describing the killing of Sir John Cope's son.



Sir John Cope, friend and neighbour of the Palmers. © National Trust, Blickling Hall



Ralph Verney (II) appears to have been quite uninvolved and detached from his own matrimonial plans, and his uncle Palmer noted with some relief that his nephew: ... *has now a better liking to* [Catherine than] *when he first seemed*. And, although John Verney appeared to let the matter rest with his son, Ralph Palmer noted a hint of parental pressure on him to act when he wrote to John on 20<sup>th</sup> May 1707 that:

*My Nephew ... has weighed the reasonableness of this matter ... since your Lordship so kindly leaves the result of it to himself, I doubt not but you mean it so, that in all respects he may continue the same in your favour, opinion, and kindness as he does before, or otherwise I am apt to think he will do nothing.*

All of which suggests that Ralph Verney was ... being pushed into marriage and had succumbed to family pressure. [Whyman, p. 135]

To John Verney's son in law, Sir Thomas Cave, who had earlier married Ralph's sister Margaret, negotiations over the marriage settlement appeared to be proceeding well and

he sends his father in law the following note dated 22<sup>nd</sup> December 1707:

*My Lord We rejoice to hear that all are well at Bow Street and that your Lordship and Mr Pachall have adjusted all things, but I wish that the Young Couple will not have reason to censure the tedious lawyers. It is well the Town air proves so fruitful, the same cannot be said of these parts ...* [VL (1), p. 175]

Inspite of or maybe because of Ralph Verney's lethargic attitude toward his own marriage, the Verneys got a good deal out of Henry Paschall with Catherine's portion being over £8,000 as well as her share of the Baddow estate. Her father's debts of £2,200 were paid off by John. [Whyman, p. 135]

The final settlement also included a stipulation that if there were no children of the marriage and the widowed childless Catherine (Paschall) Verney remarried and she had daughters from that second marriage then the Paschall lands would be inherited by those daughters but if there were no daughters then the Paschall lands would revert to the Verneys.

The marriage contract was completed and signed in October 1707<sup>53</sup> and Ralph and Catherine were married on 24<sup>th</sup> February 1708 at St. Giles in the Fields. Her sister Mary married a John Stone of Brightwell (see Stone Family in Part Two).

Catherine was born on 1<sup>st</sup> May 1682 and was a few months older than her husband. She bore him four surviving children: John, Ralph, Elizabeth, and Catherine (Kitty).

Another letter included in *The Verney Letters* from Ralph Palmer to his nephew Ralph Verney and dated 29<sup>th</sup> March 1707 talks of music:

*On Monday at 5 o'clock there will be a French Opera performed at Mrs Chauvin's Boarding School in Great Chelsea by young Ladies, there will be extraordinary Dancing, and something very Curious, as well as Good Music and a Theatre raised. I have seen it once, and 'twas very diverting. We will meet you at the Park Gate by Buckingham House at 4 o'clock unless you walk over in the morning, 'twill not be over till 9 o'clock so that if you have no Convenience of Returning, and will Favour us with*

---

<sup>53</sup> See John Broad's *The Shaping of Family and Village 1657-1740*

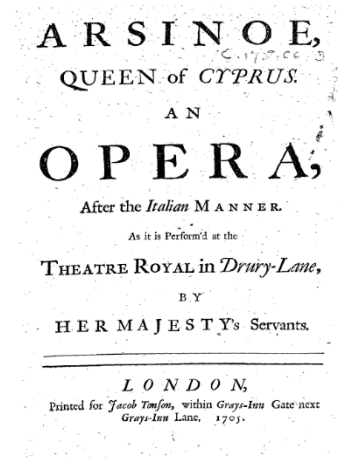


*your Company home, my Sister's bed is vacant and at your service. My wife and I shall see it.* [VL (1), pp. 101-102].

On 19<sup>th</sup> November 1707 Ralph Palmer sent his nephew a letter in which he:

*... heartily missed You amongst us the other night at my Chambers [in the Middle-Temple?], where your Sister Cave [Margaret Verney], Sir Thomas, Mrs. Cave and Mrs. Adams, and my she-friends &c., to the number of a score, assembled to hear some of the Opera of Arsinoe & Camilla Songs<sup>54</sup> performed; where likewise Mr. Hadley, his son, Lady, and Daughters & Sergt. Cheshire, were too.* [VL (1), p. 101]

The opera Arsinoe is supposed to have been the first opera written in English which followed the Italian manner.



On 24<sup>th</sup> November 1709 Ralph Palmer (II) felt it necessary to remind his nephew to:

*Always deal freely that you should not make a stranger of me.* [Whyman, p. 99].

There are very few letters from Ralph Verney to his uncle Ralph Palmer (II) but one dated 14<sup>th</sup> August 1710 has been preserved among the Tuffnell family papers at the [Essex archives](#). The catalogue record's summary runs as follows:

Having so great a value for his sister [Betty] Verney's welfare, he is sorry to hear that the match is not likely to be successful, but hopes that Palmer in his journey will find the reasons that obstructed it, which they will be glad to be 'informed off'. His

---

<sup>54</sup> Camilla Songs in the New Opera, call'd Camilla. [1706] Il trionfo di Camilla

(Verney's) father and 'our' Claydon friends design 'us' shortly a visit at Baddow, and he (Verney) has for the present put off his Bath Journey. He (Verney) is glad that Palmer has met with a horse that pleases him, and hopes he will ride him to Baddow whenever he has an opportunity. This letter is sent by a porter for fear that Palmer should be gone on his journey before it reaches him. Mr. Tufnell (who has bought Langleys 'ye Ly Everards seat near this place') carries this letter to London, and as he is going this minute, he (Verney) has not time to say much more but offers the duty and service of all 'this family' to his grandfather, to Palmer (his uncle) and to his (Verney's) aunt [Alice] Palmer and all friends at 'Chelsey'. In a postscript, Ralph Verney says he is sorry he will not meet his uncle Palmer at Claydon.

In response to a letter he receives from his nephew, Palmer writes on 17<sup>th</sup> July 1714:

*Yours Dear Sir obliged me last night when my Lord (your Father) was so kind to come over and take a piece of mutton with us. He is well but his legs, he came by water and would not take our Coach home do what I could, and intends at Claydon in a new Chariot and a pair of horses he has sent up for to carry him down. I am glad your Little Gentleman thrives so, I pray God make 'Em all great Comforts to you and their dear Mamm... It has been violent hot and dry weather with us. Mr Marriott's fine young horse is either dead or dying of a violent cold and running of his nose and fever ... he sent him up to Hyde Park for some French Men to see and standing there caught his illness. Sir Thomas Dunck called here this morning on his way to my sister's House at Epsom Wells.*

*I wish you a happy meeting all and much good humour and pleasure at Claydon ... My Lord Chief Baron Ward is dead and Lord Massam has bought Sir Henry Seymour's Estate by Windsor. The Queen leaves us next week.* [A sentence which meant more than the writer intended as the Queen died about fourteen days later] [VL (1), p. 297]

On the death of Queen Anne the country was agog to learn more about their new Hanoverian monarch and Ralph Palmer was in a position to supply his rural relatives with the latest on that front.

9<sup>th</sup> September 1714

*We are all in expectation of our King when the Heavens will give him an auspicious gale, in kind exchange of A Regency for the Monarch. But none of us have curiosity to crowd for the sight of an Intrado. They talk of his coronation by the middle of the ensuing month. The worst news I hear is that one Richardson of Islington has lost forty*

*or fifty beasts by a distemper that takes away their appetite from eating or drinking, and then seizes their head, of which they die. There is a periwig maker too (one Brown) murdered by an Irishman (his throat cut) for expressing his joy at the*



King George I  
© The National Portrait Gallery, London

*accession of King George, he is committed to Newgate for it by Justice Peters the Surgeon ... Our little Spark runs better and better and is full of his gibberish, especially about hounds and horses, which is the best dormitive he has . [VL (2) , p. 15]*

And again Ralph writes to his nephew on 30<sup>th</sup> September 1714

*There have been great feuds at Court about the acquisition of places. I hear that his Majesty will sit in the Treasury himself, where no more Tallys shall be issued but ready money; that he is much surprised at the vast debts there are, of which I suppose he has heard little before; that he rises early, dines at one, goes to bed at ten, is often abroad incognito, has been seen at the Coffee Houses, is an extraordinary good Accountant, and will be a great Manager for good husbandry, which I hope the nation too will be better for. [VL (2) , p. 18]*

Later that year Ralph Verney (II) had a riding accident referred to briefly in a letter written by his sister Betty: *My brother's unlucky Accident has given me a great deal of concern, I hope he continues Mending .*

While his uncle Palmer becomes quite distraught: 30<sup>th</sup> October 1714

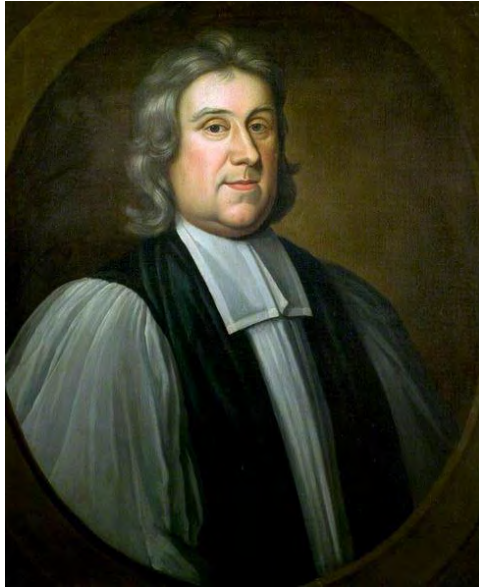
*I cannot forbear to express my great concern for that ill accident which has befallen my Dear and Best Nephew; Sure the Quadrupedes are all betwattled [confused] , but for Jenny Mare's misdeamenour there is nothing that I know of to have thrown but her past and long and faithfull Services and her great years. I hope you will not confide in her any more. It was a Great Providence you were not killed, and your dear Good Precious [his wife Catherine (Paschall) Verney] did (as she always does) most tenderly and discreetly in her applications to you.*

*I have been this week at the Temple and find it is the General opinion that the power of the Whiggs will be very short lived; the Duke of Marlborough has had severall*

*Reprimands from the two greatest men, and his own friends fall off from him, he is so greedy in the acquisition of places, that the Great Man told him the other day the Archbishop of Canterbury had been with him three hours in his Closet, and he believed he was a very honest good man for he had not asked him for one place in all that Time. All men agree that he (the King) is a Man of great Judgement, which (no question) Time and a little more notice of things will improve. The Archbishop of York [John Sharp] told him that he might depend upon it that among the Torys he wanted not Able and Hearty friends (however he might be misinformed) that would be faithful and zealous to serve him. Lord Wharton was complementing the eldest daughter of the Prince [Anne] , about 7 years old, and she told him his Lordship was a great Courtier and Flaterror of the Ladies. She had heard of his fame before she came from Hanover. I find he has been too hard for the Buckinghamshire Conclave, and he promised that he would set up Mr Grenvill only, and now Hamden stands with him, which I fear will carry all ... I wonder your sister [Betty] mentions not the exploit of Mr Grenvil's plundering House and carrying away his father, sure you hear of it, tis certainly so, and they are at Highgate.*

*I am sorry your Boy [John Verney] has beat out his teeth, Nature I hope will soon supply that defect; mine did not sleep last night till after midnight for want of his marbles, a new purchase that he is very fond of, he improves now every day and I wish I could not say does in our Affections so much . [VL (II) , p. 18-19]*

The Archbishop of Canterbury was Tenison who was in the last year of his office and famed for his disinterested simple life. The Archbishop of York was John Sharp a strong Tory who had been a special friend and adviser to Queen Anne. He had married Elizabeth Palmer daughter of William Palmer and Elizabeth Halton and of the same Palmer family as Ralph's. Elizabeth (Palmer) Sharp's brother, William Palmer, joined the Duke of Monmouth in his unsuccessful rebellion and was made a captain in that army's cavalry. His fate is not known (See: 'The Early Palmers').



Two Archbishops: Tenison of Canterbury and Sharp of York who married Elizabeth Palmer, a distant cousin of Ralph's. © Usher Gallery, Leicestershire (Tennison) and © Christ's College, University of Cambridge (Sharp).

Ralph Palmer to his nephew Verney 1<sup>st</sup> January 1715:

*I make no question you have been fully employed one way or another but all your healths are so valuable to us that we can scarce bear silence with Christian patience. Since I wrote to you my son has had three convulsion Fits with his teeth, which frieghtened us much, but he has had no return of them this month .... My wife and I dined yesterday too well at Mr. Luttrell's. I heartily wish you, Sir, many happy New Years, all which will ever be attended with the best Services and Wishes of the Chelsea Friends. The Queen, God be praised, is much better, fine and well, and will be speedily at St. Jame's, her illness began with a Colick Fit, and turned to an Ague, but I can not learn she has had above two Fits. [VL (1), p. 291]*

Such breezy gossip letters from Ralph Palmer to his nephew Verney continued long after his nephew's marriage; for instance on 29<sup>th</sup> March 1715 Ralph writes to his nephew of his concern for his niece Margaret's husband Sir Thomas Cave whose electioneering in Leicestershire came with both financial and physical risks:

*... You know there will be a new election for Leicestershire, they have suggested in their petition that the two Knights prevailed with the Sheriff to go away. I wish one of them had never engaged in that affair, he [Sir Thomas Cave] was so kind with his sister to give us a visit and told me he had lost near £200 in horseflesh this winter; such things and such Elections I dread will come to an indifferent conclusion at long run. I*



*truly Love him and am truly concerned for him. I pleaurably hear of the improvement my little Godson [Ralph Verney (III)] and all the Olive Branches round your table; mine is wonderfully come on, prates much in his own Dialect, and affords us more comfort at home than the intelligences abroad do. I can see no end of Taxes and the hardship of half of a people's bearing the Burden that belongs to the whole, so that I think we must write over our doors Deus providebit. I grow either lazy or old or both, the public won't let me keep an horse, tho' I am a Protestant, because they take away my money to pay for it.*

*I have parted with my man John, who has been with me 2 years and three quarters, which is an age to keep A Servant in these parts. But he was grown a meer sot, and perfectly regardless of pleasing, and I have got I hope a better, at least that is so now, in his room.*

*I have been this month lame of my fourth finger by a cut I gave myself, in cutting down the laurel hedge, but tis now something better, and all out of danger ... I will not tattle to you any longer, dear Sir, than to ask your acceptance of mine amd my wife's best service to you and Master's Love to his little Cosens, of whom he talks much. [VL (1), p. 332]*

6<sup>th</sup> June 1715

*I have left your poor Aunt [Palmer's wife Katherine] in bed severely afflicted with the tooth-ache. I am sorry your old favourite Mare has quite done, for to be in the country without a good horse must needs be very uncomfortable.*

*My Neighbour [Nicholas] Corsellis is come home from your Election, but not without blows, his Bailif, and Man, have all had a short drubbing, and I am very glad Mr. [William] Harvey carried his point....*

*On Thursday the Commisioners of Secrecy opened, tis generally believed that all the Late Ministry will be sent to the Tower ... Sir Thomas Cave tells me they have resolved to sue the Under Sherriff for protracting the Poll. Sir Robert Raymond was so very Generous to him, that he would not take a fee from him, and yet desired him to consult him in anything he could serve him at any time again ... Our young Rogue is as wild as a Buck and grows almost visibly ... Sir Thomas Dunk and my Lady [Palmer's sister Cornelia] have taken lodgings at the house next to us.*

*Yesterday I was at a Review of the Horse Guards and Horse Grenadiers in Hyde Park, the King, Prince, and Duke of Marlborough, Duke of Somerset<sup>55</sup>, etc. were all on horseback there for above an hour, he returned to dine at St. James's, and went*

---

<sup>55</sup> Charles Seymour, Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's half-brother.

*afterwards to Hampton Court, today he goes to the Horse Race at Guildford and dines with Sir Richard Onslow.* [VL (1), pp. 336-337; last paragraph VL (2), p. 24)

Ralph Palmer to Ralph Verney, 28<sup>th</sup> August 1716. [He is not at all pleased with the post of housekeeper while his wife is laid up]

*I received your kind congratulations on the birth of my Son [Hamey], whose Mamma and I return you many thanks for the kind office you so freely accepted [as godfather]. I bless God We here are in a very Hopeful way, this being my wife's ninth day, and I hope she will be able to Mistress it in the family in a little time which wants it pretty much. I think there never were such Servants, I cannot meet with a footman that can keep himself sober above an hour in a morning, and the rest of them will receive no orders unless I speak to them myself, and must be spoke to do every individual thing they know it their duty to do. Pray Good Sir, give my most humble service to your Lady, Mrs Pascoll, the fair Isabella, and the Cavalry, with a bundle of tender kisses to my Godson imprimis, and the rest of the Covey of your babes.*

4<sup>th</sup> October 1716

*I was tempted go a-hunting the other day, thinking some exercise might do me good, and fasting all day and not returning till night I happened to eat some Pork and Peas, which made me so ill I thought I would never have seen you more. I am better than I was but am very much broken about my lips.*

*I have been heartily vexted too, about a very base action of both Men Luttrells [son Francis and his father Narcisus] towards me. I was about renewing a lease of some ground to Mr. Cardonel, and they have several times been inquisitive about it .... If I were to tell all that they said of him, I should make fine work with them, but I scorned to tell what is said in private conversation on any account, Mr. Cardonel and I are agreed ... I have my next house in my hands and have come off pretty well without that, all the Locks, some brass, all good, are left to me, though I have a very weak Lease to trust to.* [VL (2), p. 45]

8<sup>th</sup> November 1716

*I hope all your dear fireside are doing well. ... have but very piteous health, your Godson [Hamey] is a very lusty boy, Ralph grows very tall but very thin. The Luttrells are all Sick, she in bed with an Asthma, he with his mouth drawn aside by the Palsey, and Francis with a fit.*

*My Sister [Alice] Palmer is going into lodgings in Westminster to set up for herself, Sir Thomas [Dunck] has the Gout at next door, and his Lady [Cornelia] just as she used to be. [VL (2), p. 47]*

Ralph Palmer to his nephew Ralph Verney, 13<sup>th</sup> August 1719.

*... I bid twenty guineas for an horse in town, I saw in a hackney Coach from Northampton, too much really I thought, and the lowest price made me by Smith at the Bell Savage was £30 and I daresay it never cost more than 16 or 17 ... I hear often from Stanford [home of his niece Margaret (Verney) Cave] and wish it lay in my power to do more for that family. I am glad my Lady is something better ... Mun Challoner is dead, aged above 90, as I understand your old Neighbour Chaloner is too. [VL (2), p. 69].*

In the spring (?) of 1729 Ralph Palmer (II) writes from Windsor Castle to his nephew Ralph Verney:

*My son and I are both got safe to our Journey's end; we could not have had finer weather for travelling, nor ever was for the country known. The plows were all going in the fields and what corn is up looks well, and the grass verdant ... There is nothing new here, but I saw abundance of coach-horses go though this place from Reading Fair, all long loose horses, and some indifferent saddle nags; and that the wooden bridge which was over the ditch being blown by a storm of wind was quite taken away, much I think to the advantage of the place. [VL (2), pp. 101-102].*

The above is the last published letter from Ralph Palmer to his nephew. In 1736 Catherine (Paschall) Verney fell ill enough for the papers to take note :

**and is now judg'd to be out of Danger.  
Last Night the Lady of the Right Hon. the Earl  
of Fermanagh, of North-Britain, lay at the Point of  
Death.**

The Daily Post, Tuesday, 24<sup>th</sup> August 1736

In January 1742 King George I advanced Ralph to the dignity of Earl Verney.

**L O N D O N.  
Whitehall, Jan. 29. The King has been pleas'd to  
grant the Dignity of an Earl of the Kingdom of Ireland,  
unto the Right Hon. Ralph Viscount Fermanagh in that  
Kingdom, by the Name, Stile and Title of Earl of Verney  
in his Majesty's Province of Leinster.**

### The Deaths of Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney

Catherine (Paschall) Verney died on 28<sup>th</sup> November 1748, aged sixty-eight, at Little Chelsea, and was buried on 10<sup>th</sup> December 1748 at Middle Claydon [VL (2), p. 245]. Her passing was noted in the papers:

**Yesterday Morning died at Little Chelsea, the Lady of the Right Hon. the Earl of Verney; whose extensive Goodness had rendered her one of the brightest Ornaments of her Sex, and the most irreparable Loss to her afflicted Family.**

Yesterday Morning died at Little Chelsea, the Lady of the Right Hon. the Earl of Verney; whose extensive Goodness had rendered her one of the brightest Ornaments of her Sex, and the most irreparable Loss to her afflicted Family.

In April 1752 Ralph Verney's health had deteriorated enough for him to set out for Bath.

**Last Wednesday the Right Hon. the Earl Verney, set out from his House at Chelsea for Bath, for the Recovery of his Health. He was attended by the Right Hon. the Earl of Harborough; and his Lady who is Daughter to Lord Verney. Id.**

Ralph died on 4<sup>th</sup> October 1752, aged sixty-nine.

**Last Wednesday died at his House at Little Chelsea, the Right Hon. Ralph Verney, Earl Verney of the Kingdom of Ireland, and Member of Parliament for Wendover in Buckinghamshire. His Title and Estate descends to Lord Fermanagh, his eldest Son, now Earl Verney.**

His burial did not take place until 20<sup>th</sup> October at All Saints in Middle Claydon. *The Letters* conclude by describing Ralph as a painstaking and affectionate, rather than a clever man, and that he gained and kept the affection of his children and his neighbours. [VL (II), p. 256]

### The Will of Ralph Verney II

Ralph desires to be buried near the bodies of his late wife and children [e.g. Catherine] in the Vault in the Parish

Church of Middle Claydon with 'as much Privacy as is consistent with Decency'.

His will is lengthy even though there are just two main beneficiaries - his son Ralph (III) and his granddaughter Mary Verney. Part of the reason for the length of the will is the addition of codicils; one of which was occasioned by the death of his unmarried daughter Catherine [Kitty] on 17<sup>th</sup> August 1750. He makes no mention of the Palmer family or any other family apart from his own immediate.

He appoints William Chilcot and John Milward as his executors and he signed his original will on 3<sup>rd</sup> March 1752 followed by various codicils. The will was witnessed by three members of the Harper family Robert Harper Snr., Robert Harper, Jnr., and Samuel Harper (see below).

The will can be read in full among the [Five papers relating to the claims to the Barony of Bray](#).

### Mary Verney (1682 – 1769)

Mary Verney was born in 1682 the second child of John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney.

According to *The Verney Letters* Mary was the: ... capable daughter who gives orders to the maids, sees to the linen and the stores when preparing for the journeys between Claydon and Chelsea.





Mary Verney ©Claydon House Trust

She was also the first sister to receive a suitor in the form of Colonel John Lovett 'from out of Ireland'. He was related to the Claydon parson William Butterfield whose wife was a Lovett and the family originated in the nearby Buckinghamshire village of Liscombe.

However, John Verney was resolved that his daughter should wed with an adequate settlement and he did all in his power to see that this was done. Having estates in Ireland prevented John from being able to easily assess Colonel Lovett's worth and negotiations would turn out to be much longer than Mary or the Colonel could have anticipated.

Elizabeth (Baker) Verney writes to her husband John at the 'The Bolt and Tun Inn' in Fleet Street on 28<sup>th</sup> March 1702:



Mary (Verney) Lovett  
© Claydon House Trust

*My Dear I am in a great Concern about poor Molley [Mary her step daughter]; what to advise you in I cant tell, you having good Councell there to lay open your case to...* [There follows a long account of Colonel Lovett's property [all in Ireland] and prospects, which Elizabeth thinks are far from

satisfactory] ... *For my part I am in the Vapors so that I can hardly crawl about nor able to write much more; I can only pray God that all things may be for the best. I read your letter to Dear Molley, who leaves it wholly to yourself, for she shall not be in the least concerned if you break it off; I hope you take off to see all things secure that you promised to your hand. I shall long till I have another letter from you. This minute Molly begs of me to desire you to break it off, so you may do as you please ... Your Loving and Affectionate Wife to command till Death.* [VL (1), p.123]

If Lovett at first failed to persuade John Verney, he did manage to sway John's female relatives who were happy to bat for him by peppering John with letters urging him to look upon Lovett favourably. John's aunt, Lady Gardiner, writes to him in 1702:

*I thank you for your visit to me when you were in town, tho' Colonel Lovett said not a word to me of his concerns yet he did to Belle<sup>56</sup>, and expressed much trouble for your letting him proceed so far, and to break off with him at last, but the Colonel telling me he would sure come to see me makes me think he did that night make you some proposition to your satisfaction. I verily believe he will do all he can to raise money to live in England, for when in Ireland he declared he came over to consummate his happiness in Marriage with a lady as he has a great affection for. And marrying your Daughter makes a great sound in Dublin where he is known, and consequently casts a blur on him and makes those as has a prejudice to him enlarge upon him, and the best of men wants no enemies, and I wish since it has gone so far, and my neice [Mary] liked of him, that he could satisfy your demands and wish all may end to the making of my neice happy, which is my chief concern in this affair.* [VL (1), pp. 123-124]

Lady Gardiner to her nephew John Verney 9<sup>th</sup> July 1702:

*Colonel Lovett was so kind as to come to Islington on Sunday and told us he left you all well; I find he would be glad to have carried the Lady with him now into Ireland, but he says he must submit on waiting your time, which he hope you will shorten all you can. He speaks extremely handsomely of all the Family, and particularly kindly of my neice [Mary]. So doubt not but he will perform all those promises he made in adding all the happiness he can to her, and truly he read me a letter from his mother on this occasion, which pleased me very much. It expressed great goodness and great ingenuity, and find by it he is but 34 years of Age, which I think suitable.* [VL (1), p. 124] This tells us that John was born in 1668 and that fourteen years lay between John and Mary.

---

<sup>56</sup> Isabella, her daughter

Ralph Palmer (I) writes a letter on 13<sup>th</sup> July 1702 to his son in law John Verney in which he appears to accept the marriage of his granddaughter to Colonel Lovett as just about fixed upon, even though almost a year lay ahead before matters would be finally settled.

*Colonel Lovett came to take his leave of us before he went. God send good luck in so great a work. We can add nothing but our prayers and well-wishes to you in so great a concern, it being for life. I did inquire of one, a person of very good estate here, and Ireland also, that gives him [Lovett] a very good character, a man in good esteem and a very good man and has a good estate also, so God bless you all. Your Loving Father. Ralph Palmer. [VL (1), p. 124].*

John demands a much fuller accounting of Colonel Lovett's estate than he had previously presented Verney with which he duly provides and to which the Colonel adds:

*When it shall please Sir John Verney, Bart. to bestow on me his daughter Mrs. Mary Verney, I will receive her with all Respect, Value and gratitude imaginable. [VL (1), pp. 124-125]*

However John began to doubt whether Lovett's financial position was such that he ought to allow his daughter to marry the Colonel after all. The editor of *The Verney Letters* notes that in the many letters that were exchanged 'considerable asperity' was shown on both sides over the issue of portions and jointures.

According to Whyman (p. 130) John Verney asked Lovett to itemize his assets. The Colonel listed £19,650.00 in lands, houses, and mortgages with an annual income of £1,446.13s. and £2,500 in stock.

However, Verney became suspicious when Lovett failed to note his leases and John continued to pry and poke into Lovett's financial well being at which Lovett took umbrage. But Verney responded that he hoped that if Mary Verney were Lovett's own daughter then Lovett too would be as cautious with Verney as he was being with Lovett.

But Verney's resistance gradually softened, no doubt because of the many letters from Verney relations in Dublin and London who greatly favoured the match. One of these was

from a Verney cousin, Mary Lloyd, who writes on 6<sup>th</sup> September 1702:

*I'm no stranger to Coll. Lovett, and do really think him a man of great value, if we may depend upon anything. I can say his Principles of honesty and honour are without exception, his temper truly good and Generous, so that my Cousin [Mary Verney] may be very secure. Whenever she gives herself to him, she puts herself into the hands of a Gentleman that in all respects will certainly use her extremely well. ... I'm very particularly acquainted with several of his family ... so that when a woman puts herself into such a family she has very little to fear.* [VL (1), p. 126]

Toward the end of July, John gave his permission for the marriage to take place and Colonel Lovett sends his future father in law a thank you note dated 7<sup>th</sup> August 1702.

*Sir I hope and beg you will pardon me in not returning you hearty thanks and owning all favours I had received from you; when you reflect in what a confusion of mind I was in the day we parted. All I can say is that you have bestowed your favours on one who is very Sensible, and will be very grateful, and is affixed in this resolution that nothing on his part shall be wanting in performing to a title [husband] that he has promised, and that the study of his Life shall be to make easy and to the satisfaction of you and yours. And the Obligations I have received shall for ever be Owned and Acknowledged by, Sir, your obliged humble servant. John Lovett.* [VL (1), p. 125]

Because the marriage settlement obliged Mary Verney's father to raise a portion for his daughter, John did not hesitate to find all means possible for raising the money; including calling in old debts. One of those owing John was the mother of his second wife Mary (Whitmore) Lawley who still owed John on her late daughter's marriage settlement:

So Verney picked up his pen and wrote to Lady Lawley on 12<sup>th</sup> October 1702.

*Madam, a Match for one of my daughters being proposed, and preliminaries agreed unto, by which I must pay her portion on the day of Marriage, therefore I entreat you to clear with me the debt that remains yet unpaid, by our Lady Day next at farthest, but if you can pay it sooner I shall gladly receive it ... with truest respect, dearest Madam, your Ladyship's obedient Son and very humble servant.* [VL (1), p. 127]

However, just as Colonel Lovett could have expected to have made his way to church with his future bride, Sir John abruptly halted the proceedings on the grounds that the portion expected of him was too great and the settlement disadvantageous to his daughter. The Colonel all but throws in the towel:

24<sup>th</sup> March 1703: *... I leave myself to Providence and to you, and if I must be unhappy bear it as well as I can knowing I have acted with all the principles of honor, and cannot charge my Self with anything but what I can answer in this world and an Other.* [VL (1), p. 129.]

Aunt Gardiner notes in a letter to Sir John on 3<sup>rd</sup> April 1703 that she wishes:

*.... Colonel Lovett may perform what he promised, and what may give satisfaction to you, since it has gone so far. I never saw him since, but one told me that the Colonel gave out that the stop to his proceedings was about the portion that you would not give what he required. I answered I durst swear you give what you promised, and if that were all the stop I did believe it would go on; so would say no more to what they said....* [VL (1), p. 130]

Perhaps John's shake down of his mother in law Lady Lawley had not produced the money required for Mary's portion, but whatever the case John's hard headed mercantilism could at times cause ill will.

But Verney finally acquiesced, once the fine details of the settlement had all been agreed upon, and John Lovett and Mary Verney were married in London on 20<sup>th</sup> July 1703 at St. Giles in the Fields by Dr. Hayley, Dean of Chichester. (That St. Giles was pulled down in 1730 and another built in its place.)





**St. Giles old church in about 1718**  
**©Trustees of the British Museum**

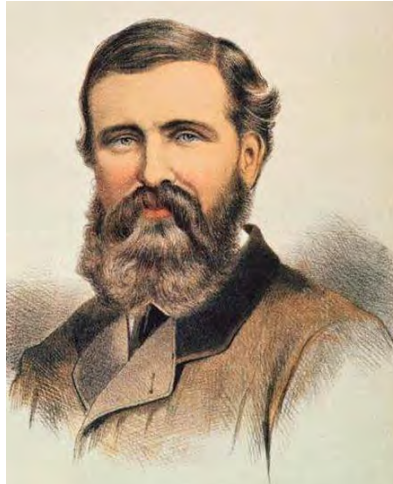
At Claydon House there exists a meticulous account of the cost of the wedding trousseau in John Verney's handwriting. The total expenditure ... *besides a Wedding Cake & Sweetmeats etc.* was £154 10s. Afterwards, the couple went down to Claydon House for their honeymoon and from there they left for Ireland.

John and Mary (Verney) Lovett had three surviving children: Verney, John, and Elizabeth none of whom married.

The only child that did not survive beyond infancy was Mary who was born on 18<sup>th</sup> January 1710. She was christened at All Saints, Middle Claydon and her godparents were Brigadier Edward Pearce, Babara Baker, and Cornelia (Palmer) Dunck.

For Colonel John Lovett, his marriage to Mary Verney was his second, as eighteen years before, on 23<sup>rd</sup> January 1685, at Quainton church in Buckinghamshire; he had married his widowed cousin Susana, daughter of his uncle Lawrence Lovett, who lived at Ethrop in the same county.

The baptisms of several children of this first marriage were registered at St. John the Evangelist's church in Dublin. Of these children only two survived, Robert and Christopher. They were educated at Eton and then Trinity College, Dublin. However, John's first wife Susana died in Dublin and was buried in St. Michan's church on the 29<sup>th</sup> December 1698. There are descendants of the two sons, among them the explorer Verney Lovett Cameron (below).



Verney Lovett Cameron, intrepid explorer and direct descendant of Colonel John Lovett by his first wife, Susanna. In the Public Domain

#### Notes on the Lovett Family.

The following is based on an article titled *Mr. Lovett out of Iorland* by E. Neville Lovett which appeared in *The Dublin Historical Record*, Vol. 3, No. 3 (March - May, 1941), pp. 54-66, 79-80 and published by the Old Dublin Society.

Colonel John Lovett was the son of Christopher Lovett who was the third son of Sir Robert Lovett of Liscombe Park in Buckinghamshire. Sir Robert Lovett had ten children who lived to maturity. He rebuilt the old fortified house at Liscombe in the more domestic Elizabethan style, no doubt to accommodate this large family. The cost of this, and the loss of £20,000 (a very large sum then) in the Earl of Bedford's syndicate for draining the Cambridgeshire Fens, by the collapse of the dykes in a storm, must have made the putting out into life of the younger sons no easy task.



Liscombe House, since demolished

Something of John Lovett's mother [Frances (Moore) Lovett] can be gathered from family letters still existing at Claydon House. She was the mother of

four sons and four daughters, and, as she survived her husband by 35 years, dying somewhere about her 70<sup>th</sup> year, and was not always found a very complacent old lady. Her own letters, not very communicative, are written in what we should now call a very uneducated hand, and her words are spelt as they were no doubt pronounced in Ireland at the time, and to some extent at the present day.

Mary (Verney) Lovett on meeting her mother in law for the first time writes home on her arrival in Dublin that: *I think she is very much wronged in her character for I think her a mighty good woman.* A few years later Mary writes: *My Mother Lovett is mighty kind and fond of me, and I think the fondest Mother of Mr. Lovett that ever was.* Subsequently when the old lady has grandchildren she is described as *Mighty fond of little boys.* The last allusion in the letters at Claydon House follows on her death: *I have lost a tender friend and a trusty affectionate Mother.* She died in 1715, but neither St. Michan's nor any other church in Dublin contains a record of her burial.



Trinity College, Dublin © The Trustees of the British Museum

Letters and other documents available, while they give much information about John Lovett after his second marriage to Mary Verney in 1703, to a great extent leave his earlier life to conjecture and inference. He was born in Dublin, but while registers are found of the baptism of all his brothers and sisters, his own cannot be traced. As a young man he appears to have visited his relations in Buckinghamshire more than any of the family in Ireland at that time, and even to have held a commission in the militia there, as he is mentioned as assisting to disband the Bucks Militia in 1679. Nothing else is found of his military career except that upon his second marriage he appears as a Colonel. His portrait by Sir Godfrey Kneller has painted on a stone plinth his name "Col. John Lovett."

John Lovett was evidently a man of considerable business capacity. On his death he is shown possessed of large property in Dublin, and was associated with commercial undertakings.

John Lovett's first wife's sister had married the Reverend William Butterfield, Vicar of Claydon. In 1702-3 Colonel John asked for the hand of Sir John Verney's eldest daughter Mary. And, as we have already noted, there was considerable difficulty in obtaining consent, and there is a certain humour in finding that Sir John, while entirely willing to become a baron of Ireland [Lord Fermanagh], was very unwilling that his daughter should marry "a Mr. Lovett out of Iorland," as he writes. Although Colonel John Lovett was at that time Member for Philipstown in the Irish Parliament, and was residing at Killruddery (of which he had a lease for the life of the then Earl of Meath).



John Lovett ©Claydon House Trust



Mary (Verney) Lovett © Claydon House Trust

After their marriage and brief honeymoon at Claydon house, the couple left for Ireland and, in a letter dated September 18<sup>th</sup> 1703 Mary (Verney) Lovett tells of her arrival in Dublin that same day:

*We had a very good passage for we were over in about 8 hours but we lay still in the night which made us the worse for then the ship tosses mightily about for ye wind was very high. Mrs. Tempest, Cousin Lloyd, and several others came to meet us when ye yacht came in ... I have had my Mother Lovett and others with me to-day, ... and my Cousin Coote sent her man to me ... I hope in my next to give you some account of how I like this place but what I have seen of it is very pretty ... I beg I may hear often from my dear Friends at Claydon whom I every hour wish with me and then I should be the*



*happiest woman in this world ... I assure you the journey is nothing if the mind be good ... We fared very well on our journey. We bought salmon 1 yard long for 6 pence and souls [sic] half a yard for 3 pence ... I beg mine and my deare's duty may be accepted by you - and pray believe me to be what I always was and will be to my last breath Yr. obedient Servt. to Command MARY LOVETT.*



Dublin Harbour in the 18th Century  
© Trustees of the British Museum

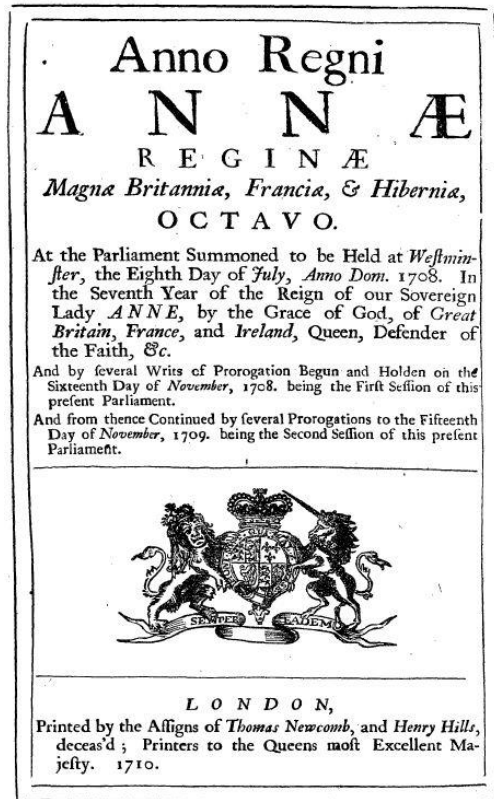
John Verney settled on his daughter £5,000, which was invested by Colonel Lovett, with the concurrence of his father-in-law, in a curious but interesting manner. Winstanley's Lighthouse on the Eddystone Rock was blown down in the Great Storm of November 1703, and Colonel John Lovett conceived the idea of erecting another<sup>57</sup>. His motives were not purely philanthropic, for the scheme was that his father in law Lord Fermanagh, who represented Wendover in Parliament, should get an Act passed providing that he who should erect a lighthouse on the Eddystone Rock should receive a royalty of a penny a ton on all ships passing to ports on the south coast, i.e. a shipping tax. When the Act had been secured, Colonel Lovett undertook to get the lighthouse erected at his own charges. In its erection he invested his wife's dowry.

Below the title page to the act of parliament permitting the raising of a shipping tax to pay for the Eddystone's construction and maintenance.

---

<sup>57</sup>Other sources say that Lovett had conceived of and had begun to execute his plan for the Eddystone lighthouse *before* the Great Storm. This is more likely as John Verney had agreed that Lovett could invest his future wife's portion into the lighthouse project.





He employed as his architect John Rudyard, an old friend of his, a silk merchant in Ludgate Hill. The lighthouse took five years to erect, and every winter caused grave anxiety lest storms should destroy so much of it as had been completed. This second lighthouse has always been called Rudyard's, though the family correspondence about it makes it very evident that it would be more correctly known as "Lovett's Lighthouse". When it was finished there was great family rejoicing, and a special Te Deum was sung in Claydon church.

#### The Death of Colonel John Lovett

At the beginning of 1710 John Lovett rode round the English coast, visiting the collectors of the shipping tax from Sheerness to Falmouth. Letters written during this ride are dated from Brighthelmstone (Brighton), Portsmouth, and Plymouth. He then visited for a few days his cousin Robert Lovett<sup>58</sup> near Barnstaple and from there he rode back to London. But the tour seems to have been very exhausting, for shortly after returning to London John fell ill, and he

---

<sup>58</sup> According to his memorial at St. Peter's, Tawstock, Robert: '.... dyed of a Malignant Small Pox ye 27th of November 1710 Ætat Suae 43.'

felt the need for: ... *a little quiet and Country Aire* [VL (I), pp. 210-211].

On 6<sup>th</sup> April 1710 Mary writes to her father:

*I hope now Mr Lovett will begin to take some care of himself and get out of town. For he indeed very much wants it, but I shall stay in town till next Thursday, being desired by my Aunt Dunck [Cornelia (Palmer) Dunck] to be at the Grand Entertainment and represent her, which I promised to do.* [VL (I), p. 211]

But John did not improve and Mary writes again to her father on 22<sup>nd</sup> April:

*I am in so much trouble I know not what I write, only I [beg] to see you as soon as possible, for I find a great change in my dear and never to be forgotten Mr. Lovett. I feare his affares are not soe well settled as they might be, so I wish your advice what to do, for I fear I am your Unfortunate though obedient daughter till death.* [VL (I), p. 212]

But it was too late, John Lovett died two days later and his body was interred in the family vault at Soulbury church in Buckinghamshire on 2<sup>nd</sup> May 1710.

His father in law John Verney, who had been so unwilling to allow the marriage, writes to John's mother (old "Madam Lovett") in Dublin:

*With grief so I pen to paper on the sad ocassion of our great loss by the death of dear Mr. Lovett I bear a due share of sorrow with you, he being a most dutiful son, the kindest of husbands, a loving father and a true friend, all which perfections rarely centre in one man as they did in him for which he is now among the blessed though we are deprived of the happiness of his converse.* [VL (I), p. 212]

John wrote his will on the fourth of August 1709 and made Mary his wife his main beneficiary.

#### Mary Lovett Disposes of her Lighthouse.

After the death of her husband, Mary (Verney) Lovett began the long and wearisome process of trying to dispose of her lighthouse. She finally sold her interest in it to a syndicate formed by Mr. Rudyard for £24,000, a price which was not really adequate, and indeed the widow writes to her

father her opinion that: *Mr. Rudyerd made more out of my dear husband than he made by any of his trading .*

The Verney Letters make mention of 'Mary's troubles' when it comes to her attempts to off load the lighthouse and Ralph Palmer (II) was much caught up in trying to help settle his niece's affairs, but not at first, as he notes in a letter to his nephew on 9<sup>th</sup> December 1710:

*I know nothing how your Sister Lovett's matters go, for she has taken no notice of them to me, though I have been frequently with her. My Lord has given her up all the writings which I think he did not do well with, since she has taken the executorship upon her; for if she should marry again and has all the writings in her possession, I cannot see what can be done, though I hope she never will ... There is the mortgage of the lighthouse to us and the Bonds that was advised to be sued by this means in the Executor's hands, who are to make them good, but this is inter nous, I shall mention none else. [VL (1), p. 352].*

But several years later Palmer is found much more involved in his niece's legal wrangles.

Mary Lovett writing on 28<sup>th</sup> May 1713:

*The bill in Chancery for sale of the Light house must be brought in the name of some of the mortgagees against the executors of Colonel Lovett and his son Verney, and if my trustees having the first mortgage would be plaintives with the other mortgagees it would be more easy and less expensive than to be defendants, and save them the trouble of putting in answers.*

*Therefore says he, if you please to write to Mr. Palmer about this matter I will attend him and know his pleasure and take his direction, and proceed accordingly. [VL (1), p. 353]*

Ralph Palmer writes to his nephew Ralph Verney on 2<sup>nd</sup> June 1713 about his niece's problems and that he expects that an Act of Parliament should be obtained for the sale of Colonel Lovett's estate; since to do so in Chancery would take longer and be more expensive.

*You may remember at the last conference we had it was resolved that an Act of Parliament should be obtained for the sale of Col. Lovett's increase; and why this has not been pushed on this session is matter of wonder to us. Now the sale of the*

*lighthouse is proposed by decree in Chancery only ...* [Historical Commission Manuscripts]

Ralph Palmer writes on 21<sup>st</sup> December 1714 to Ralph Verney.

*I had a letter from your sister Lovett. Mr Tighe is going for Ireland so all the business will fall upon her here. He will reduce himself to 300 pa rather than there be worry'd, as he is he says, for his uncle's [John Lovett's] debts. She [Mary] says Bob Lovett is of age now something surely should be done with that estate for her £6000 [marriage portion]. She desires me to inspect Mr. Noyes his Accounts, which I am very ready to do for her or anything that I am able. I hope in a little time there will be a decree for selling this (inchanting) Lighthouse. She has been paid all of that Interest to Midsummer. I hope she gives you sometime an account of her affairs which I think in duty and she ought to do, as well in prudence and comfort to herself. Her eldest boy [Verney Lovett] she says is very puiny; they are both at school together [Rugby]. [VL (1), p. 360]*



A one shilling coin showing the Eddystone Lighthouse  
© Trustees of the British Museum

On 29<sup>th</sup> March 1715 Palmer writes:

*Niece Lovett is come to town with Miss Betty [Verney] and her Evidences. It seems now they apprehend (the Solicitors I mean) that my Lord Ch[ancellor] will not make a decree till the Mortgaged Deeds are all proved in the examiner's office. I am sorry there should be such knavery in business .... There is no other reason besides prolonging the affair and increasing their own Bills. [VL (I), p. ? ]*

Finally, after six years of negotiations, Ralph Palmer can report to Ralph Verney on 24<sup>th</sup> July 1716 that the business is finally over:

*You sister Lovett has the Resolution of [Trinity House](#) in her favour, and dined with us on Saturday on a piece of Sir Thomas Cave's venison. She is going down thither on Friday, as does this day Mrs. Porter (the Player) to entertain our friends at Middle Claydon, for whom my Lord [John Verney] sends his coach and six horses to Aylsbury, with a most complimentary Assurance that she and whomever she brings with her, shall be most heartily welcome there. Mine, my Dearest, and Aunts, best respects to my good Niece, your Dear Self and Sweet little ones. [VL (1), p. 361]*

#### The Eddystone Lighthouse Picture

Inscribed on the frame of the picture shown below (left) is the following:

*Presented to John Verney, Viscount Fermanagh, Aug 4, 1708 by his Son-in-Law Col JOHN Lovett, OWNER of the Eddystone rock & BUILDER of this Lighthouse.*

There is also a handwritten label on the reverse which reads in part:

*The Eddystone Lighthouse built at the expence of Colonel John Lovett & Mary Verney his wife, who had this picture painted for his father in law Lord Fermanagh, at Claydon House opened July 28 1708.*

The painting was made by the aptly named Dutch artist Isaac Sailmaker (1633-1721).

A note on the version of Sailmaker's painting at the National Maritime Museum in Greenwich comments that the painting has an unbroken 300 year provenance; and that there were four versions of the painting each commissioned in 1708 by John Lovett. One of these can be seen at Claydon House. Another was lost in a fire at Trinity House.

Print copies of Sailmaker's painting were soon made and sold to the public as the following advertisement from *The Post Boy*, 1<sup>st</sup> March 1709 shows:



This Day is publish'd,  
**A**N Exact Prospect and Section of the Light House  
on the Eddystone-Rock off of Plimouth, rebuilt pursuant to  
an Act of Parliament made the 4th and 5th Years of the Reign of Her  
Sacred Majesty Queen Ann; by the Direction and Care of the Hon.  
Col. Lovett and Mr. J. Rudyard, Gent. Engraven by Mr. Sturt; and  
sold by Philip Overton, Print and Map-Seller, at the Golden Buck  
against St. Dunstan's Church, Fleetstreet. Price 1 s. 6 d.

Below left Sailmaker's oil painting of the Eddystone  
Lighthouse and right Sturt's diagrammatic print of the same.



Sailmaker's oil painting of the Eddystone  
© Trustees of the Maritime Museum, Greenwich.



© The Trustees of the British Museum

Isaac Sailmaker's view includes four war ships identified by Lovett in 1708 as the *Roebuck* 42 guns, on the left, together with the *Charles* a galley of 36 guns, the *Swallow* with 32 guns and the ketch *Aldbrough* with 24 guns on the right. All these attended on the construction of the lighthouse, while those beyond bear the flags of the countries who contributed financially to the project. Plymouth harbour is visible in the background. Edward Chaloner RN, a Palmer kinsman, was an officer at the time on board the *Swallow* (see Chaloner Family).

According to the National Maritime Museum, the picture provides a rare and striking image of an offshore lighthouse, showing the iron bolts set into the rock to hold down the structure. The circular staircase leading up from the rock to the entrance is also clearly shown. The lantern's light was supplied by 24 candles. A figure can be seen on the balcony of the lantern, looking out towards the shipping with a telescope.

It was first lit in 1709 and lasted until it burnt down in 1755, after a spark from one of the candles used to illuminate it set it on fire.

### Mary (Verney) Lovett Visits Liscombe House

The following is extracted from: *The Mirror of Literature, Amusement, and Instruction*, (1836) Volume 28, by Reuben Percy and John Timbs.

In a pocket-book of Mary (Verney) Lovett's is the following memorandum: "Soon after my marriage, I rode over to see Liscombe, the ancient seat of my husband's family, being only about twelve miles from my father's. Mr. Lovett, to whom it belongs, not residing at it, allowed Mr. Sandby, a very respectable man, the clergyman of the parish, to live in the house, who received us with great politeness. The house is very old and very gloomy, surrounded with high walls and old trees, but it has a venerable appearance.

You enter through a great gateway into a court, round which the house and chapel is built. The windows, all of stone, give it more the look of a monastery than a mansion; but Mr. Sandby, to whom I made the remark, assured me I must not judge from appearances, for though it might have a gloomy outside, there were more joyful faces in it than in any house in the county, for there were more marriages in Liscombe chapel than in any three churches in the neighbourhood. From the court you enter the great hall, which is a large room, and is entirely covered with old armour. The gentleman assured me, they were particularly curious and endeavoured to explain to me their different uses; but I begged to be excused, as I did not intend murdering men. "Well, Madam," says Mr. Sandby, "I will shew you something more in your own way presently".



Liscombe House, the Lovett's Home

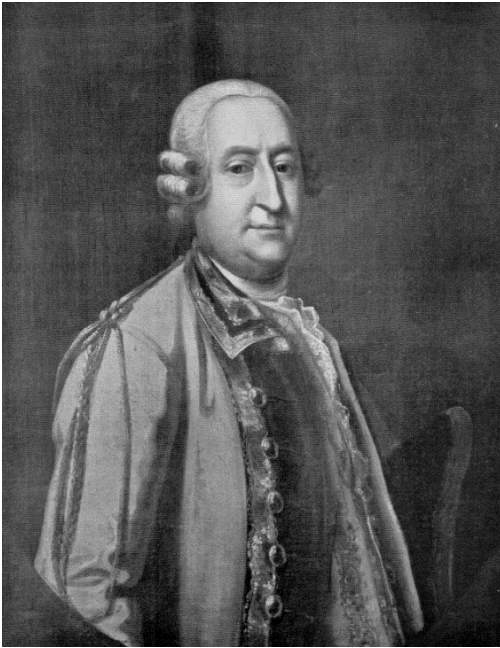
From thence we proceeded through a variety of long passages and little rooms, for except the hall and the drawing room over it, which is a large and very handsome room, they are all small, but from their numbers must have held a very large family; as Mr. Sandby assured me, of all sizes, there were more than fifty. But what with the old tapestry, and the dark gilt leather furniture and black oak (for I believe this family considered paint as great an abomination in their house as they would on the faces of their wives and daughters), I never saw any place more calculated to induce one to change this world for another.

We came at last to the nursery, and Mr. Sandby directed my attention to something in a great old frame over the chimney, but which being in the old black letter, like a church Bible, I could not read a word of. "That, Madam," says he, "is the nursery song of this family, founded on the two characters of the warrior and the lover, which tradition represents as eminently united in William Lovett, the founder of this house". The song is as follows:

May my child be as stout,  
May my child be as strong,  
And my brave boy love also as long  
As Willy of Normandy.

From the nursery we proceeded to a little closet with a thousand locks. Mr. Sandby shewed us a chest full of papers and parchments, which, he said, were the different grants and appointments for some centuries of this family; and in my time I never saw anything more beautifully illumined than some of them were. He said the chest contained as curious a collection of letters as were in the possession of any private family in the kingdom. He said the letters were in general from some of the first people in the Court of James and Charles.

Verney Lovett (1705 – 1771)



Verney Lovett, MP  
© Claydon House Trust

Verney Lovett was the great grandson of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer and the second child and first son of John and Mary (Verney) Lovett. His birth was noted by his grandfather John Verney:

On Sunday December 2 1705, at Middle Claydon, Daughter Lovett was Delivered of a Boy, which on Saturday 8th December was Christened Verney: Gossips Edward Brabazon Earl of Meath (for whom stood Ralph Verney [II]), John Verney Lord Viscount Fermanagh and Mrs Lettice Piggott the Godmother . [VL (1), p. 144 and p. 199]

Verney Lovett was educated at Rugby and then Trinity College,

Dublin.

While growing up, his mother writing to her father John Verney on 25<sup>th</sup> March 1708 notes that:

*Verney is grown one of the finest boys in Ireland, and is as Bold as a lion and talks everything.* [VL (I), p. 201]

Later on she was much engaged in finding a suitable tutor for her son to prepare him for college and in this matter she consulted her 'uncle Palmer'.

And she writes to her brother Ralph in November 1720:

*... for I would have your judgment (about two candidates as tutor) and my Uncle's too, of the men ... I wish for a Gentelley behaved & bright ingenious Man in conversation which might engage youth to delight in their company, and inspire them with Noble and Honourable thoughts & Principles ... And [the choice of a proper tutor] is So great a Consequence that I am vastly Perplexed how to do it rightly.* [VL (II), pp. 68-69]

She encloses two letters for her uncle Palmer written by candidates for the position of tutor for her son Verney

asking him to judge which one would be the most suitable. Later, Mary decided to send her sons to Rugby school where they joined their Cave cousins Verney and Thomas.

After Rugby, Verney Lovett was entered into Trinity College, Dublin, but after less than a year there, he got into an unexplained scrape, and his disgrace was *too public to enter in there* [Trinity] *again*.

The family immediately set about trying what means they could to send Verney as far away as possible until the scandal could be forgotten.

His mother writes to her brother Ralph Verney (II) in August 1724:

*I am greatly obliged to you and my good Uncle [Palmer] for thinking of my Miserable Misfortunes, and the most likely ways to extricate me ... I wish to God he [her son Verney Lovett] were safe with a good east India Captain, it being what I liked best for him, but if he be not willing to go I shall be glad to know how far you think I may proceed by way of force, and what else is to be done, for you will find by the enclosed there is no hopes of his Study [i.e. continuing at Trinity] ... I will do all in my power, and all that you and my Uncle [Palmer] thinks I may do towards bringing him to an India voyage, and if that don't succeed I don't know what will become of him. [VL (2), p. 222]*

In a letter written in October 1724 Mary notes that:

*... My uncle [Palmer] mentions his [her son's] returning to college again, but that I believe cannot be (I wish it could), for his disgrace is too public to enter in there again, and he has forfeited his friends there, so he is altogether unqualified for the place ... [VL (2), p. 222]*





Trinity College Dublin from whence Verney Lovett was expelled.  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

After his expulsion from Trinity, there follows more than seven years during which what became of Verney Lovett is not known and then, in 1732, he obtained a commission in the 39<sup>th</sup> Regiment of foot as an ensign and he sailed away with it to India.

However, on account of his health he returned to England and on his way home he had a fortunate escape. The ship that he was sailing in was engaged by three French men-of-war; but Verney's ship defended itself so gallantly, that the French finally gave over the contest.

Upon this occasion, Verney Lovett took upon himself the command of the small arms, and contributed (as it was acknowledged) not a little to their success. He used to mention, with great concern, a circumstance that happened at the time. When the ships were clearing for action, he met a seaman, with a little box of his [Verney's], containing diamonds and pearls to the value of about six thousand pounds, coming up with it, to throw it overboard. But, by a fee, and some entreaties, he [Verney] prevailed on him to return with it and leave it below. [V1 (?), p. ]

On his return to England Verney continued his military career as the last paragraph in the following announcement indicates:

to ~~Tuesday~~ February 19, 1754.

*Whitehall, February 18.*

The King has been pleased to constitute and appoint the Right Honourable Henry Earl of Pembroke, to be Captain of that Company whereof ——— Wharton, Esq; was late Captain in the First, or the King's Regiment of Dragoon Guards, commanded by Humphry Bland, Esq; Lieutenant General of His Majesty's Forces. And

Humphry Bland, Gent. to be a Cornet in the said Regiment.

The King has been pleased to constitute and appoint Verney Lovett, Esq; to be Major in the Regiment of Foot commanded by Colonel John Adlercron.

In 1761 Lovett stood for a parliamentary election as a Tory candidate for Wendover. His candidacy was made possible by and supported by his cousin Ralph Verney (III). However, Lovett's cousin's loyalties soon shifted as Ralph (III) became increasingly infatuated by the Whig Edmund Burke. In pursuit of Edmund, Ralph demanded that Lovett give up his Wendover seat in favour of Burke and in exchange Ralph would make sure Lovett received a civil or military place. On 17<sup>th</sup> December 1763 Ralph wrote to George Grenville:

*I understand from Lord Sandwich that you were well inclined to indulge me in my desire of making a vacancy in Parliament for my friend Mr. [Edmund] Burke, by giving Major Lovett some place of about £200 a year ... You will permit me to mention that as Mr. Lovett vacates his seat to oblige me, I would naturally wish him to do it in the way that might be most pleasing to him. He is a military man and would prefer a little military government, something under £200 a year, to any other thing even exceeding that sum.*

In November 1765, as a favor to his Verney cousin, Lovett gave up his Wendover seat, and even then he did so without any compensation. (See [The History of Parliament](#)). On 23<sup>rd</sup> December 1765 Edmund Burke took over Lovett's seat whereupon Burke became an 'instantaneous success in the House' and Ralph was promoted to the Privy Council:

*From the LONDON GAZETTE.*  
*St. James's, Nov. 22.*  
**T**HIS day the Right Honourable Ralph Earl Verney, was by his Majesty's command, sworn of his Majesty's Most Honourable Privy Council, and took his place at the board accordingly.

*Public Ledger 25<sup>th</sup> November 1765*

After quitting parliament Verney Lovett seems to have spent the rest of his life as a man of leisure.

He frequently visited his relations in Ireland and was a general favourite with them, possibly because he was an old bachelor and had amassed by some means a not inconsiderable little fortune ... [VL (?), p. ?]

Verney died on 10<sup>th</sup> September 1771 'at his apartments in St. Martin's-lane' London:

**of the Board of Ordnance. At his apartments in St. Martin's-lane, Verney Lovett, Esq. At his house in**

17<sup>th</sup> September 1771

His body was interred in the family vault at Soulbury, Buckinghamshire and where a pyramid of black marble was placed to which was affixed a shield with the arms of Lovett and below:

Gratitude and Affection  
Erected this Monument to the memory of  
Major Verney LOVETT.  
He was the son of Col. John  
LOVETT and the Honble. Mary VERNEY.  
He departed this life the 10th day of  
September 1771, aged 66 years.

He wrote his will on 17<sup>th</sup> August 1769 and left most of his estate to the children of his half brother Jonathan Lovett. He added a codicil in September 1771. The will has been transcribed as part of the *Five Papers Relating to the Barony of Bray* and can be [read here](#).

### John Lovett, RN (1707 – 1758)

John and Mary (Verney) Lovett's second son was born in June 1707 at Dublin and baptised John on 30<sup>th</sup> June [VL (I), p. 201]. His godparents were Judge Coote, Mr. Wayer and his aunt Elizabeth [Betty] Verney.

When John was just 8 years old his mother wrote to her father on 2<sup>nd</sup> October 1714 and described him as:

*... a lusty Boy, and truly his behaviours is better than could be expected considering his being so remote from anything that was genteel [being at Rugby School]; his speech indeed is Broken but I hope in time it will wear off.* [VL (1), p. 359].

In 1734 John joined the navy and in 1739 was a lieutenant under Admiral Vernon at the taking of Porto Bello. In June 1741 he took command of *HMS Otter*, an eight-gun sloop that had been launched in 1721 but which was later wrecked off Aldeburgh on 14<sup>th</sup> January 1742. Between November 1741 and June 1743 he can be found in command of *HMS Neptune*.



Above right, a fan-leaf, with a view of Portobello, the harbour, the fortress, and the six ships under Admiral Vernon, effecting the capture of Portobello in 1739. Left a view of the town and harbour © The Trustees of the British Museum

In 1744 John was captain of the *Kingston*, a line-of-battle ship, which was involved in the engagement with the French and Spanish fleets off Toulon under Admiral Thomas Matthews. His last command was between 1745 and 1746 as Captain of the *Princess Caroline*.



Admiral Edward Vernon (1684-1757)  
© The Government Art Collection



Admiral Thomas Matthews (1676 – 1751)  
© The National Maritime Museum

According to the *Verney Memoirs* the Admiralty records him as sitting on one or two interesting Courts Martials.

There is a trace of John in the form of a letter to his uncle, Ralph Verney (II), dated 2<sup>nd</sup> May 1743, when aboard his ship, the *Neptune*, while taking part in the blockade of the Spanish fleet at Toulon. In this letter he says:

*We still remain here as an Embargo on them [The French], and everybody knows well a Waiter's Birth [sic] is not over and above agreeable ... The other Day, wee was a little alarm'd it being reported the Spaniards was comeing out of their Nest Toulon, and We all ready to get Under Sail to receive and give them Battle; but alas it was nothing but a Spanysh Puff: the Occasion of the report was, the Spanysh Admiral and all his Ships gott their Topmasts and Yards up as a compliment to Monsieur Mirapois the French General of this Province, he Dining on Board, the Spanish Admiral's ship. [VL (2) , p. 225]*

In 1758 John Lovett pre-deceased his mother, brother, and sister:

**John Lovett, Esq; at Mortlake in Surry, a  
Captain in his Majcity's Navy.**

23<sup>rd</sup> February 1758

John had written his on 1<sup>st</sup> Ocotber 1751 in which, for the most part, he leaves his estate to his brother and sister.



Their mother, Mary (Verney) Lovett, having out-lived her husband by 34 years, and her son John, died at Chelsea in April 1769.

***Died.] Wednesday, at his House in Ormond-Street, Lascoe Hyde, Esq.—Thursday, at her House at Chelsea, the Hon. Mrs. Lovett.***

*St. James's Chronicle: 20<sup>th</sup> April – 22<sup>nd</sup> April 1769.*

Mary was buried in the same vault at Soulbury on 28<sup>th</sup> of that month. [VL (2), p. 225]. Below John Lovett's grandson and his



Jonathan Lovett (1722-1770 and his wife Eleanor (Mansergh) Lovett (1720-1786); Jonathan was the grandson of Colonel John Lovett by his first wife Susannah. In the Public Domain; [Bonham's Auction](#)

### Elizabeth Lovett and Queen Anne's Healing Touch

On 15<sup>th</sup> July 1704 Colonel Lovett wrote to his father in law to let him know that he had a granddaughter:

*I thank God this afternoon about 4 o'clock your daughter [Mary] made you a Grandfather, but itt is a girle ... I sent for my Mother and those that we thought*

*convenient ... we are all very happy, we only want the Satisfactions of our Relations and friends, but hope next Summer we shall meet . [VL (I) , p. 198] .*

And in turn, John Verney noted in his pocket book:

On July 15<sup>th</sup>, 1704, at Dublin Mary Lovet was delivered of a girl, christened Elizabeth. Gossips [godparents] were [the baby's two grandmothers and her great grandfather] Lady Fermanagh, Mrs Lovett, and Ralph Palmer (I), for whom stood Colonel Lovett. [VL (1) , p. 144]

Elizabeth Lovett suffered from Scrofula, a term that is used for lymphadenopathy of the neck, which usually arises from an infection in the lymph nodes. It results in a chronic painless swelling of the neck but as the lesion progresses, skin becomes adhered to the mass and may rupture, forming an open wound. Despite all this Elizabeth lived to be over seventy years old.

In a letter dated 24<sup>th</sup> July 1716 Ralph Palmer (II) mentions his great niece's Scrofula:

*... Poor Miss Lovett's Neck is very bad, I advised her to let Cyprianus see it for his opinion and then I believe the Evil Parson [William Vickers] if he thinks tis that distemper [Scrofula] .*

Elizabeth's neck caused the family much anxiety and one of the remedies sort for it was to have Queen Anne use her 'healing powers' and place her hands on Elizabeth in hope of a cure. Her mother succeeded in making the apointment and the following article, which appeared in [\*The Berkshire Archaeological Journal\*](#), (1897) Volumes 3-4, pp. 103-104 and written by Mrs Arden Lovett, gives some of the details.

Among the many quaint superstitions which were still prevalent at the beginning of last century, there were few which seem more incredible at the present day than the one so firmly believed in by our ancestors of the power possessed by the Sovereign to heal, by a touch, any persons suffering from that terrible malady, The King's Evil [Scrofula] .

The superstition dates back as far as the reign of Edward the Confessor, 1058, and in the reign of King Charles II, no fewer than 92,107 persons were touched; and according to Wiseman, the King's physician, they were nearly all healed.

Queen Anne, in the London Gazette, of 12 March, 1712, announced her intention to touch publicly.

And, four months before her Majesty's death, she consented to use her credited power on Elizabeth Lovett. Among the Verney papers at Claydon House, there are interesting letters, written at the time, from Mary (Verney) Lovett to her father, John Verney, in which she expresses her great wish to have her afflicted daughter touched by the Queen. She also relates the difficulties she experienced after she attained her desire. It is probable that the difficulty arose from the then state of the Queen's health, as she died soon after.



Queen Anne  
© National Portrait Gallery, London



King Charles II applying his healing powers  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

In the first letter in which mention is made of this subject, dated London, 15<sup>th</sup> May 1714, Mrs. Lovett wrote:

*I had writ to you before now but that I stayed to give you some account of what I can get done for my poor girl. I shewed her to a famous surgeon, one Blundall, who assures me it is the evil, and told me all that had been done for her and all that I can doe for her, signifies nothing—he said shes young and will out grow it but he woud by noe means have me tamper with her nor give her any more phisick for of that he says she has had to much already which he fears has made her consumptive. She must entirely leave of malt drink and wine and he bid me get her touched which I fear I have not at*

*this time interest enough to doe—for the Queen disorders her self by preparing herself to touch that noe one about her cares she should doe it for she fasts the day before and abstains severall days which they think does her hurt. I have also shewed her to Mr. Williams the surgeon and he says the very same thing as Mr. Blundall says and they both bid me leave of her plaister and all medicines but they cut her an issue in her arm.*

In another letter Mary writes from London, dated 20<sup>th</sup> May 1714:

*As to the child I am advised by all the surgeons to doe nothing to her for they say more phisick will bring her into a consumption besides if she is touched nothing must be done to her after it and I have great hopes the Queen will touch her. Lady Denbigh has been so kind to speak for me to the Queen, and there is interest making for another young Lady to be touched so we hope they will both be done together. The Queen's answer was she will not doe it this week but Lady Denbigh will goe to her again the beginning of next ; indeed she runs about to all the bed Chamber Ladys, and does all thats possible for me, and will goe with the child herself to the Queen so every body says as long as I have thoughts of getting her touched I must doe nothing else to her otherwise I would have had Viccars<sup>59</sup> under take her though at present I hear his fame much cryed down but in this case I should be willing to try all means. There is some that I know in town who the Queen touched last year that had severall sores on them but are now as I am; pray God grant the like to my poor Bess. [VL (1) , p. 357]*

That Lady Denbigh was successful in her mission is evident from the following extract dated 29<sup>th</sup> May 1714:

*I this morning set forward dear little Bess for Claydon where I pray God she safe arrived before this and I pray God the means that has been used for her may prove effectual she must take care of her gold and ware it about her neck both night and day and rub the place that swelled with it every morning.*

The 'gold' was called an 'Angel' and was a figure of St. George overcoming the dragon, that was hung about the neck by a white ribbon. Shown below 'the gold' that was hung about the neck of Samuel Johnson as a child by Queen Anne.

---

<sup>59</sup> The Reverend William Vickers.



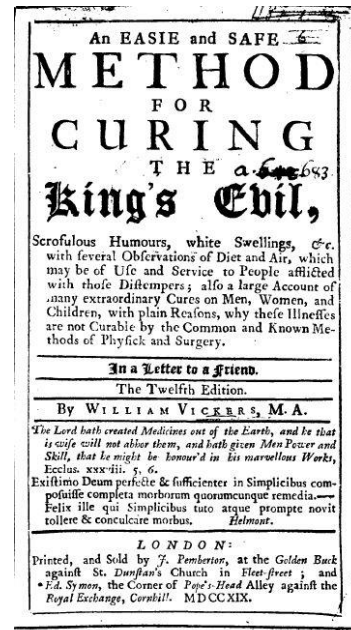
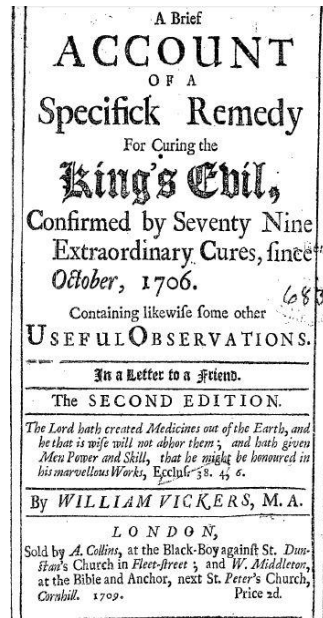
Samuel Johnson's 'gold'  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

At this point the interesting subject drops out of the correspondence, and it is to be regretted that Mary Lovett gave no account in her letters of the actual ceremony .  
[VL (1), pp. 358-359]

The custom of 'touching' was discontinued by George I on his accession to the throne in 1714, so Elizabeth Lovett may well have been the last person in England to have been 'touched'.

The reverend William Vickers, who had had married Penelope Stewkley, the daughter of Mary (Verney) Lovett's great aunt Lady Gardiner, had added the art of Medicine to that of Divinity by setting himself up as someone capable of curing the 'King's Evil' [VL (1), p. 380]. How the medical profession took to this intrusion upon their field by a religious man we do not know, but Vickers appears to have had a successful practice and he published two books on the subject. In consequence of his pretensions to cure the King's Evil he was styled by the family as 'The Evil Doctor' or 'Evil Clergyman'. Below title pages of two books written by Vickers on the subject of the 'King's Evil'.





In *The Verney Letters* there is a 'post script' to Elizabeth Lovett's "touching" episode in the form of a letter from Ralph Palmer (1714) who describes how the Reverend Vickers flew into a temper because, after returning from the Queen's 'touching' ceremony, all the family's attention was focused on Elizabeth Lovett and not on him.

*When Ms. [Elizabeth] Lovett came home we were all at Mrs. Adams' and we all got about her, and Mr. Vickers was there but stood behind us, and we were so busy asking the child questions that we did not see him, which put him into such a passion that he flew out of the room with great resentment, and he fell upon neice Lovett in the other room so like a pragmatistical cox comb, that I double rejoice he is not beneficed at Steeple Claydon, for he would be I fear a very troublesome neighbour to you. I pray God keep him from Middle Claydon, if that should drop in my Lord's time. [VL (1), p. 358]*

The rage that Palmer describes may also have been brought on by professional jealousy as William Vickers' reputation for curing the 'King's Evil' was well established but Mary Lovett and her daughter had chosen not to avail themselves of the 'Evil Doctor's' skills.

According to the brass which is to her memory in the chancel of All Saints' Church, Soulbury in Buckinghamshire, Elizabeth Lovett lived till the year 1775, sixty-one years after she had been "touched" by the Queen.

Elizabeth benefitted from the wills of her mother and two brothers. She mentions in her will that there is an agreement among five parties (all of whom she names) which entitled her to receive three thousand pounds: ... **the Payment whereof is secured to me out of and upon certain Messuages, Lands, Lands, and Hereditaments situate at Roydon in the County of Essex.** This land might well have originally been a part of the Palmer family's estate that had somehow devolved to Elizabeth (See the [\*Barony of Bray Papers\*](#)).

At Soulbury church there is a brass plate that lists the dates of deaths of each member of John's family:

COL. JOHN LOVETT, M.P., OB. 1710,  
AND HIS WIFE  
THE HON<sup>BLE</sup> MARY VERNEY, 1769  
SHE WAS THE DAUGHTER OF LORD  
VISCOUNT FERMANAGH  
OF MIDDLE CLAYDON, BUCKS.  
THEIR 1<sup>ST</sup> SON,  
VERNEY, M.P., AND MAJOR IN THE ARMY,  
DIED UNMARRIED, 1771,  
AS DID THEIR SECOND SON,  
JOHN, A POST CAP<sup>TN</sup> IN THE ROYAL NAVY,  
1758;  
AND ALSO ELIZABETH THEIR DAUGHTER,  
1775.  
THEY ARE ALL BURIED IN THIS VAULT.

### Margaret Verney (1685-1774)

Margaret Verney was born in 1685, the youngest daughter of John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney.

Unlike her sister Mary whose path to marriage was strewn with obstacles, mostly laid by her father, Margaret's to Thomas Cave, was quite the opposite: swift and approved of by the entire Verney family. The only person who objected was her future father in law Sir Roger Cave MP. Thomas's mother was Martha Browne, the daughter of John Browne of Eydon ('Clerk to the Parliament'). After Martha's decease (which occurred circa 1691) Sir Roger Cave married Mary

Bromley, the daughter of William Bromley, the Speaker of the House of Commons.

The Verney and the Cave families had known each other for many years. John Verney's aunt, Margaret (Peg) Elmes, had nursed Thomas Cave's great grandmother Penelope (the daughter of Lord Wenman) at Stanford and after Lady Cave died Peg Elmes stayed on to nurse Sir Roger and his siblings. Margaret's brother, Ralph Verney (II), was well acquainted with Thomas Cave as they had both been at Oxford together.

So when Sir Roger adamantly refused to even consider the alliance, the Verneys were filled with indignation. Despite Sir Roger's vehement opposition, Margaret married Thomas Cave on 20<sup>th</sup> February 1703 at St. Giles in the Fields. However, this was only achieved by preventing Sir Roger from knowing in which church the couple was to be married, despite his best efforts to find out and so prevent the event from happening.



William Bromley Speaker of the House of Commons whose daughter Mary married Sir Roger Cave © The Parliamentary Art Collection

Thomas Cave was born on 19<sup>th</sup> April 1681, the eldest son of Sir Roger and Martha (Browne) Cave and was thus 23 years old at the time of his marriage while his bride was eighteen. A letter from Lady Gardiner written to her nephew John Verney on 27<sup>th</sup> February 1703 reveals the basis for Sir Roger's antagonism:

*I should be glad to hear Sir Roger Cave's anger was appeased, since he had by his hard usage to his son provoked him to transgress in not acquainting him with his intentions [to marry], which is all the ill he has done, since in all other respects but money the advantage is on his side [Cave's]. I am sure his maintenance was poor for a son whose mother brought £30,000, and if he [Sir Roger] storms like a mad man and says his [Thomas's] sisters shall suffer by it [the marriage], to whom he designed five thousand a piece if he [Thomas] had married Mrs. Cole [a rich widow], and*

*now he will give them no more than to keep them from starving. Neither will he allow his son but 80 pounds a year to keep him from starving. .... But I hope all his [family] persuades him to be more kind and just, and I hope Mr Bromley [Sir Roger's brother in law] is so wise as to advise him to comply with you in some reasonable manner, and pray it may end to the advantage of the young couple.* [VL (1), p. 133]

On hearing of his granddaughter's marriage, Ralph Palmer (I) writes to John Verney on 20<sup>th</sup> February 1703:

*Sir John .... I send you enclosed what news I have, and with it in particular wish you joy in your son-in-law; we were extremely surprised hearing nothing of it till we saw them.*



Lady Penelope (Wenman) Cave the mother of Sir Roger Cave and the grandmother of Sir Thomas, 3<sup>rd</sup> Bart. © Northampton Museums & Art Gallery

*God in mercy bless them together and hearty wishes and prayers of all friends here. It is a great matter, I wish their happiness answer...* [VL (I), p. 134]

Palmer was also sure that they must have had a great deal of company and much joy and mirth at Claydon ... *as now attends marriage folk* [VL (1), p. 134].

Thomas Cave writes to his father in law on 24<sup>th</sup> February 1703:

*Honoured Sir – If I have been too long without paying you my Dutiful thanks, be pleased to suppose my present ecstasy of joy as the sole occasion of my neglect; and so pardon me promising to make it chiefly my endeavor, during my life, to merit the happiness I now enjoy; and to increase in your favour, that I may justly subscribe myself now and ever*

*Honoured Sir, your dutiful son Thomas Cave Sir, I pray my love to both sisters [Betty Verney and Mary (Verney) Lovett] and Service to all my friends.* [VL (1), pp. 134-135]

John Verney replies the next day:

*I received yours of the 24<sup>th</sup> inst., and wish you all the felicities of a married life. I hope my daughter will carry herself so well towards your relations, as to get their good*

*liking and love, as well as yours. I heartily pray to the Almighty for a long continuance of both your lives in all happiness, wishing you a good journey hither, where you shall be very kindly welcome to your affectionate Father in Law. John Verney.*

*P.S. My blessing to your wife and my daughters [Betty] love and service to you both.* [VL (1), p. 135]

Sir Roger Cave's intransigence did not last long as in October of 1703 he died and Elizabeth (Verney) Adams notes in a letter to her nephew John Verney dated 11<sup>th</sup> of that month:

*I should not so soon trouble you with another one of my scribbles, but to wish you joy of niece Cave's good fortune. Yesterday in the church I was told of Sir Roger Cave's death, and although it is not usual custom to rejoice at anyone's death, tho' my greatest enemy, yet I must confess I could not be so sorry for his as I ought to have been, because I was told what spiteful designs he had in his head against my nephew [Thomas Cave]; but I hope he died in a better humour than he lived in, which I heartily wish for his sake.* [VL (1), p. 139]

Sir Roger left a will which at first sight looked as if he had mistreated his son, but one opinion was that: *Sir Roger Cave's harsh will, if it be strictly examined will be found more to Sir Thomas's advantage than his enemies imagine.* [VL (1), p. 140]

Having married hurriedly, and with no settlement, Sir John Verney seized upon the death of Sir Roger as an opportunity to point out to his son in law's attorney (Mr. Martin) where his client's duties now lay.

*17<sup>th</sup> February 1704. By a letter from Sir Thomas Cave I understand he had been to your chambers ... where I hope he found you and told you his errand. About a year since he married my daughter when his father was living. There was no Settlement made, but now he is willing and ready to make her a jointure of £600 per annum out of those lands which were settled on his mother [Martha Browne] and her issue at his father Sir Roger's first marriage to his first wife, who was old Mr Browne the clerk of the Parliament's daughter. £3,000 is*



Basil, Earl Denbigh godfather to Verney Cave. [In the public domain](#)



*my daughter's portion, more than what's above we have not yet discussed, so when he comes to you again pray ask him what settlements he'll make on his eldest son and what on younger children and maintenance, and what if but one daughter and no son, and what if 2 or more daughters and no son. You tell him these instructions are usually given to Council for the drawing up of Settlements. If you think it proper for me to come to town about this business, I will come to town on purpose.* [VL (1), pp. 140-141]



Margaret (Verney) Cave © The Claydon House Trust

Unfortunately, despite his father in law's advice, the settlement question threatened to unsettle their relationship.

Sir Thomas wrote indignantly that: *between Man and Man I have set honour for my mark* to which Verney replies on 29<sup>th</sup>

February 1704: *I hope nobody can say that I have failed or forfeited Honour in any particular.* [VL (1), p 141]

Eventually, settlements were made with which all parties could be satisfied.

Thomas and Margaret (Verney) Cave had four children<sup>60</sup>: 1. Verney (1705-1734); 2. Elizabeth (1706-1755); 3. Penelope (1709-1762); and 4) Thomas (1712-1762).

Margaret Verney's husband, Thomas Cave 3<sup>rd</sup> Bart., was educated at Rugby School and Christ Church College, Oxford. In 1705, he was appointed Deputy Lieutenant of Northamptonshire, and in 1711 he stood successfully for Leicestershire in a by-election. Cave was also elected in the 1713 general election unchallenged, and returned again in the 1715 general election after a withdrawal by his Whig opponent. He represented the constituency as a Tory in the House of Commons until his death in 1719. [See [The History of Parliament](#)]

---

<sup>60</sup> *Stanford church and its registers, &c.* By William Henry Sandon

His wife's uncle Ralph Palmer did not altogether approve of Cave's parliamentary activities and in a letter to Cave's brother in law, Ralph Verney (II), dated 21<sup>st</sup> December 1714 he writes that:

*The little knight [Sir Thomas Cave] is busy as a Bee, he has two powerful [Parliamentary] adversaries, the Duke of Rutland and Lord Harborough. I am sorry for his Expenses, in my private thoughts he had better never had stood, but ---- . I hear there has been a Computation of the Annual Account of the Sallarys of the City List, which comes to 900,000 pounds a year. This the Court is resolved to reduce to 6, so though many have got places, they will lose a good slice of their revenue.*

He adds that his son Ralph Palmer (III)

*... holds mighty well, and is very full of his little cousins ...and often in Stories which he is wonderful fond of, and is much pleased with exploits along with his Cousin Jack [John Verney (II)] at Baddow. My father has had no return of his Fits, he is much as he used to be only more forgetful and melancholy. [VL (1), p. 360]*

Sir Thomas Cave's political ambitions, he was strongly Tory, not only led to vast expenses but also jeopardized his safety. His Tory politics verged toward the Jacobite and Whyman (p. 175) describes how Thomas began to fill his letters with coded images of dogs and horses in anticipation of a Jacobite rebellion. *The dog* [the Pretender] *is young but ready to go* Cave writes and his *...name is Beau, born near Cumberland. Now in arms*. But such letters only put the wind up Ralph Palmer (II) who found they *fright me out of my wits. He* [Cave] *is enough to bring anyone to Ng* [Newgate prison].<sup>61</sup>

Palmer's fears were not entirely misplaced as when Sir Thomas died it was found that his estate was much mortgaged as a consequence of his various electioneering expenses.

It is worth noting a letter that Margaret wrote to her father on 24<sup>th</sup> January 1707 while she and Thomas were in the full flush of their youth, happily married, and having children, as it mentions her great aunt Hester (Palmer)

---

<sup>61</sup>Ralph Palmer (II) to Ralph Verney (II) 27<sup>th</sup> December 1715 (Whyman, p. 259).

Cradock<sup>62</sup>, and two of their (unnamed) daughters. Margaret tells her father that she has been to visit her cousin [Penelope] Vickers and from there she went to:

***My Aunt Cradock's, who is so deeply in the tantrams again, and the two Virgins there still remain so ...*** [VL (1), p. 233]

Who are the two virgins? Sarah Cradock married Jonathon Boulter in 1713 so she qualifies, but her sister Sussanah had married John Banner in 1690 so she does not. There were other baptisms of other Cradock girls but we are unsure how far into adulthood they survived. An Elizabeth Cradock who may have lived to adulthood might be one of the 'virgins' but certainly Sarah must have been the target of one of Margaret's barbs.



Margaret Verney and her husband Sir Thomas Cave, 3rd Bart. © Claydon House Trust

The wider Cave family appear always to be a little out of humour with their Verney in laws and in turning down an invitation from his daughter Margaret to stay at Stanford

---

<sup>62</sup> Hester was the aunt of Margaret's mother Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney. Through her marriage to Richard Cradock she connects the Palmer family to the Man family, as Richard's sister Susannah is a direct ancestor of all living Mans and many who are no longer.

her father writes: . . . *your house will be pretty full with your husband's sisters (Eleanor and Mary), if not the Dowager Lady Cave: and it is not proper for us to come when they are there, considering how dearly they love us, and what discourse and nicknames some of 'em give us.* [VL (I), p. 142].

On the other hand, affection between the Caves and Palmers ran quite deep as on hearing that her uncle Ralph Palmer (II) was ill with an 'intermittent fever', Margaret makes *all speed to give him some comfort* [VL (I), p. 219]

On 21<sup>st</sup> April 1719, Sir Thomas Cave died suddenly aged thirty-nine; making his son Verney Cave the 4<sup>th</sup> Bart. He had been of robust health throughout his life and had prided himself on his wholesome outdoor life, his temperate habits, and constant exercise (mainly in the form of hunting). His letters too reflected a heartiness of spirit. He was buried at St. Nicholas, Stanford on 26<sup>th</sup> April.

**Laft Week Sir Thomas Cave, Bart. Knight of the Shire for the County of Leiceſter, arriv'd at his Seat there from London, and dy'd two Days afterward.**

2<sup>nd</sup> May 1719

His far less active and healthy brother in law Ralph Verney (II) survived him by another thirty years.

The news of Cave's sudden death first reached The Palmers at Chelsea and was conveyed thence to the Verneys at Claydon by their uncle in a letter dated 23<sup>rd</sup> April 1719:

*My Lord Since your Sister's [Betty Verney] arrival we have been alarmed with the sad news of Sir Thomas Cave's death, and my Lady [Margaret (Verney) Cave] is importunate with me to come down to her [at Stanford House]. I hope to God to find your Lordship there, or meet you at least; I shall go down in the Northampton Coach on Saturday and I have writ for their Chariot on Sunday morning. We are all extremely concerned as I daresay you are.* [VL (2), p. 62]

Thus the two Verney sisters, Mary Lovett and Margaret Cave, were left widows early on in their marriages and both were to live many years afterwards although neither re-married.

Unfortunately for Margaret, Thomas left his estate in such a state of disarray that six years after his death Ralph Palmer (II) is still busily engaged in trying to sort things out and on 29<sup>th</sup> April 1719 he writes to his nephew Ralph Verney at Claydon from the Cave's home at Stanford.

*My Lord I am sorry I was not so happy as to meet you at Stanford, so quickly have I been here after your departure ... I cannot find here the Lease but only the release for the Settlement of this House and Park, I wish you would search for it, nor are there any counterparts of my Lady's marriage settlement ... I should be most heartily glad if you could come over, but not if your health will not permit it, for I am grieved to hear you are not mighty well. I propose going on Friday to my estate in this county [Leicestershire] and hope to be back Sunday or Monday night and shall stay here all that week, indeed poor Lady Cave both wants and deserves good assistance, and the best helps I can give her I shall exert for her and the pretty children. Lady Cave is pretty well, the children all have coughs. [VL (2), p. 62]*



Stanford House

Unfortunately for his widow and the family he left behind, Sir Thomas died heavily indebted, caused mostly by his bruising fights to retain his Parliamentary seat in two elections held in 1713 and 1715.

On 9<sup>th</sup> May 1719, Ralph Palmer sent his nephew Ralph Verney another report on his sister Margaret's unhappy situation:

*I am now leaving this Country and our friends in such a method as I hope will end much more to the good and happiness of this family than it has been to their terror. Lady Cave with concern and Fears and doubts has been much oppressed, she has an ugly Cough and does not rest, but I think she is now acting as Executrix, and I believe*



*the goods without doors and within will now be appraised. She is resolved to live at as little expense as possible, and we are trying to let the gardens, but not so as to dismantle them, and she intends to graze the Park and keep up a very few Deer. It is 200 acres and is looked upon to be worth £150 per annum. In this she has the precedent of our relation, Lady Howe<sup>63</sup>, for I am satisfied whatever trouble and care she may incur but her Executorship she would incur more by seeing it out of her power, and others acting it may be in some things to the prejudice of her or hers, without having it in her power to avoid it.*

*We have pitched up Mr Harry Cave, for the man to bring all affairs under their proper heads, methodically into Book-Keeping for Just and Fair Accounts, and he has been so kind as to undertake it. We are summoning in the Tennants to bring in their last acquittances, which will let us into the arrears, and I verily think my Lady, will be much easier when business is going on. Tis some advantage that her advisers will be no expense to her.*

*Here are a family of great hopes, who deserve all that can possibly be done for them ... I hope it will not be so bad for Sir Verney as was at first apprehended ... the Servants have due between 200 and 300 pounds, Lady Cave will buy most of the household goods rather than have it stript, which will be of no great value ... I find the title writings of the Estate are with Mr John Gore, the Hamburg merchant in Basing Hall Street, and hope Sir Thomas has an abstract of them in his Scrutoire [desk] at London .... I should be much delighted in the concurrence of your Judgement in what is done, which I know to be a good one, and therefore must lament the loss of it upon the spot. Lady Cave, Mrs Lovett, Sir Verney and myself desire our best respects may be acceptable to yourself, Lady Fermanagh etc ... and I am at the end of a very long epistle, your most affectionate Uncle, and humble servant. [VL (2), pp. 62-63]*

Margaret (Verney) Cave writing to her brother Ralph on 8<sup>th</sup> June 1719, notes that she had wished he had been with them at Stanford Hall to:

*... have seen my Uncle and consult together. His advice and assistance has been truly friendly and helpful...*

She later adds that if her brother needs any help their uncle will 'take care for you' [VL (2), p. 64].

---

<sup>63</sup> Lady Howe was Katherine (Ernle) Palmer's first cousin being the daughter of her uncle William Alington. (see Part Two, Ernle and Howe family charts).

11<sup>th</sup> June 1719, Ralph Palmer to Ralph Verney.

*I have not advised your Sister Lovett to go to Ireland, in case she will put those wheels in motion for the good of her family and self which may as well be done I think while she is here. I am sorry you cannot find the Lease of Lady Cave's jointure; if we were to make a title, we could make none without it, so it must remain a secret. She has had prodigious luck selling horses, a three-year old colt for forty guineas. I cannot tell how, poor Lady, she can call anything her own but her jointure, but the furniture of the house she will keep, and what plate she thinks to do with, so that may remain with the last, ... for no legacy is due till debts are paid and even what she calls her own, Jewels and Assets in her hands, till the debts are cleared. I have waited on Sir John Cheshire, whom my Lady fancies is a mighty friend, he carrying himself very rude and surly to me, and railed at Sir Thomas for his usage of him with reflections upon my Lady's friends. This is not consistent with the professions he made, so that I have done my consultations with him ... I have spoken with most of the creditors myself, who are easy .... Tis strange Sir T should make a device of the House and Park to pay debts, although he had settled it upon his son. The girls' fortunes are unalterable, neither equity nor Parliaments will touch them. [VL (2), p. 65].*

**L O N D O N.**  
*To Mons. Vau Loo, the famous French Painter, lately arriv'd.*  
**For thee to paint like,  
Is no difficult Task;  
Since most English Courtiers,  
Now wear a French Mask.**  
**Yesterday in the Afternoon died suddenly, at his House in Essex-street, just as he was going into his Coach to go to Isleworth in Middlesex, aged 78, Sir John Cheshire, Knt. Serjeant at Law and King's Prime Serjeant: He is reckon'd to have died worth upwards of 100,000 l. all which he acquir'd by the Law. He marry'd first, Elizabeth, Daughter of Sir Roger Cave, of Stanford in Northamptonshire, Bart. secondly, Anne, Daughter of Sir Thomas Lawley, Bart. Sister to the present Sir Robert Lawley, Bart. but has left no Issue.**

*The London Evening Post 13<sup>th</sup> - 16<sup>th</sup> May 1738*

Sir John Cheshire (1660-1738) mentioned above in Palmer's letter had married Sir Thomas Cave's aunt Elizabeth on 17<sup>th</sup> October 1703 but she died on 16<sup>th</sup> August 1705. Sir John later married Anne Lawley whose aunt Mary was John Verney's second wife. He appears not to have had any issue.

Between July and August 1720 Palmer went to see Henry Cave at Coventry who had agreed to undertake the Stanford estate accounts and Palmer writes to Ralph Verney to ask him his opinion as to what salary Palmer should pay Harry Cave [VL (2), p. 65]. The editor of *The Verney Letters* continues:

Ralph Palmer watches over his niece's affairs and writes to her brother at intervals. He thanks him for venison, which Betty Verney has helped them to partake of.

11<sup>th</sup> August 1720

*Lady Cave was in much trouble about a Tenant of Sir Verney [Cave]'s who is become bankrupt, I have given her the best advice I can about it. I wish she may meet with a Chap for the land at Swinford, Mrs Lovett has given her particulars of it in town, but the country Attorneys are the men that drive those bargains best .... I should think it rarely well sold if she could make £15,000 of it, but she talks of 60 years' purchase, and tis but a scabby Estate (me thinks). There is a great many cottages and out of repair too, and tis common field land mixt with other titles. Mr. Luttrell is very ill. Your Venison yesterday happened to grace my son Ralph's birthday [← August 10th?] [VL (2), p. 67].*

In September 1721 Margaret (Verney) Cave writes to her brother Ralph Verney on his move to Chelsea and her apprehension over her son Tommy's health. She also mentions the death of her stepmother in law, Lady Penelope (Bromley) Cave, who wished to be interred next to the body of her husband Sir Roger Cave.

*I received yours of the 2<sup>nd</sup> inst., and am glad you find your habitation convenient, and hope my little Nephews [John (II) and Ralph (III)] are as well pleased with theirs, and question not the advantages and improvements they reap by that change, and wish it as suitable to their healths as learning, and then I think the parting of them fully compensated for. The apprehension of Tommy's weak Constitution I find very greivous, inferring he is unable to undergo a school life, but when this winter is past with good nursing at home, I pray God he may be recruited and strengthened for it. He has a return of his fever and pain today ... He has taken three quarts of Bark and is to go on with it longer, so I hope he'll pick up again. ... I had an unexpected letter t'other day from Mr. [Henry] Cave in Coventry, to acquaint me of the Death of my Lady Cave, and that her son Roger hoped I would let her desire be fulfilled of lying by Sir Roger in the vault here, to which I readily consented. She died of the Smallpox in Lancashire. I have heard. [VL (2), p. 71]*

Twenty years after the death of Thomas Cave, 3<sup>rd</sup> Bart., a monument was raised in his memory by his widow Margaret that reads in part:

Sacred to the  
Memory of Sir Tho. Cave  
Baronet of Stanford Hall  
in the County of Leicester,  
Son of Sir Roger Cave Bart by Martha  
Daughter of John Brown Esq; of Eydon  
in the County of Northampton  
Clerk of the Parliament.  
He married The Honble Margaret Verney  
youngest Dr of The Rt. Honble  
Sir John Verney Bart of Middle Claydon  
in the County of Bucks and Viscount  
Fermannah in the Kingdom of Ireland, by  
whom he Left Issue two Sons & two Daughters  
viz. The Present Bart Sir Verney Cave, Thomas,  
Elizabeth, & Penelope.

[ ... ]

He was Representative for Leicestershire, and  
served his Country in fevrell Parliaments with  
strict Integrity, of Universal Honour, Probity  
& Virtue, Accomplished with Sound Learning,  
much Candour, Elegance, and Generosity,  
Endowments

so amiable that they recommended him to  
Universal Esteem, & Shone out more Particularly  
in the Husband, Father, Relation, & Friend.

Had his Constitution been as Vigorous  
as his Parts, He had (in all Probability) survived the  
39th Year of his Age, in which he Exchanged this  
Life for a better on the 21st day of April 1719  
and was Deposited in a Vault within this  
Chancel. This Monument being Gratefully  
Erected to Preserve the Memory of him To  
Posterity, at the Expence of His Most Loving  
and well beloved Wife.

Anno Domini 1733

Toward the middle of May 1774 Margaret (Verney) Cave died  
aged 89 at her home in London and her passing was noted by  
the papers:

**Westminster. Tuesday morning, in an advanced  
age, at her house in Southampton-Row, the  
Hon. Lady Cave, daughter of the late Lord  
Viscount Fermanagh, and mother of Sir Thomas  
Cave, Bart. one of the Knights of the Shire for  
the county of Leicester.**

17<sup>th</sup> May 1774





Her burial took place at Stanford on the 28<sup>th</sup> May. Later, the house that she had occupied for many years in Southampton Row was placed on the market to be let.

**T**O be lett, in Southampton-Row, Bloomsbury, a House, late in the Occupation of the Hon. Lady Cave, deceased, of four Rooms on the Ground-Floor, and three Rooms on the other Floors, with two Stair-cases, and a good Garden; it commands a pleasant View of Bedford-House, and Gardens, and also of Highgate and Hampstead. The Premises are elegantly fitted up in the present Taste, and which are to be lett with or without a Stable and Coach-House. Also to be lett, unfurnished, a genteel First Floor, or the greatest Part of a House in the same Row. Enquire of Mr. Murray, in Southampton-Row aforesaid.

5<sup>th</sup> March 1775

Margaret lived a long life but her husband, sons, and grandsons did not, each male descendant living an ever-decreasing life span.

Her will, signed on 20<sup>th</sup> October 1769, is long but some of her bequests went to the following:

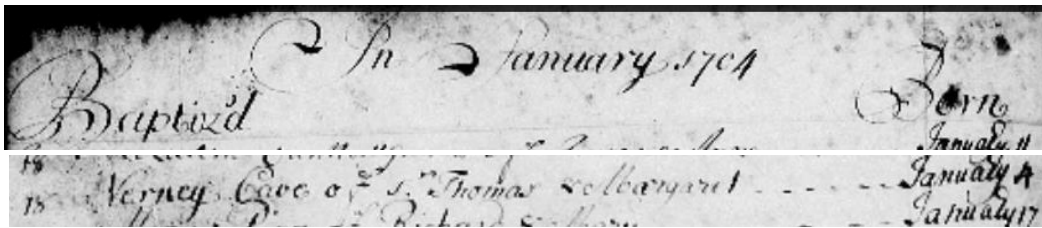
I give and bequeath to my dear Daughter Penelope Thomson, Widow, the Sum of Seven hundred Pounds: I give to my Grandson Thomas Cave the Sum of Five hundred Pounds, secured to me by a Mortgage of the Tolls or Profits arising from the Turnpike Road leading from Harborough to Coventry; and in case the same shall be paid off before my Death, then I give to the said Thomas Cave the Sum of Five hundred Pounds: I give to my Grand-daughter [Elizabeth Cave] the Countess of Harborough the Sum of Two hundred Pounds: I give to my Grand and God Daughter Margaret Cave, Spinster, Eight hundred Pounds: I give to my Five Grandchildren, Charles Cave, Penelope Cave, Maria Cave, Ann Cave, and Isabella Cave, Seven hundred Pounds apiece: I give to Mrs Cave, the Wife of my said Grandson Thomas Cave, my Gold Snuff Box and Sable Tippet, with the Bits of Sable, if she thinks the same worth her Acceptance: I give to my Great Grandson Thomas Cave, and to my Great Grand-daughter Sarah Cave, One hundred Pounds apiece, to be placed out and improved by my Executor for their Benefit, and to be paid them with such Improvements at their respective Age of Twentyone Years : I give to my Niece Elizabeth Lovett, Spinster, One hundred Pounds: I give to the said Earl of Verney and his Lady, and to Major Verney Lovett, Ten Guineas apiece: I give to the Son and Daughter of Hamey Palmer Five Guineas apiece [For details see [Five Papers Relating to Bray](#)]



The children of Thomas and Margaret (Verney) Cave: Being the great grandchildren of Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer

Verney Cave, 4<sup>th</sup> Bart. (1705 – 1734)

Verney Cave was born on 4<sup>th</sup> January 1705 in Leicester Fields, the eldest son of Thomas and Margaret (Verney) Cave. He was baptized by Mr. Bond on 18<sup>th</sup> January at St. Martin's in the Fields. His godparents were Basil, Earl Denbigh; John Verney, Viscount Fermanagh (for whom stood in Ralph Palmer (II)); and Mrs. Alice (White) Palmer for whom stood in her daughter Cornelia (Palmer) Dunck.



18 Verney Cave S of Sir Thomas & Margaret ..... January 4

John Verney sent a congratulatory letter to his daughter and son in law on the birth of their first child and he asked about the christening arrangements to which Sir Thomas Cave replied on 16<sup>th</sup> January 1705.

*My Lord As to what you will write concerning the Church register; it shall in particulars be perform'd ... Mr Palmer and his Lady were here yesterday morning to see my wife and Little One; who I thank God continues very well, excepting my wife's cold. We intend to try something for it after she's gathered some strength. I have desired Mr. Palmer to supply your Lordships place at the Christening of Him, who I hope will prove as great a Comfort as a present Joy to your Lordship's dutiful son and Servant. Thomas Cave* [VL (I), p. 221].

Six years later Ralph Palmer (II) writes to his nephew Ralph Verney (II) that he has received:

*... a surprisingly well wrote letter from Master [Verney] Cave's own hand, indeed it is to admiration in penmanship for such a Child.* [VL (I), p. 238]

When mentioned in the *Verney Letters*, Verney Cave was usually described as being 'mighty well' or 'mighty brisk' [VL (I), p. 245]. Verney and his brother Thomas were sent to Rugby School by which they were 'highly delighted'.

The editor of the *Verney Letters* notes that:

Sir Verney Cave was a Baronet at 14, and was never mentioned by any relation, except his mother, without his title. He was deprived of his father's counsel and control at an age when he most needed them, but his mother was resolved that his education should not suffer, and was taking advice about a University education, which less enlightened parents often thought superfluous for an eldest son. The younger son, Tommy, whose health gave much cause for anxiety, seemed to be most like his father, with a certain dry humour and a cheerful outlook on life.

Verney attended Balliol College, Oxford, matriculating on 29<sup>th</sup> March 1722 at the age of 15 and when his father died in 1713 he became the 4<sup>th</sup> Bart.

In 1723 Verney Cave fell dangerously ill at Stanford with smallpox, although his mother writes that he has got through it and that: *Nature had done its work without medicine*. [VL (2), p. 72]

Verney Cave, along with his sister Penelope, attended the coronation of King George II at Westminster Abbey on 11<sup>th</sup> June 1727, and like his father before him, he was made a trustee of Rugby School.

The editor of *The Verney Letters* notes that, unlike his father Thomas, Verney was an intermittent letter writer which often left his mother Margaret unaware as to his whereabouts.

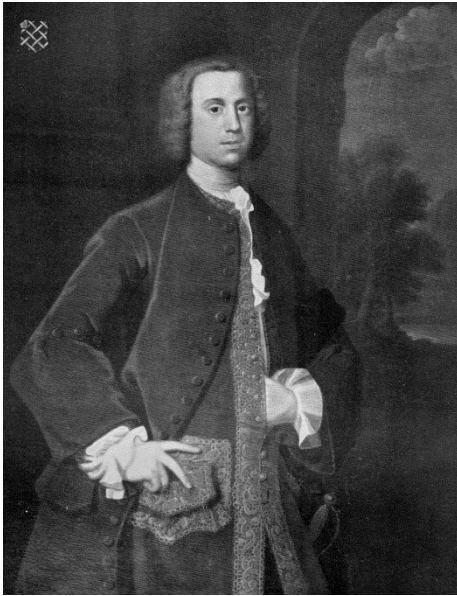
Then to everyone's surprise on 13<sup>th</sup> September 1734, at the age of 29 Sir Verney Cave, the more robust of Margaret's children, died. His passing was noted in *The Gentleman's Magazine* (Vol. 4, page 511).

**Prologue for 6 weeks.**  
**Last Week died at Stanford in Northamptonshire, Sir Verney Cave, Bart. Son of Sir Thomas Cave, Bart. by Margaret youngest Daughter of the Hon. John Verney, Lord Viscount Fermanah, of the Kingdom of Ireland: He was descended from Jordan de Cave, who had a Grant of several Lordships from William the Conqueror, Anno 1069. and was the 22d in a Lineal Descent from him, and the Heir General of Bromster, Genell, and Clift; and dying unmarried, is succeeded in Dignity and Estate by his next Brother, Sir Thomas Cave, Bart.**

Last week died at Stanford in Northamptonshire, Sir Verney Cave, Bart. Son of Sir Thomas Cave, Bart. by Margaret youngest Daughter of the Hon. John Verney, Lord Viscount Fermanah; of the Kingdom of Ireland: He was descended from Jordan de Cave, who had a Grant of several Lordships from William the Conqueror, Anno 1069. and was the 22d in a Lineal Descent from him, and the Heir General of Bromster, Genell, and Clift; and dying unmarried, is succeeded in the Dignity and Estate by his next Brother, Sir Thomas Cave, Bart.

On Verney's decease his brother Thomas became the 5<sup>th</sup> baronet.

In the parish church of Stanford on Avon, which contains many tombs of the Cave family, there is a monument to Verney Cave, placed there by his doting sister Penelope Thomson. It consists of an imposing edifice of black and white marble with a sculpture of Sir Verney's face. [VL (2), p. 72]



Sir Verney Cave 4<sup>th</sup> Bart., Ralph Palmer (I)'s great grandson © Claydon House Trust, and his monument at Stanford Church which was placed there by his sister Penelope.

### Elizabeth Cave (1706 – 1755)

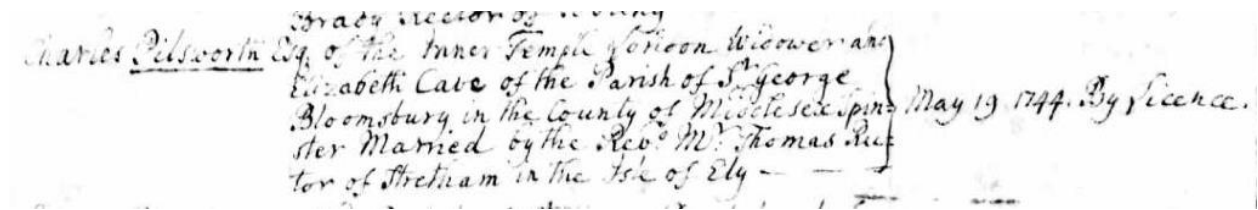
Elizabeth was born on the 1<sup>st</sup> December 1706 in Park Place, St. James's Street, London, the eldest daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Verney) Cave. She was baptized by Mr. William Vickers on 11<sup>th</sup> of that month at St. James, Westminster. Her Godparents were Viscountess Lady Fermanagh for whom stood in her place Mrs. Cornelia (Palmer) Dunk, Lady Dowager Cave, for whom stood Penelope Cave, and the Lord Craven.

Sir Thomas Cave writes to his father in law on 3<sup>rd</sup> December 1706:

*My Lord ... On Sunday about 11 of the Clock my wife was delivered of a daughter [Elizabeth], and is I thank God as well as possible in that condition. We must beg the Assistance of my Lady [Elizabeth (Baker) Verney] to make it a Christian,*

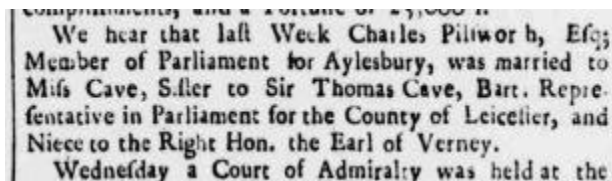
*with my Mother whom I shall intreat to be her partner with Lord Craven to conclude the Vow... I am provided better with Caudle (Cordials) better than expected, for his Grace the Duke of Montague has sent his Gentleman with nine dozen of fine French White Wine, as a present against my wife's lying in* [VL (I), p. 231].

At the age of thirty-eight, Elizabeth married Charles Pilsworth on 19<sup>th</sup> May 1744 at Holy Trinity, Clapham in Surrey, she as his second wife.



Charles Pilsworth Esq. of the Inner Temple London Widower and  
Elizabeth Cave of the Parish of St George  
Bloomsbury in the County of Middlesex spinster  
May 19 1744. By Licence.  
ster Married by the Revd Mr Thomas Rice  
Rector of Stretham in the Isle of Ely

Charles Pilsworth Esq of the Inner Temple London Widower and  
Elizabeth Cave of the Parish of St George  
Bloomsbury in the County of Middlesex Spin-  
ster Married by the Revd Mr Thomas Rice  
Rector of Stretham in the Isle of Ely  
May 19 1744 By Licence



We hear that last Week Charles Pilsworth, Esq;  
Member of Parliament for Aylesbury, was married to  
Miss Cave, Sister to Sir Thomas Cave, Bart. Repre-  
sentative in Parliament for the County of Leicester, and  
Niece to the Right Hon. the Earl of Verney.  
Wednesday a Court of Admiralty was held at the

Charles was the son of the Reverend Charles Pilsworth, rector of Charfield, Gloucestershire. He first married Parnell Tyringham the daughter of Francis Tyringham of Lower Winchendon in Buckinghamshire. She died in March 1741.

Charles, having chosen a legal career became a member of the Inner Temple and was later called to the bar in 1715. In 1741, before his marriage to Elizabeth Cave, Charles stood for election as MP for Aylsebury which he won with the help of his future wife's uncle Ralph Verney (II).

The following is from [\*The History of Parliament\*](#):

Charles Pilsworth was living at Oving by 1723, before his marriage to the heiress of an old Buckinghamshire family [Tyringham], through whom he later acquired the manor of Oving. A practising lawyer with a considerable reputation among the local justices, he was described in 1733 as 'the oracle of this country'. He was returned for

Aylesbury as a government supporter in 1741, he voted with the Administration in all recorded divisions.

However Charles's attention turned from his constituents to his own legal career and there exist letters between Charles and Ralph Verney (II) discussing what needs be done to advance Charles to a judgeship. Thus, when two vacancies occurred among the judges in March 1745, Pilsworth wrote to Ralph:



Elizabeth (Cave) Pilsworth  
© Claydon House Trust

*This will be the fairest opportunity that can offer of pushing our point; for if the ministry will not comply now, I shall be convinced they never intend to do anything. If ... they should appear to trifle with us, we must in such case find access to the King forthwith ... I am determined to press this point at this juncture; if those seats are filled with younger lives, I can have no further expectations.*

Verney replied:

*I have had some discourse with [Mr. Pelham] ... he speaks very fair and wishes you may be a judge, but says it can't be now ... I really believe the ministry are in earnest and will serve you another time.*

Before anything more could be done, Pilsworth died on 4<sup>th</sup> January 1749 leaving Elizabeth a childless widow.

Elizabeth died in January 1755 aged 48 at her mother's house in Southampton Row.

**Yesterday Morning died, at Lady Cave's in Southampton-Row, Bloomsbury, Mrs. Pilsworth, Relict of the late Counsellor Pilsworth.**

18<sup>th</sup> January 1755

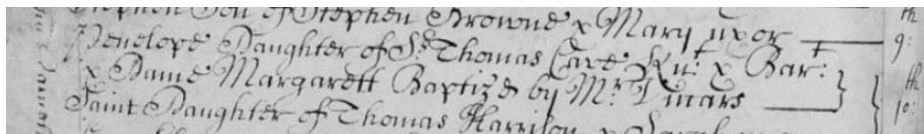
Elizabeth wrote her will on 4<sup>th</sup> January 1755 while residing at Oving in Buckinghamshire. She leaves one hundred pounds to her mother Dame Margarte Cave as a small token of gratitude for all her care and tenderness toward her. She gives to Dame Elizabeth Cave Wife of her brother Thomas



Cave Baronet twenty pounds To her dear sister Penelope Thomson Widow five hundred pounds To Thomas Cave Esquire eldest son of Sir Thomas Cave One Hundred pounds To her aunts The Hon Elizabeth Verney Spinster and The Hon Mary Lovett Widow ten pounds a piece and to Elizabeth Lovett daughter of Mary Lovett Twenty Pounds in Remembrance of her She gives to **Phillis and Eleanor [Cornelia] Churchill** spinsters<sup>64</sup> five pounds a piece To Mrs Dorothy Smith of Salisbury Court Fleet Street five pounds To Charles and Thomas Pilsworth the great nephews of her late husband Charles Pilsworth Esquire fifty pounds each To Elizabeth wife of Benjamin Jones now or late of the City of Hereford fifty pounds To her Executor Fifty Pounds in trust to dispose thereof for the benefit of her servant Jane Pinley Spinster To Robert Land at Oving thirty pounds as a reward for his faithful service to her She gives to her maid servant at Oving Mary Case a years wages besides what is due to her at the time of her decease She gives to her executor twenty pounds to be disposed of by him in placing out three or four children of the parish of Oving as apprentices She gives to the poor of the parish of Lower Birkenden five pounds and to the the poor of the Stanford in the county of Northampton five pounds and all the remainder of her estate whether real or personal whatsoever and wheresoever to her brother Sir Thomas Cave his heirs, etc. And she appoints her brother Sir Thomas Cave sole executor. Signed and witnessed the fourth day of January 1755. The will was proved on 1<sup>st</sup> February 1755 by Sir Thomas Cave.

### Penelope Cave (1709 – 1786)

Penelope was born on 30<sup>th</sup> April 1709 in Cecil Street, The Strand, the daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Verney) Cave and baptized on 10<sup>th</sup> May at St. Clement Danes by William Vickers. Her Godparents were her great uncle Ralph Palmer (II), and aunts Catherine (Paschal) Verney and Penelope Cave [VL (I), p. 185 and p. 230].

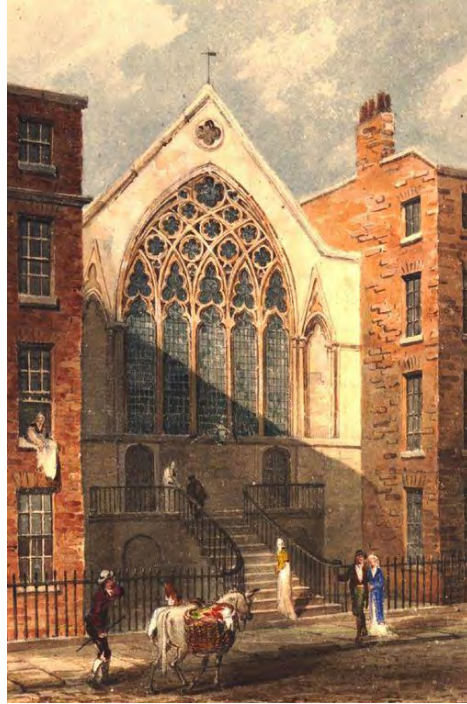


---

<sup>64</sup> These two very elderly spinster sisters also benefited from the will of Alice Palmer, Ralph (II)'s sister. We have assumed that their grandmother Anne Chaloner was a member of the White family and was the aunt of Alice (White) Palmer.

Penelope married Richard Thomson of Lincoln's Inn on 31<sup>st</sup> August 1733. Her father not living she was under the guardianship of her mother Margaret (Verney) Cave of Southampton Row.

**Yesterday Morning Richard Thomson, of Lincoln's-Inn, Esq; Second Prothonotary of the Court of Common-Pleas, was married at Ely Chapel to Miss Pen Cave, youngest Daughter of the Lady Cave of Southampton-Row; an accomplish'd young Lady, and a considerable Fortune.**



View of the east front of Ely Chapel and adjoining buildings, in Ely Place, Holborn; where Penelope Cave married Richard Thomson. © The Trustees of the British Museum

A daughter of this union, Penelope was born on 25<sup>th</sup> January 1737 and baptised on 14<sup>th</sup> February 1737 at Lincoln's Inn Chapel, Holborn, but she did not survive her infancy. A sister who followed her was also named Penelope and was born on 28<sup>th</sup> November 1742 and baptised at Ewell in Surrey on 17<sup>th</sup> December 1742.

*Penelope Daughter of Richard Thomson Esq  
and Penelope born Nov 28 bapt Dec 17*

Penelope Daughter of Richard Thomson Esq,  
and Penelope born nov 28 bapt Dec 17

In May 1732 Richard Thomson purchased the office of second Prothonotary (principal clerk), of the Court of Common Pleas at Westminster and was admitted to Lincoln's Inn on 3<sup>rd</sup> June 1732.

Richard died in 1745 and was buried at Ewell, his name appearing in the parish's burial register as 'Richard Thompson' on 12<sup>th</sup> November 1745. [His will was proved on 27<sup>th</sup> November 1745 - PROB 11/743/228].

His widow Penelope lived on another forty-one years and died on 3<sup>rd</sup> October 1786 at Ewell. She appears in the parish register as Mrs. Penelope Thompson, widow, buried on 13<sup>th</sup> October 1786 with an illegible marginal note which could be interpreted as: *formerly wife of Richard Thompson*. Her will was proved 14<sup>th</sup> November 1786 by her son in law Sir Thomas Hallifax [PROB 11/1148/26].

The Thomsons appear to have held property called 'Monks' on South Street in Ewell which was described by James Edwards in *Companion from London to Brighthelmstone* (1789):

**Opposite [John Pollard], a small distance to the west, is a large square house and pretty high, the greatest part of the different fronts are cased with brick tiles and commands an agreeable prospect over the common fields which bounds it on the south and west.**

**It was for many years in the possession of Mrs [Penelope] (Cave)] Thomson, an aged maiden lady [widow], lately deceased, now descended to \_Mayer, Esq.'**

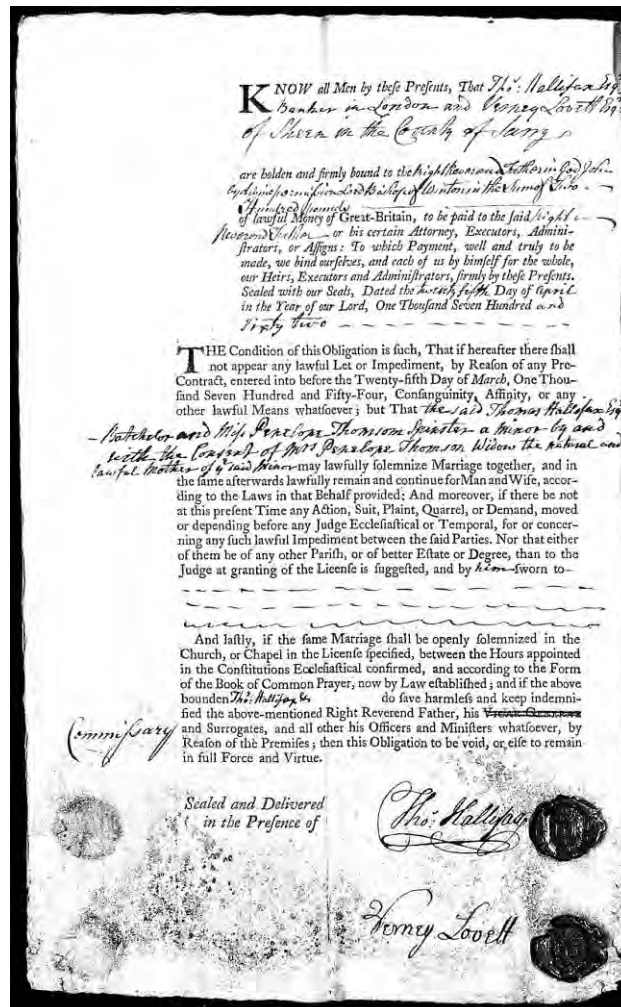
Much of the above section and what follows is from the Hallifax family page on the [Epsom and Ewell Explorer](#) web site.

### Penelope Thomson (1742 – 1762)

The surviving daughter of this marriage, Penelope Thomson, married Thomas Hallifax. An allegation for a marriage licence, dated 5<sup>th</sup> April 1762 included the following parties:

Thos. Hallifax, Esq., of St. Edmund the King, City of London, banker, abode 12 months, bachelor, 21, and Miss Penelope Thomson of Ewell, abode several years, spinster, a minor 19; at Ewell. Mrs. Penelope Thomson, widow, the mother of the said Penelope Thomson, the minor, consenting, she having no father or testamentary guardian appointed by the will of her father. Verney Lovett of Sheere, Esq., 2nd signature. Both sign.

The Marriage settlement of Thomas Hallifax and Penelope Thomson was dated 26<sup>th</sup> April 1762. The parties were (1) Penelope Thomson, widow, of Ewell, Surrey & (2) Thomas Hallifax, citizen and banker, of London with Trustees (3) Sir Thomas Cave, 5<sup>th</sup> Bart. of Stanford Hall, Leics., Verney Lovett, Esq., of East Sheen, Surrey, Sir Richard Glynn, Kt. and Bart., Alderman of London, and James Hallifax, D.D., Vicar of Ewell, Surrey.



Thomas Hallifax's marriage allegation

On 27<sup>th</sup> April 1762 Thomas Hallifax married, at St. Mary's, Ewell, Penelope, daughter of Richard Thomson of Lincoln's Inn, who 'brought him £20,000'.

A snippet of a newspaper clipping from Lloyd's Evening Post, dated 26th April 1762. The text reads: "Thomas Hallifax, Esq; Banker in Birchin Lane, to Miss Thomson, with 20,000l. fortune; a near relation to Earl Verney, and niece to Sir Thomas Cave, Bart."

*Lloyd's Evening Post, 26<sup>th</sup> April 1762*

However, she survived only until 6<sup>th</sup> December of that year. She may have succumbed in childbirth because an infant son Thomas died on 6<sup>th</sup> January 1763 and joined his mother in a grave at Ewell.

A photograph of a handwritten inscription on a headstone. The text reads: "Penelope the Wife of Thomas Hallifax Esq: was buried Dec: 13: 1762".

The headstone is recorded as having been inscribed:

Penelope / The wife of Thomas Hallifax died Decr. 6<sup>th</sup> 1762 / Aetat 20 / also of Thomas their son died 4th January following aged 29 (?) days.

Thus there are no descendants from the two daughters of Thomas and Margaret (Verney) Cave, Penelope and Elizabeth. After the death of Penelope (Thomson) Hallifax, Thomas Hallifax married Margaret daughter of Thomas Saville.

### Notes on Sir Thomas Hallifax (1722-89)

Thomas was born on 23<sup>rd</sup> February 1722 in Barnsley in Yorkshire, the third son of John Hallifax, a clockmaker, and his wife Ann Archdale. He was educated at Barnsley and began working life as an apprentice to a local grocer, before moving to London.

In London, Hallifax found work as a clerk at the goldsmith-banker's John Martin & Co, also known as Martins Bank where he soon advanced to the position of chief clerk. In 1753 he



entered into partnership with the banker Joseph Vere and merchant Richard Glyn to form the banking house Vere, Glyn & Hallifax. His two partners, as the larger investors in the enterprise, seem to have been more influential than him in the bank's early years.

In 1766 Joseph Vere retired from the partnership, which became known as Glyn & Hallifax. A few years later, in 1772, the bank suffered difficulties, and was forced to stop payment from 25<sup>th</sup> June to 6<sup>th</sup> August. The bank was saved by loans from several wealthy benefactors, including one of £8,500, at a low interest rate, from Hallifax's father-in-law Thomas Saville. The following year, Hallifax became senior partner in the bank, which became known as Hallifax, Mills, Glyn & Mitton.

In 1760 Hallifax was elected to the Livery of the Goldsmiths Company. Eight years later he was elected prime warden of the Company and in the same year sheriff of the City of London. He was knighted in 1772.

In 1776 he was elected Lord Mayor of London, having stood unsuccessfully on two previous occasions. While in office, he supported significant improvements to the navigation of the Thames. He opposed the operation of press-gangs in the city, but ordered that all suspected criminals in public houses be sent into service in the army or navy.

He was elected Member of Parliament for Coventry in December 1780 after a bitter campaign in which he was labelled 'the dumb knight'. Only weeks later - in February 1781 - he was unseated after a successful petition by his opponents.

In March 1784 he was returned unopposed as Member of Parliament for Aylesbury. He held that seat until his death in 1789. Although nominally a supporter of the Pitt administration, he does not seem to have been active in parliamentary affairs, and there is no record of him having spoken in any debate. (See [\*The History of Parliament\*](#))

After the death of his first wife, Penelope Cave, Hallifax was married on 1<sup>st</sup> November 1772 to Margaret Saville, a

well-connected heiress and daughter of Thomas Saville, a wealthy linen draper. They had two sons together: Thomas, born in 1774, and Saville, born in 1777.

Margaret died shortly after Saville's birth, in November 1777 and was buried on 24<sup>th</sup> November 1777 at St Andrew, Enfield.

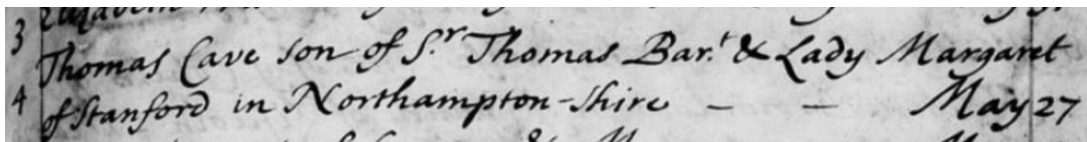
A handwritten entry from a church register. The text is written in cursive and reads: "Hallifax 24 Dame Margaret Hallifax". The entry is partially obscured by a vertical line on the left.

Sir Thomas Hallifax died suddenly on 7<sup>th</sup> February 1789, in the apartment above the bank in Birchin Lane, London. He was 66 years old, and had been unwell for the preceding four days.

Hallifax's elder son Thomas continued his father's banking interests, becoming a partner in Glyn, Mills, Hallifax & Co in 1796, when he was 21. He remained with the bank until his death in 1850, by which time he was senior partner.

Thomas Cave, 5<sup>th</sup> Bart. (1712 – 1778)

Thomas was born on 27<sup>th</sup> May and baptized on 4<sup>th</sup> June 1712 at St. Martins in the Fields, Westminster. His godparents were Sir Thomas Dunck, Sergeant John Cheshire, and Elizabeth Verney (aunt Betty).

A handwritten entry from a church register. The text is written in cursive and reads: "Thomas Cave son of S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Bart & Lady Margaret of Stanford in Northampton-shire - May 27". The entry is partially obscured by a vertical line on the left.

On the day after Thomas's christening John Verney wrote to his son Ralph (II):

*Yesterday I was in all Hast sent for the Child's Christening. Dr Chamberlain apprehending it won't live, and so it was named Thomas. The witnesses were Sir Thomas Dunck, Serjt. Cheshire, and Betty Verney. The Parson was some small Reader, but I don't know him. I found the Parson (if he be so) there, and we stayed [waited] two hours for Cheshire; the Child is very little, yet it may in time be such another as his sister Betty. I am grown very Deaf again, and cannot hear any sound, which renders me melancholy. [VL (I), p. 239]*

Thomas Cave (3<sup>rd</sup> Bart.) writes to his father in law John Verney on 9<sup>th</sup> June 1712:

*My young son [Thomas] having been extremely ill for this five or six days, and continuing languishing, that I expect every moment to be his last, and indeed his early deprivation has so disordered my wife, that nothing is so feared as her relapse. The confusion this gives me may not be proper from my own hand, that I shall suspend it. We had the good fortune to have my uncle Palmer here at its first complaint, as Representant of Sir Thomas Dunck, and soon after Sergeant Cheshire, and with Sister [Betty] Verney; that we immediately sent for the Parish Minister and Xened it Thomas (and unfortunately it seemed since its life not to enjoy it). [VL (I), pp. 239-240].*

When Verney Cave (4<sup>th</sup> Bart.) died in 1734 he was succeeded by his brother Thomas (Tommy) Cave as the 5<sup>th</sup> Baronet, whose health according to *The Verney Letters* had been the source of much family anxiety. As a second son he was not expected to inherit and so he began a legal career and in 1735 he was called to the bar, a year after he had inherited the Standford estate from his brother.

**On Wednesday last Sir Thomas Cave, Bart. and several other Gentlemen, Students in the Inns of Court, took the Oaths at Westminster-hall, on their being called to the Bar.**

27<sup>th</sup> June 1735

In the autumn of 1735, Ralph Palmer (II)'s great nephew and John Verney (II)'s cousin, Sir Thomas Cave 5<sup>th</sup> Bart. married Elizabeth Davies (sometimes Davis) the only daughter of Griffith Davies MD and Elizabeth Burgoyne.

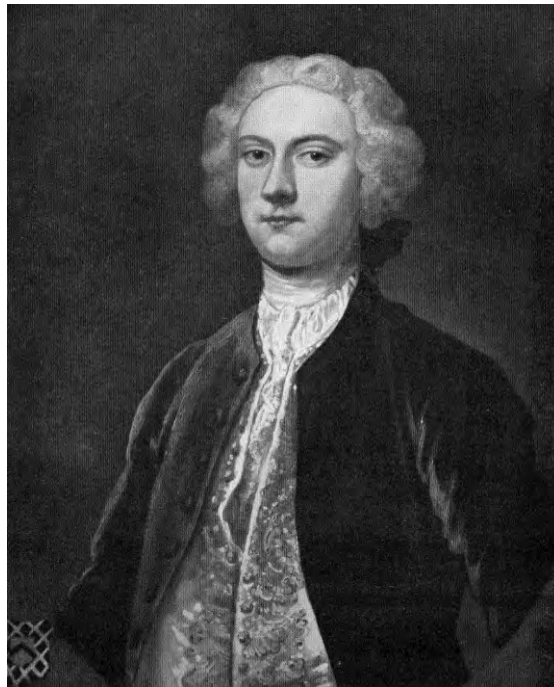
**A Treaty of Marriage is on Foot, and speedily will be consummated, between Sir Thomas Cave, of Stanford in Northamptonshire, Bart. and Miss Davis, Daughter and sole Heir of the late Dr. Davis of Birmingham in Warwickshire, an agréable young Lady with 40,000 l. Fortune.**

28<sup>th</sup> October 1735

Laſt Week Sir Thomas Cave, of Stamford in the County of Northampton, Bart. was married to Miſs Davis, Daughter and ſole Heireſs of the late Dr. Davis, of Birmingham in Warwickſhire, a Fortune of 20,000 l.

18<sup>th</sup> November 1735

On her mother's side Elizabeth Davies was descended from Sir Roger Burgoyne of Sutton and her uncle was General Burgoyne who would one day be defeated at the Battle of Saratoga. Her maternal grandmother, Lady Burgoyne (Constance Lucy of Charlcote) had relied heavily on Ralph Verney (I) in all her business affairs [VL (2), p. 140].



Thomas Cave 5<sup>th</sup> Bart. © Trustees of Claydon House

Elizabeth (Davies) Cave's first cousin Mary (Dr. Davies's niece) had married Richard Banner, the grandson of Richard and Hester (Palmer) Cradock. Thus Hester was twice connected to the Cave family (see chart). First through her great niece Margaret Verney who married Thomas Cave 3<sup>rd</sup> Bart. and second less directly through her grandson's

marriage to Mary who was the niece of Griffth Davies and whose daughter Elizabeth married Thomas Cave 5<sup>th</sup> Bart.

The picture below shows seated on the far right Griffith Davies surrounded by five of his Cave grandchildren some of whom approach from the left. Seated next to Davies is his daughter Elizabeth and standing by her is her husband Thomas Cave 5<sup>th</sup> Bart.

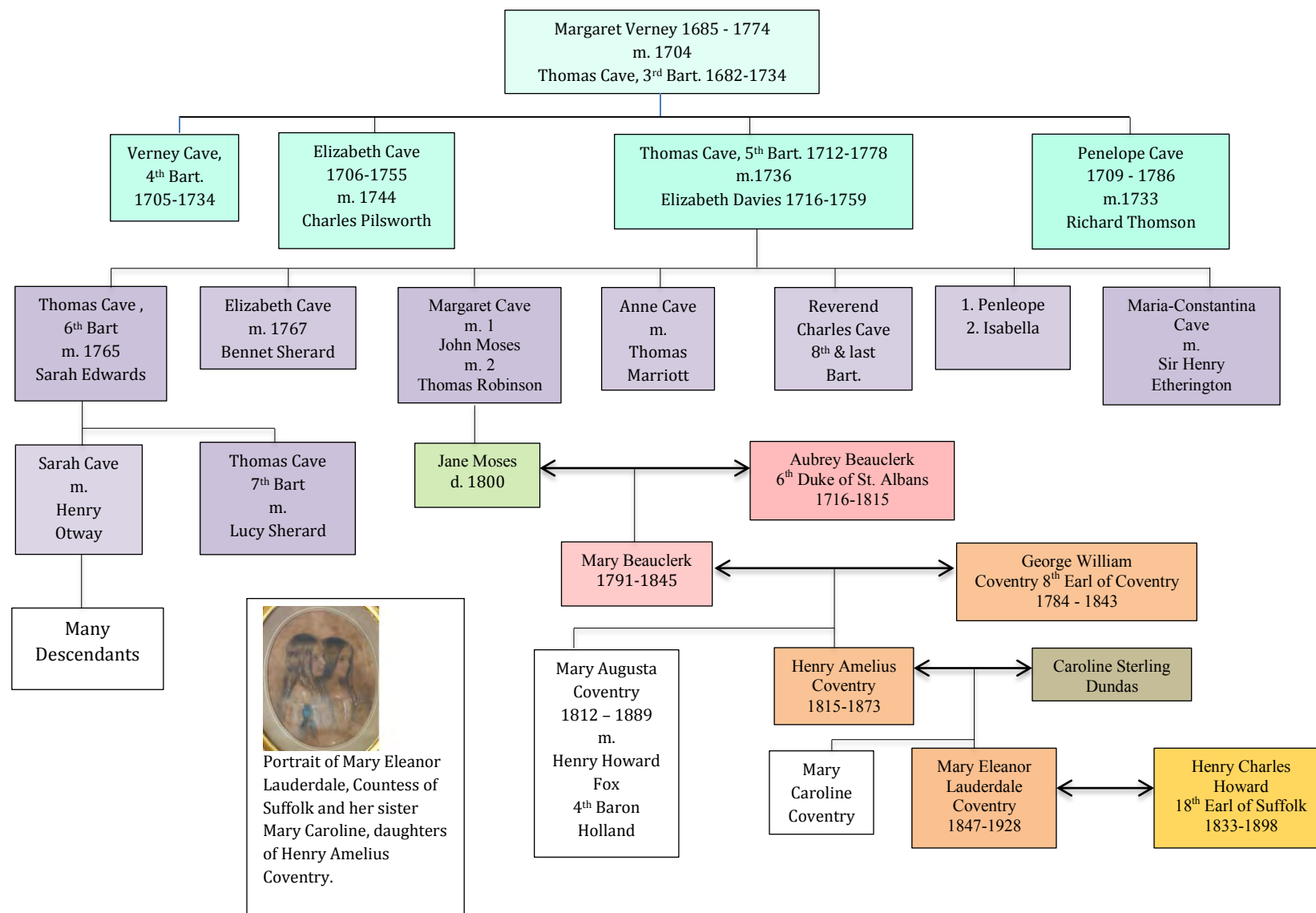


Thomas and Elizabeth (Davies) Cave had eight children:

1. Thomas 6<sup>th</sup> Bart. married Sarah Edwards. They had a son and a daughter. (Thomas 7<sup>th</sup> Bart. and Sarah who married Henry Otway).
2. Elizabeth Cave was born on 3<sup>rd</sup> March 1739/40. She married Bennet Sherard, 3<sup>rd</sup> earl of Harborough on 9<sup>th</sup> October 1767. She died 5<sup>th</sup> March 1797.
3. Penelope died unmarried on 28<sup>th</sup> April 1771.
4. Margaret married John Moses a widower of Kingston upon Hull on 11<sup>th</sup> January 1773. Had issue. She married secondly Thomas Robinson.
5. Maria-Constantia married Sir Henry Etherington of Kingston upon Hull on 1<sup>st</sup> June 1773. No issue.



6. Rev. Sir Charles Cave, 8<sup>th</sup> and last Bart. Died unmarried.
7. Anne married on 21<sup>st</sup> January 1777 at Stanford Thomas Marriott, D. D. prebendary of Westminster, rector of St. Michael, Basishaw. He died at Bristol in 1781. No issue?
8. Isabella - died unmarried.



There are living descendants from only two of these children namely Thomas 5<sup>th</sup> Bart. and Margaret.

In 1740, Thomas 5<sup>th</sup> Bart. stood as a Tory candidate for the same parliamentary constituency as his father had done:

**To the Gentlemen, Clergy and Freeholders  
of the County of Leicester.**  
**A**T a General Meeting held this Day at the Crane in  
Leicester, Sir Thomas Cave, Bart. and Edward  
Smith, Esq; being unanimously approv'd of for Candidates  
for this County at the next General Election, your Vote and  
Interest is therefore desir'd for the said Gentlemen.  
Leicester, April 22, 1740.

However the memory of his father's indebtedness prompted Thomas to let his constituents know that:

*My father had the honour of representing you long in Parliament and I believe with great fidelity, nor am I less zealous for the general interest of the county than he was, but his elections ... were attended by a very great expense to this family. On this account, therefore, I cannot pretend to place myself in the same situation he was in and declared the same to you as one of my objections, when you nominated me for a candidate. This you were pleased to over-rule by assuring me of your effectual support in a free subscription, and by ascertaining a fixed expense on my part which you not only expected I should not exceed, but as friends to me I would not enlarge. (6<sup>th</sup> August 1740).*

His fellow Tory candidate Edward Smith, wrote to Thomas three days later that *the subscription is enlarged a good deal to support us, and I can now only add that I hope you'll be no longer uneasy.*

Thomas's health however was dogged by frequent returns of *gouty and rheumatic disorders* and he was unable to *take any strong exercise*. In 1747 he again wrote to the freeholders in his constituency:

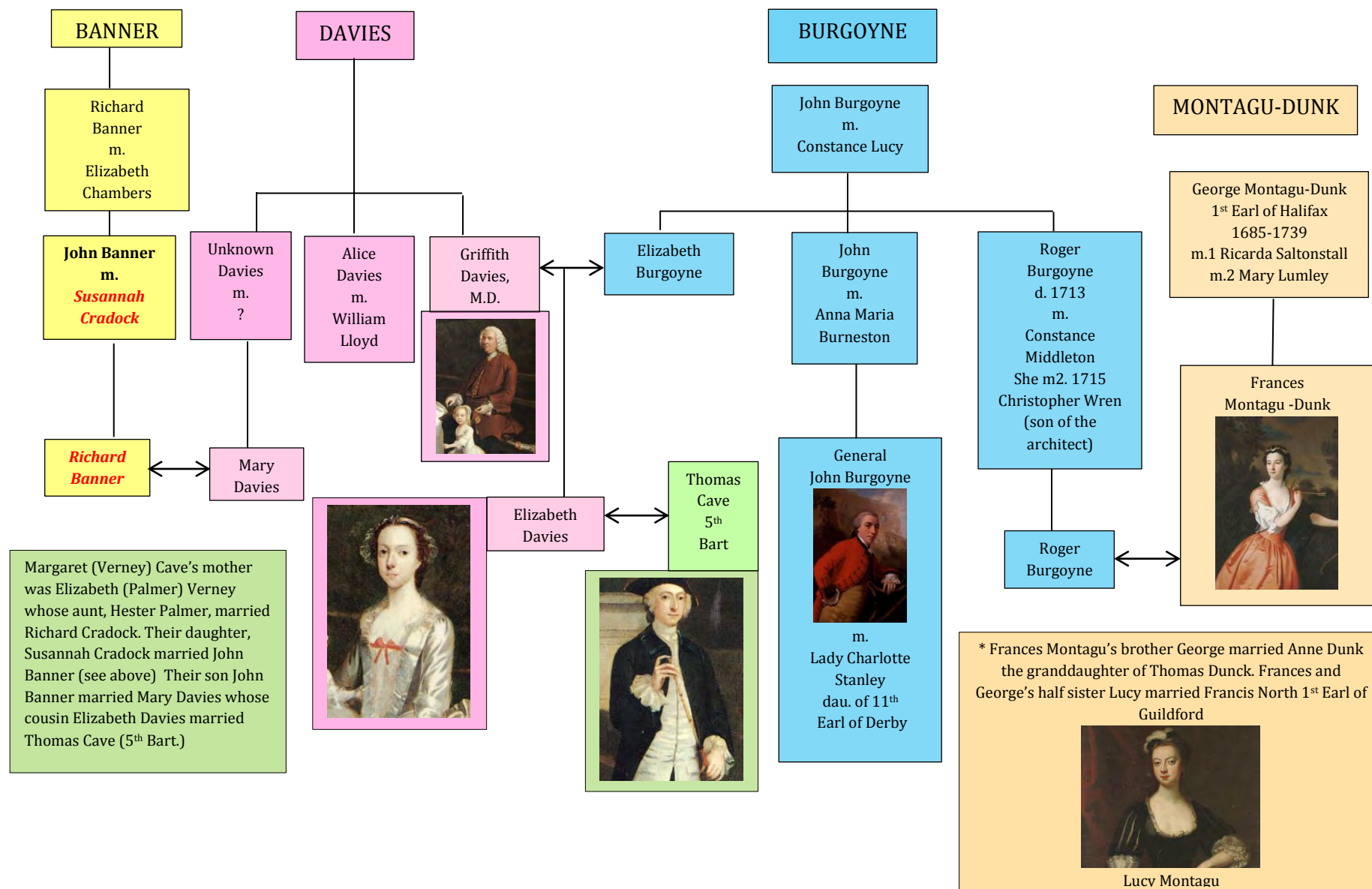
*My attendance in town [London] has increased my disorders, and it is the advice of physicians and surgeons I have consulted and the general request of all my friends in private life that ... I shall lay aside all thoughts of being again in Parliament.*

There then followed a twenty-year hiatus in which he pursued his antiquarian interests but he stood once more for parliament in 1762 and was reelected. See [The History of Parliament](#). Thomas died aged 66 on 7<sup>th</sup> August 1778.

**On Friday, August 7, died Sir Tho. Cave, Bart. at his Seat at Stamford Hall, Leicestershire, many Years Representative for that County.**

*Public Advertiser, Tuesday, 11<sup>th</sup> August 1 1778.*

## The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea







The memorial to Sir Thomas Cave, 5<sup>th</sup> Bart.

He was succeeded by his son Thomas the 6<sup>th</sup> Bart who was born on 22<sup>nd</sup> August 1737 and baptised on 6<sup>th</sup> September.

**We hear that the Lady of Sir Thomas Cave, Bart. of Stanford, in the County of Leicester, was last Week safely deliver'd of a Son, to the great Joy of that ancient and honourable Family.**

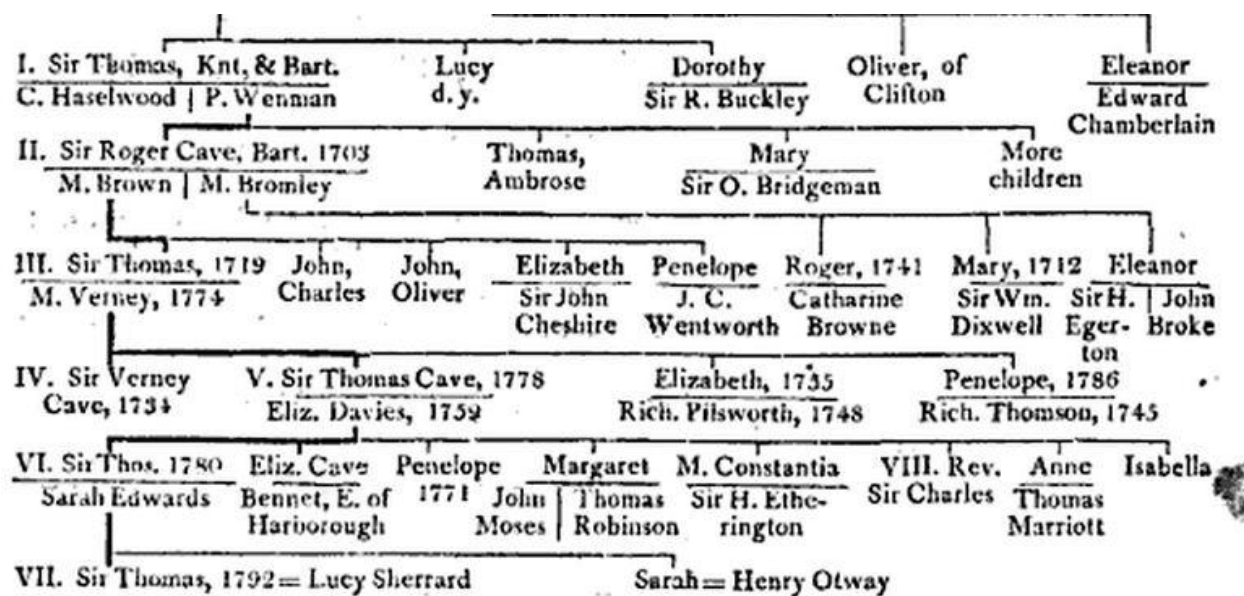
10<sup>th</sup> September 1737

In 1765 Thomas 6<sup>th</sup> Bart. married Sarah, daughter of John and Sarah (Holford) Edwards, and they had two children: Thomas (who was born on 6<sup>th</sup> October 1766) and Sarah. However, Thomas 6<sup>th</sup> Bart. died in 1780 and he was succeeded by his son Thomas the 7<sup>th</sup> Bart. Thomas 7<sup>th</sup> Bart. married Lucy Sherard on 3<sup>rd</sup> June 1791 and he died less than a year later on 16<sup>th</sup> January 1792 without issue. Thomas was succeeded by his uncle the Reverend Charles Cave as 8<sup>th</sup> Bart. (1747-1810), but he too failed to produce children and so with him went the last of the male Caves.



Thomas Cave 7<sup>th</sup> Bart. who married Lucy Sherrad

Thomas 7<sup>th</sup> Bart. had a sister Sarah born in 1768 and who married Henry Otway on 25<sup>th</sup> February 1790 and from whom are descended a multitude too plentiful to enumerate here but all of whom are, of course, the descendants of Ralph Palmer (I) and Alice White.



A Note on Lucy Sherard who married Sir Thomas Cave 7<sup>th</sup> Bart.

As noted, Thomas married Lucy Sherard although they had no children and Thomas died not long after his marriage. The newspapers reported on his death as follows:

**Lady Lucy Cave, who was married to the late Sir Thomas, but a few months before his death, was at Bath when he was seized with his last illness. She travelled incessantly, till she reached Leicester-shire, found him somewhat amended, but a relapse, a few days afterwards, carried him off.**

8<sup>th</sup> February 1792

On 15<sup>th</sup> January 1792 the 7<sup>th</sup> Bart. died.

**Lady CAVE, the young widow, who was a bride for little more than two months, is with her father the Earl of HARBOROUGH, at Bath.**

27<sup>th</sup> March 1792

In August 1798 Lucy (Sherard) Cave married Philip Bouverie-Pusey (1746-1828) the youngest son of Jacob Bouverie, first Viscount Folkestone. The wedding was conducted by her late husband's uncle the reverend Charles Cave the 8<sup>th</sup> and last Bart. and the marriage was noted by the papers:

**Monday, at St. George's, Hanover-square, by the Rev. Sir Charles Cave, Bart. the Hon. Philip Pusey, brother to the late Earl of Radnor, to Lady Lucy Cave, daughter of the Earl of Harboreugh, and widow of the late Sir Thomas Cave, Bart.**

18<sup>th</sup> August 1798

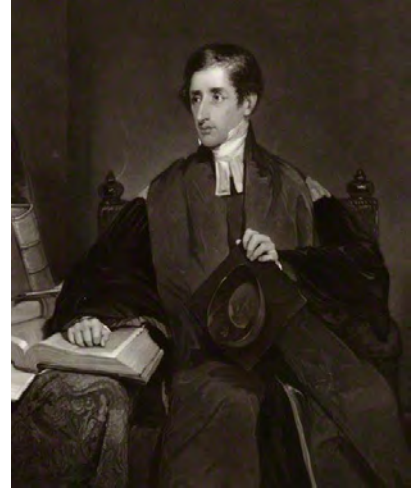
Lucy's husband Philip took the name Pusey when he inherited extensive property at Pusey, a small village in Berkshire. Philip and Lucy (Sherard) (Cave) Bouverie-Pusey produced three children who grew to have interesting lives. Philip Pusey (1799-1855) was an agriculturist; Edward Bouverie Pusey (1800-82) became Regius Professor of Hebrew, Canon of Christ Church, and a leader of the Oxford Movement. And Charlotte Bouverie who married Richard Lynch Cotton, provost of Worcester College, Oxford. (see DNB)



Philip Pusey  
© National Portrait Gallery, London



Edward Bouverie Pusey  
© National Portrait Gallery, London



Richard Lynch Cotton who married  
Charlotte Bouverie Pusey  
© National Portrait Gallery, London

Other descendants of Margaret (Verney) Cave and her husband Thomas (3<sup>rd</sup> Bart.) include Mary Augusta Coventry, the daughter of George William Coventry 8<sup>th</sup> earl of Coventry and Mary Beauclerk. Mary Augusta married Henry Howard Fox 4<sup>th</sup> and last Baron Holland.



Left: Henry Richard Vassall Fox, 3<sup>rd</sup> Baron Holland and (center) his wife Elizabeth Vassal of Massachusetts. Their son Henry Howard Fox, 4<sup>th</sup> Baron Holland married Mary Augusta Coventry (right). © National Portrait Gallery, London



Here we end our survey of Ralph Palmer (I)'s four grandchildren: Elizabeth (Betty) Verney, Ralph Verney (II), Mary Lovett, and Margaret Cave, as well as some of their descendants. Next we turn to Ralph Palmer (I)'s great grandchildren by his grandson Ralph Verney (II).



**Elizabeth (Verney) Harborough**  
© The Claydon House Trust

### The Sons and Daughters of Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney.

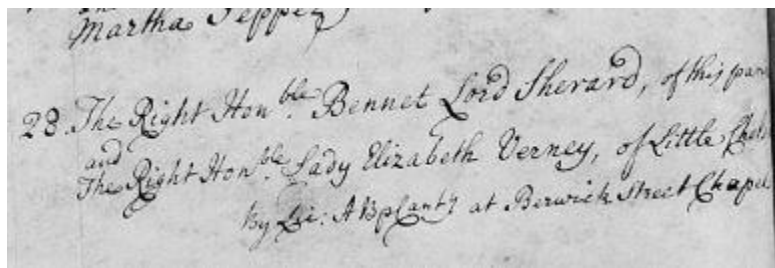
Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney had four surviving children: Elizabeth, John, Ralph, and Catherine (Kitty).

### Elizabeth Verney (1710 – 1756) and her sister Katherine (Kitty).

Elizabeth Verney, the daughter of Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney, was born on 2<sup>nd</sup> May 1710 in Southampton Steet, Covent Garden, the home of her aunt Margaret (Verney) Cave and baptized on the 5<sup>th</sup> by the Reverend William Vickers at the house in which she was born. Her Godparents were her grandfather Henry Paschall, her step grandmother

Elizabeth (Baker) Verney, and Mrs. Gibbs. [VL (2), p. 190.]

She married Bennet Sherard, 3<sup>rd</sup> Earl of Harborough, on 28<sup>th</sup> June 1748 at St. James the Less, Thorndike Street, Westminster.



28 The Right Hon<sup>ble</sup> Bennet Lord Sherard, of this parish  
and the Right Hon<sup>ble</sup> Lady Elizabeth Verney, of Little Chelsea  
by Lic: AB ? at Berwick Street Chapel

However the actual record states that they were married at the chapel in Berwick Street. This was a chapel of ease, which is defined as a church building other than the parish church, built



within the bounds of a parish for the attendance of those who cannot reach the parish church conveniently (See [Wikipedia](#)).

The marriage caught the attention of *The Scots Magazine*:

27. Lord Sherrard, eldest son to the Earl of Scarborough, to Lady — Verney, daughter to the Earl of Verney.

When Bennet's new bride Elizabeth (Verney) Sherard first saw the Sherard family home, Stappleford Hall near Melton Mowbray in Leicestershire, she had this to say in a letter to her father Ralph (II) on 8<sup>th</sup> August 1748:

*I think Stapleford is a much grander place than Stanford [the home of the Cave family], and in the new part the rooms are very Large and lofty and in some of them the best carving that I have seen, and the Gardens very fine. Mr Noel and his sister Dine here today.* [VL (2), p. 238.]



Stapleford House, since demolished © The Owner

Bennet and Elizabeth had four sons and a number of daughters but none of these children survived. She died in childbed on 7<sup>th</sup> June 1756.

Saturday last died the Lady of the Right Hon. the Earl of Harborough, and Sister to the Right Hon. Earl Verney.

*The Whitehall Evening Post* 8<sup>th</sup> June 1756

After Elizabeth's death her husband married Frances Noel who died shortly thereafter and then Margaret Hill who died likewise and he then married lastly on 8<sup>th</sup> October 1767 Elizabeth Cave the eldest daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (Davies) Cave (5<sup>th</sup> Bart.) but she too died soon after. Bennet Sherard died on 24<sup>th</sup> February 1770 without any surviving issue and so the title went to his brother Robert.

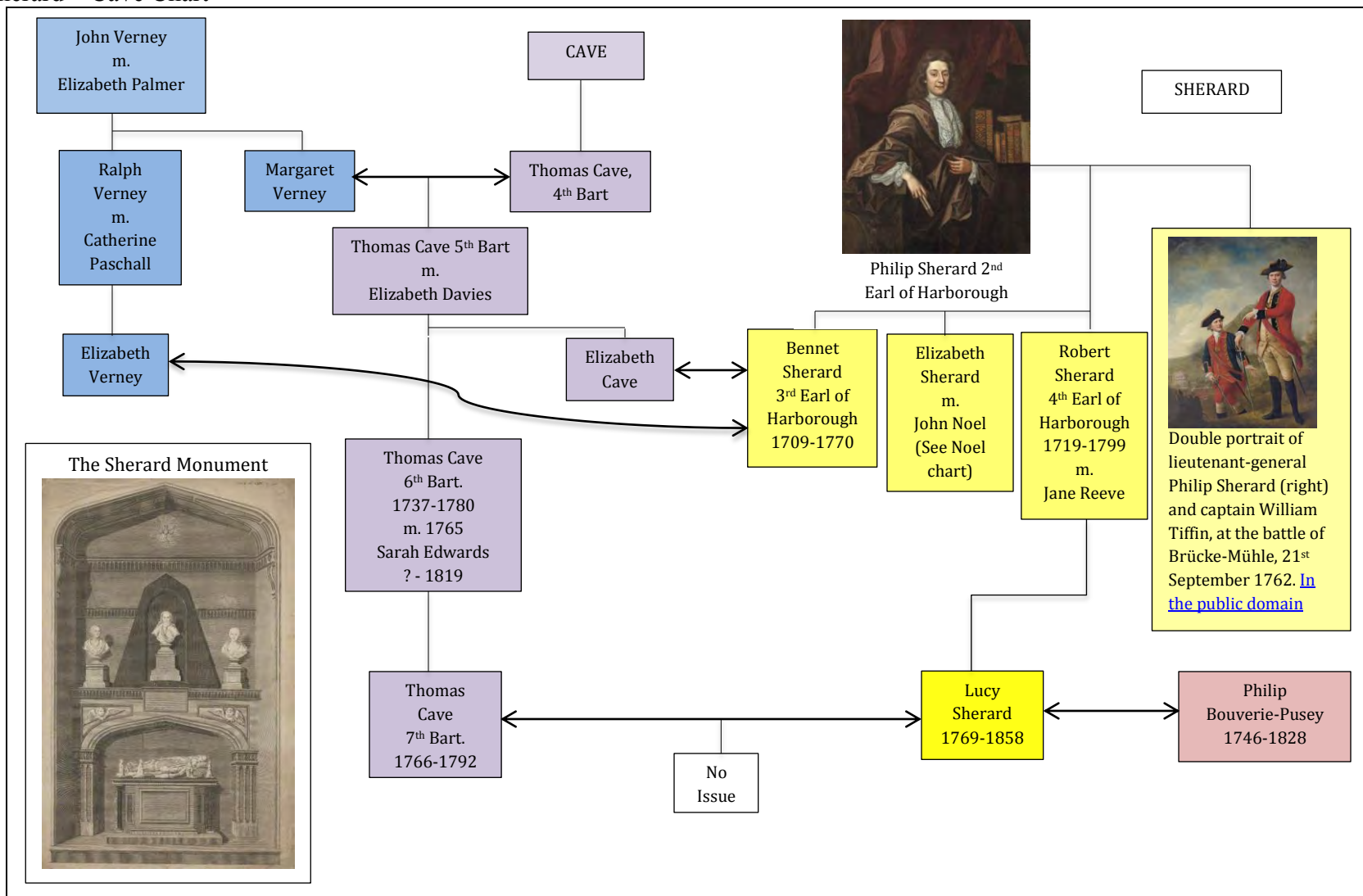
The reader may have noticed a succession of Cave-Sherard-Verney marriages each of which are displayed on the chart below.

Katherine (Kitty), the second daughter of Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney, we know little about. Her nickname was 'little mouse'. She died on 17<sup>th</sup> August 1750 and appears not to have left a will.

**Continued.**  
Last Week died, at her Father's House at Little Chelsea, the Lady Katherine Verney, Daughter of the Right Hon. Earl Verney, of the Kingdom of Ireland, and Member of Parliament for Wendover in Buckinghamshire, and Sister to the Countess of Harborough.

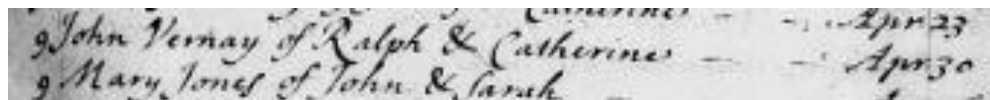
*The General Advertiser, Wednesday, August 22, 1750*

Sherard – Cave Chart



John Verney (II) (1711-1737)

According to the Verney Letters as their first child had been a girl (Elizabeth), there was great family rejoicing and relief when a son and heir, John, was born on 30<sup>th</sup> April 1711 in Cecil Street, London. He was christened on 9<sup>th</sup> May at St. Martin in the Fields by Mr. William Vickers, and his god parents were his great grandfather Ralph Palmer (I), his grandfather John Verney (I), and Catherine's sister Mary Paschall who later became Mrs Stone.



John was educated at Mr. Vaslett's School at Fulham and at the age of eighteen was admitted to Trinity College, Cambridge on 19<sup>th</sup> November 1728. [See also VL (2), p. 138]

**Verney, The Hon. John. Son of Lord Fermanagh. School, Fulham, London (Mr Vaslett). Age 18. Nobleman, November 19, 1728. Tutor, Mr Morgan. [Matriculated, 1729. Did not graduate.]**

Soon after his marriage to Elizabeth Davies, Sir Thomas Cave (5<sup>th</sup> Bart.) writes on 29<sup>th</sup> May 1736 to his uncle Ralph Verney (II):

*The 27<sup>th</sup> of this month I departed the Life of Batchelor, which example I hope Mr. [John Verney] will soon follow, & that we may mutually support the Commendable Ambition of striving to make the best of husbands.* [VL (2), p. 140]

Sir Thomas's hopes for his cousin were fulfilled that summer when on 8<sup>th</sup> July 1736 at Tooting in Surrey, John Verney married Mary Nicolson/Nicholson, the daughter of Josias Nicolson/Nicholson of Clapham, a wealthy Thames Street brewer and his wife Christiana Cholmley<sup>65</sup>.

Josias was the son of the reverend Joseph Nicholson and Mary Brisco[e] of Hawkesdale Hall in Cumberland. Mary was the daughter of John Brisco of Crofton in Thursby.

Below from *The Universal Spectator and Weekly Journal* for Saturday 19<sup>th</sup> June 1736:

---

<sup>65</sup>They were married on 21<sup>st</sup> September 1693 at St. Olave, Southwark.

**Next Tuesday the Hon. Mr. Verney, eldest Son of the Right Hon. the Earl of Fermanagh, is to be married to Miss Nicholls, Daughter of Mr. Nicholls, an eminent Brewer of this City, an agreeable young Lady with a Fortune of 20,000 l. down.**

We have no details of the preliminary marriage negotiations although Mary's portion was said to be over £30,000 [Whyman, p. 136]. The newspapers rather misleadingly reported the marriage as follows:

**Tuesday the Hon. Mr. Veney, eldest Son to the Right Hon. the Lord Viscount Fermanagh, was married at Clapham to Miss Nichols, Daughter of Nathaniel Nichols, Esq; an eminent Brewer of this City, a beautiful young Lady with a Fortune of 25,000 l.**

*The British Gazetteer, Saturday, 10<sup>th</sup> July 1736.*

However, John Verney's health was not robust and on 31<sup>st</sup> May 1737 his father Ralph (II) writes to his sister in law Mrs. Mary (Paschall) Stone from Chelsea.

*I and my eldest son [John] have been in Northamptonshire to see an Estate, and since his return he has been extremely ill. We thought it a fever and sent for Sir Hans [Sloan], and since that for Doctor Leene, the latter says it is upon his Nerves, and he has no fever but lowness of spirits; he has been ill a week, yesterday he got up and bore it very well. I pray God send him better to our Comfort.* [VL (2), pp. 145-146]

Mary (Paschall) Stone responds to Ralph (II)'s letter on 3<sup>rd</sup> June 1737.

*I am more sorry for dear Mr Verney's illness than I can express, and most earnestly pray to God for his recovery. I beg a letter from some hand next post how he does, for I shall be in a sad way till I know he is better, I do so heartily love him; and I pray God the fright and concern do not disorder your Lordship, my dear sister [Catherine], nor poor Mrs. Verney his lady. I think Dr. Leene is a man of great judgement. If Mr. Verney knows I have heard of his illness, I beg you will favour me in telling him that my best wishes and respects attend him and Mrs. Verney also.* [VL (2), p.146]

John's father answers by return of post:



*I am now with my dear son at Clapham, who is in the utmost danger, and I am afraid can't live many days; his fever is constantly upon him; I hope that God will yet restore him, but if he thinks him fitter for heaven than earth, we must pray for grace to support under so great a trial.* [VL (2), p. 146]

But Ralph's prayers went unanswered and he writes again to his sister in law Mary Stone on 6<sup>th</sup> June 1737.

*Your repeated concern for our Dear Child ought always to be remembered, and no one was more sensible of it than he was while living, but he left us yesterday morning, about 9 O'clock, and we can never see him more in this world, but I trust in God we shall all meet in Heaven, where I daresay he now is in perfect happiness, which I can never more enjoy here for want of him....* [VL (2), p. 146] His death was reported by the newspapers:

**On Sunday (not before) died at his Father-in-Law's Seat at Clapham, the Hon. Mr. Verney, Son to the Lord Viscount Fermannagh. About a Year ago he married the only Daughter of Mr. Nichols, a very wealthy Brewer in Thames-street.**

7<sup>th</sup> June 1737

A contemporary description is:

*The said John Verney, to the great grief of his parents, died at Clapham of a fever on Sunday morning, the 5 June 1737. He was carried from Clapham about 3 o'Clock in the Morning, the 20 June 1737, and was at Middle Claydon about 7 o'clock that evening and was buried there at that time.* [VL (2), p. 147]

John's sister Elizabeth writes to her father Ralph (II):

*I present my Condoling Respects to all your family, to my Uncle Palmer....* [VL (2), p. 147].

John's wife, Mary (Nicholson) Verney, was pregnant at the time of her husband's death and on 21<sup>st</sup> October 1737 she gave birth to a daughter, Mary, who would eventually



John Verney (II)  
© The Claydon House Trust

go on to inherit the title of Fermanagh and the estate at Claydon.

Mary (Nicholson) Verney's sister Elizabeth married John Knapp whose family also had extensive land holdings in Buckinghamshire with an estate called Little Linford. However John and Elizabeth did not have children. Another Nicholson daughter, Christian, married Felix Calvert and had descendnats (For the Knapp family see [The History and Antiquities of the County of Buckingham, Volume 4](#) by George Lipscomb. For Calvert see below)

The Verney and the Knapp families, being close Buckinghamshire neighbors, were often guests of each other. After Mary (Nicholson) Verney was widowed her father Josias Nicholson writes to Ralph Verney (II) on 24<sup>th</sup> July 1737 while visitng the Knapp family at Little Linford:

*Your daughter [in law] is in tolerable health ... her sister [Elizabeth (Nicholson)] Knapp is exceeding kind to her and does all in her power to assist and divert her. When we first came she would frequently go into her closet alone.* [VL (2), p. 234]

The Knapp's Linford estate passed to John's brother Matthew Knapp who had married Catherine Primatt who in her day was a known poet.



Little Linford Hall - home of the Knapp family

Jonathan Richardson was particularly taken with Catherine (Primatt) Knapp and drew several sketches of her, but we digress.



Catherine Knapp by Jonathan Richardson. She was Elizabeth (Nicholson) Knapp's sister in law. Right is George Knapp also by Jonathan Richardson and another of Elizabeth's Knapp-in-laws © National Portrait Gallery, London

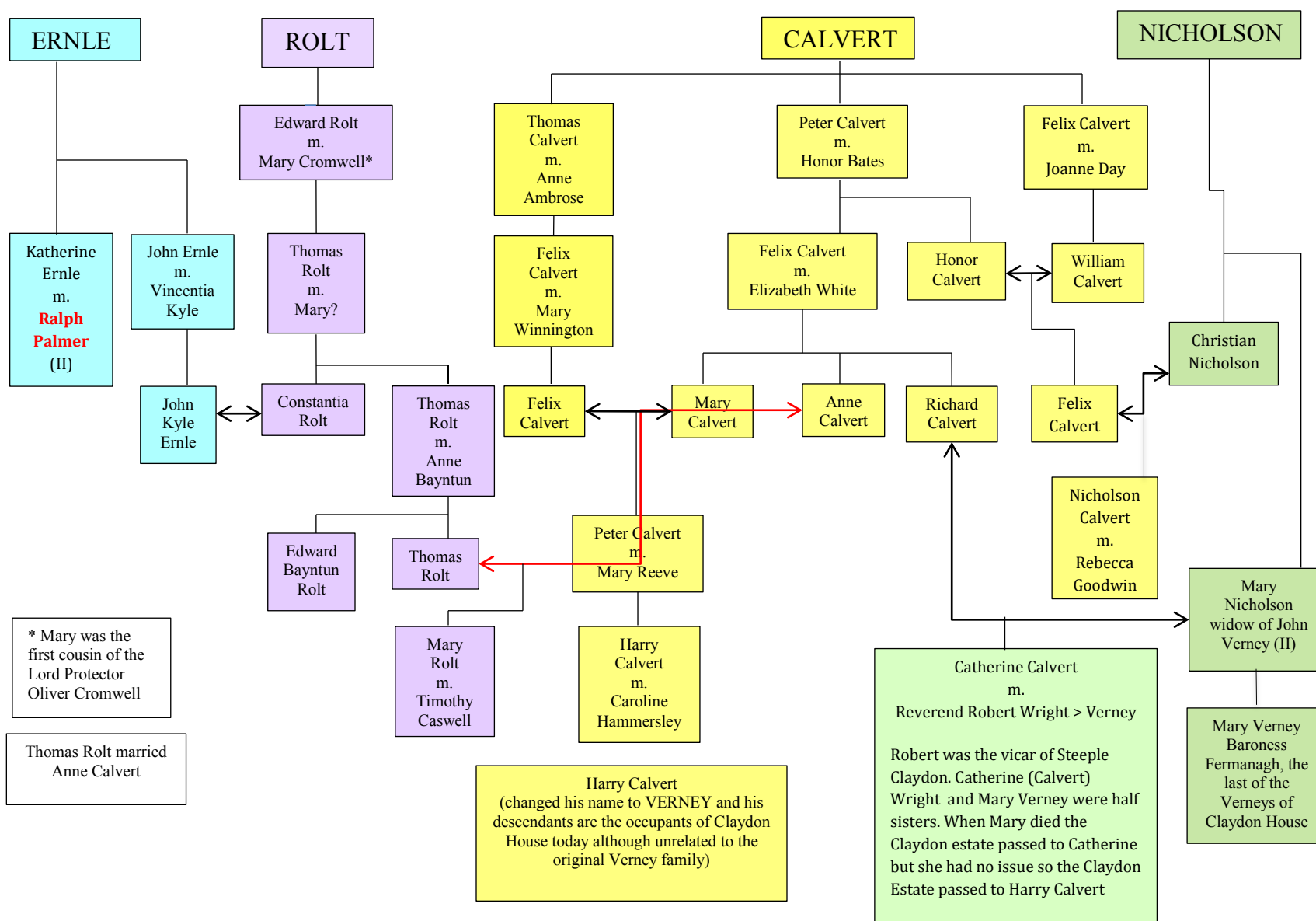
Four years after the death of John Verney (II), Mary married Richard Calvert:

**A few Days since Mr. Calvert, Brother to Mr. Alderman Calvert, was married to Mrs. Verney, Reli<sup>d</sup> of the Hon. Mr. Verney, Son to the Lord Viscount l'ermannagh, and Daughter to Mr. Nicholson of Clapham in Surrey, (formerly a great Brewer in Thames-street) a very agreeable Lady with a Jointure of 1600l. per Annum.**

*The London Evening Post, 8<sup>th</sup> December 1741*

See also the section on the Nicholson / Nicolson family at the very end of this paper.

\_\_\_\_\_





Ralph Verney III, (1714 – 1791); the last male Verney.

Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney's second son Ralph (III) was born on 1<sup>st</sup> February 1714 at Baddow in Essex. As the second son he was not expected to inherit however, when his brother John died in 1737, and John's posthumous child was a girl, at the age of twenty-three Ralph became the heir to Claydon on 21<sup>st</sup> October 1737.

From 1721 he was educated at Brentford, Middlesex with his Palmer cousins Ralph (III) and Hamey under the tutelage of the Reverend John le Hunt.

He entered the Middle Temple in 1729. He was later admitted fellow-commoner of Christ's College, Cambridge on 20<sup>th</sup> April 1733, and graduated MA in 1735. He gave no trouble to the family when it came to his studies [VL (2), p. 138 and p. 177].

However, Ralph delivered two irrecoverable blows to the fortunes of the Verneys. First, he did not produce any surviving children, and second he squandered the family's wealth through ruinous extravagance, injudicious business dealings, and an absurd generosity that also destroyed his parliamentary interest (see DNB). He thus left an insolvent estate to his niece Mary the daughter of his deceased elder brother John.

John Broad in *Transforming English Rural Society: The Verneys and the Claydons, 1600-1820* sums up Ralph's contribution to the Verney's 'fortune' thus:

The history of the Verney estates [after Ralph inherits] provides a spectacular example of aristocratic dissipation of wealth [and] indebtedness ... The second Earl Verney managed not only to consume the £70,000 in portions that he and his brother had received, plus the



Ralph Verney (III) © Claydon House Trust



inheritance that his wife received from her father, but also to put the estate over £100,000 in debt ...The second earl's enormous fortune had been built up over three generations, carefully marshalled by thrifty lifestyles, carefully planned marriages, and obedient elder sons, and brought to fruition by two spectacular heiress marriages.... There was no inherited financial crisis. In 1740 the Verneys were solvent, with resources spread between land and sound paper investments. Nor were there hidden family charges, liabilities to younger brothers and sisters, or crippling jointures... And yet despite all these advantages, Ralph (III) managed to dissipate his entire estate.

But before disaster struck a muddled announcement of an intended marriage between Ralph Verney and Mary Herring, who had a younger sister Sarah, appeared in the newspapers:

**A Marriage will soon be consummated between the Hon. John Verney, Esq; only Son and Heir-apparent to the Lord Viscount Forrester's of Chelsea, and Miss Sarah Herring, youngest Daughter of Henry Herring of Mincing-Lane, Esq; a young Lady of very great Merit, and a Fortune of Fifty Thousand Pounds.**

21<sup>st</sup> June 1740

Below the marriage allegation dated 10<sup>th</sup> September 1740:

And that he knoweth of no lawfull or Impedim<sup>t</sup>  
By reason of any precontract, Convincibility, Affinity  
or any other lawfull mean or otherwise to hinder  
the said intended Marriage of the truth of  
which he made Oath and prayed Licent to  
Solemnize the said marriage in the Cathedral  
Church of Saint Paul London, or in Grays Inn Chapel  
or Whitehall Chappell.

Ralph Verney

10<sup>th</sup> Sept<sup>r</sup> 1740

Appeared personally The Honourable  
Ralph Verney of Chelsea in the County of Middlesex  
Esquire aged Twenty One years and upwards  
and a Bachelor and alledged that he intendeth  
to marry with Mary Herring of Mincing Lane  
London Spinster aged also Twenty One years  
and upwards.

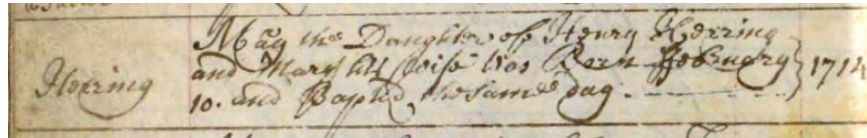
Ralph married Mary Herring on 11<sup>th</sup> September 1740 [VL (2), p. 181].

On Thursday the Hon. Mr. Verney, eldest  
Son of the Right Hon. the Lord Viscount  
Fermanagh, was married to Miss Herring,  
Daughter of Henry Herring, Esq; of Min-  
cing-Lane, one of the Directors of the Bank  
of England, a young Lady of 40,000 l.  
Fortune.

18<sup>th</sup> September 1740

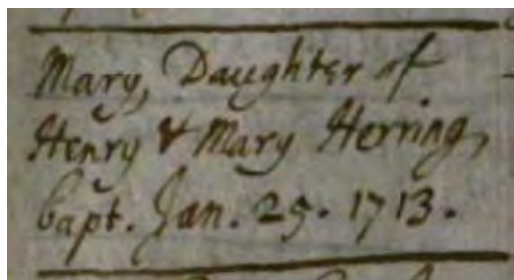
Mary was the daughter of Henry Herring and Mary Fincher. Henry was a merchant of Mincing Lane and a director of the Bank of England. Among the Verney letters there is no correspondence regarding a marriage settlement, although Whyman states that Mary's portion was £30,000.

Mary Herring was born on 10<sup>th</sup> February 1714/15 and baptised that same day at St. Gabriel, Fenchurch Street.



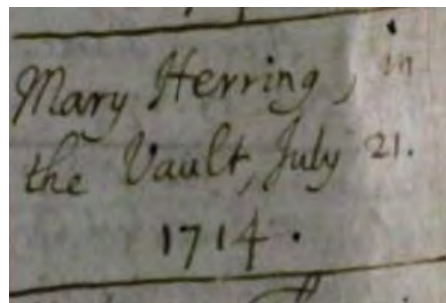
Herring Mary the Daughter of Henry Herring  
and Mary his wife was born ffebruary  
10 and Baptised the same day. 1714

She may well have been named after an earlier Mary who was born in 1713 and baptised at St. Peter le Poer.

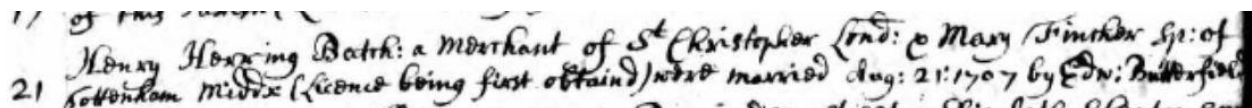


Mary, Daughter of  
Henry & Mary Herring bapt. Jan,  
25. 1713

But this Mary died and was buried at St Peter le Poer on 21<sup>st</sup> July 1714.



Mary's parents Henry Herring and Mary Fincher were married on 21<sup>st</sup> August 1707 at St. Mary Magdalene in Bermondsey, Surrey by the Reverend Edward Butterfield.



Henry and Mary (Fincher) Herring had three surviving daughters: Mary, Henrietta Maria, and Sarah.

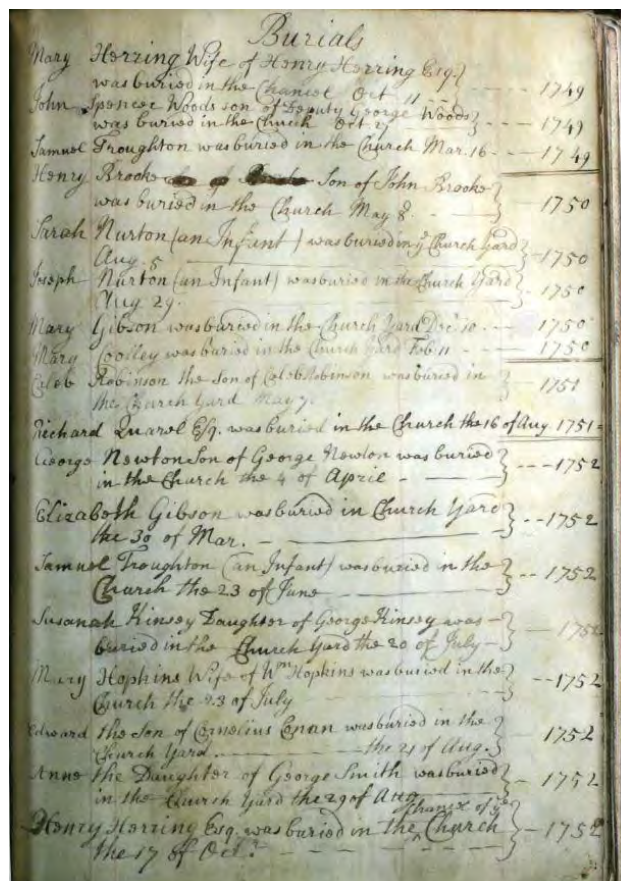
Mary (Herring) Verney's mother Mary (Fincher) Herring died in October 1749. The notice below is dated 5<sup>th</sup> October:

**Yesterday died, at his House in Mincing-Lane, the  
Lady of Henry Herring, Esq; one of the Directors of  
the Bank of England.**

Mary (Fincher) Herring was buried on 11<sup>th</sup> October 1749 at St. Margaret Pattens. Her husband Henry died on 13<sup>th</sup> October 1752 and his death was announced on the 14<sup>th</sup>:

**Yesterday Morning died Henry Herring, Esq;  
one of the Directors of the Bank of England.**

Henry was buried on the 17<sup>th</sup> (last entry on the parish record below, Mary's is the first).



And both Henry's burial and wealth were duly noted in the newspapers:



**Last Night the Corpse of Henry Herring, Esq; of Mining-lane, (who died a few Days since, very rich) was interr'd in a very grand mannèr, in St. Margaret's Church in Rood-lane, Fenchurch-street.**

Below is a Bank of England memorandum indicating that the late Henry Herring had £2000 invested in stock held by the bank that the bank was releasing to Henry's sole executrix, his daughter Sarah.



Part of Henry's wealth can be accounted for by the fact that he had married an heiress (Mary Fincher), as the newspaper announcing his father in law's death on 28<sup>th</sup> May 1728 indicates:

**wealthy Brazier.**

**Also Yesterday died at Cheshunt in Hertfordshire, Philip Fincher, Esq; by whose Death a considerable Estate comes to Henry Herring, Esq; of this City.**

**On Sunday last died at his Lodgings in Frank-**

Below the monument to Peter Fincher at St. Mary the Virgin, Cheshunt.





NEAR THIS PLACE LYES  
INTERRED THE BODY OF  
PETER FINCHER ESQ,  
WHO DEPARTED THIS LIFE  
27TH DAY OF MAY ANNO  
DOMINAO 1728 AETET 36

Soon after inheriting the Claydon estate in 1752, Ralph started consulting architects to begin construction on a vast new house to replace the old one. He also began amassing books, pictures, and works of art with which to fill it. On 20<sup>th</sup> April 1758 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society, which prompted him into further grandiose schemes whereby he aspired to become a patron of the arts.



An artist's rendering of how Claydon would have looked if it had been completed according to plans © The Claydon House Trust

In his heyday he cut a magnificent figure as Lipscomb noted:

Lavish in his personal expenses, and fond of show, he was one of the last of the English nobility who, to the splendour of a gorgeous equipage, attached musicians constantly attendant upon him, not only on state occasions but in his journeys and visits: a brace of

tall negroes with silver French horns behind his coach and six, perpetually making a noise. (Lipscomb in *History of Buckinghamshire*, Vol. 1, . pp. 183-4)

The following is extracted from *Claydon House, Bucks, the Seat of Sir Edmund Verney, Bart. Part I* by R. S. Clouston published in *The Burlington Magazine*, Vol. 5, No. 13 (April, 1904). Some additional material has been included. Later articles on the same topic give a lesser role to the architect Robert Adam than Clouston does here.

Earl Verney, who came into possession of the [Claydon] estate in 1752, had a mania for building, which he indulged to his own ruin. He began almost at once, the stables being dated 1754; but his ambition was to create a house which should, without the use of gilding, outrival the Temple's house at Stowe.

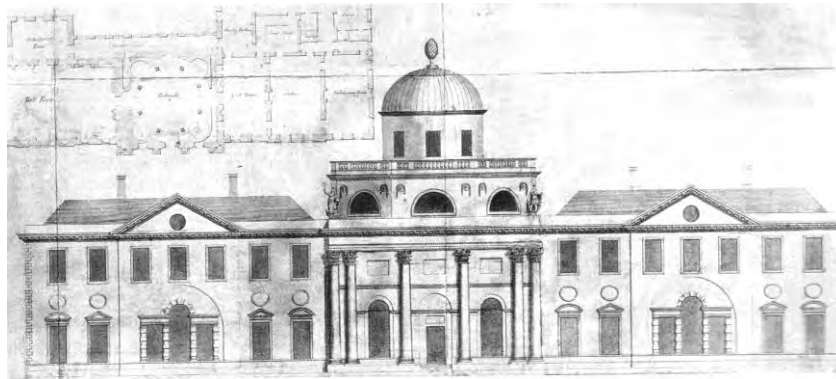
For this purpose he employed Robert Adam, whom he possibly met while that architect was studying at Rome. A new wing, with a suite of rococo rooms by Luke Lightfoot, was added, and work was begun on a domed rotunda and great ballroom, designed by Sir Thomas Robinson, but these were unfinished at Verney's death and were demolished in 1792.



The two architects of Claydon House, Robert Adam (left) and Sir Thomas Robinson  
© National Portrait Gallery, London.

By 1770 Verney was laying out the gardens with trees and plants obtained from the Southern Netherlands. The house, as Adam built it, exists only in the form of a plan, for its ducal magnificence required a corresponding income to live in it, and it was not even completed in all its details when the smash came. Of the furniture, which probably comprised much of Adam's designing, there is unfortunately not a single trace, as it was all

carried away by the creditors, even to a carved mantelpiece imported from Italy, which, not being fixed in position, was regarded as a moveable.



Plans for the new Claydon House © The Claydon House Trust

Perhaps one of Verney's biggest mistakes was in his employing Luke Lightfoot as architect, master mason, surveyor of works, and most especially carver, as it turned out Lightfoot was also light of hand for behind the wizardry of wood and plaster work had lain 'base and devilish conduct'. Lightfoot, according to Sir Thomas Robinson, was 'an ignorant knave with no small spice of madness in his composition ... the more you sift into this ... villain's conduct' he wrote to Verney, 'the more you will be astonished'. Lightfoot seldom went to Claydon; he bought costly materials and used cheaper ones on the house, lining his pockets ever more handsomely over the years. Much of the plastering after Lightfoot was done by Joseph Rose.



Some of Luke Lightfoot's plaster work at Claydon House © The Claydon House Trust

When Lightfoot was finally taken to court by Verney it was realised that out of the £30,000 that had supposedly been spent on the house, only £7,000 had been put toward its construction. Both men were to suffer sadly through their profligacy: the great craftsman carver ending up as a victualler in Dulwich, while Verney had to flee to debtor's exile in France.



But, instead of remaining on the continent, Verney returned some time after 1771 to the dismantled and deserted house, where, by the loyalty of his tenantry, his presence was kept secret. There is something very pathetic in the picture of his rambling through the empty rooms of the house which it had been the dream of his life to build. And, there is a tale of a village lad who was wandering about the deserted Claydon stables and who looked in at one of the cobwebbed windows of the great empty house, and saw his broken master passing through and of his beckoning from one of the windows to the boy whom he saw playing outside, so as to have a human being to speak to.

Verney's niece and heiress, Lady Fermanagh, finding the house much too large for her requirements or income, pulled down at least two-thirds of it, in what seems to have been rather a random manner. Many of the alterations were not made under the direction of a professional architect, and some of them are far from happy. No proper entrance was made, but at a later date windows in two adjoining rooms were turned into doors, thus giving two entrances only separated by a few yards.



The Last of the Verneys – Ralph (III) and Mary (Herring). © The Claydon House Trust

There is, in fact, 'no dining-room, no drawing-room, and no front door.' From the outside Claydon House is disappointing in every way. The plan of the whole has naturally been irretrievably ruined, and the absence of a proper entrance is not only a loss architecturally, but somehow suggests a museum rather than a house.

In this instance, nevertheless, there is not so much lost as might at first be imagined, for Robert Adam thought from the interior outwards. He always seems to have had before his mind the fact that the people for whom he designed would be more affected by the beauty of the rooms in which they were to spend so much of their lives than by the external design.

The massive expansion of Claydon House not only cost money but also human life as the following from *Lloyd's Evening Post* on 17<sup>th</sup> April 1761 indicates:

**On Friday the 10th inst. two labourers undermining a wall at Lord Verney's, were unhappily covered by its falling upon them; one was killed upon the spot, and the other died on Saturday last, having had both his legs broke, one of which was instantly taken off, but could not save his life."**

[\*The History of Parliament\*](#) has this to say about the 2<sup>nd</sup> and last earl:

After his defeat at the polls in 1784 Verney, his financial affairs brought to ruin by folly, extravagance and absurd, unrequited generosity, particularly to the Burkes, fled to France to escape arrest for debt. While there was little to show for the subsequent efforts of his friends to salvage something from the wreck, the related campaign of a combined Whig and independent interest to restore him to the Buckinghamshire seat, which was materially aided by his popularity and standing in the county, resulted in his unopposed return in 1790, when he came back to England. The bailiffs were soon put into Claydon, however, and the death of his wife in January 1791, when, so tradition has it, Verney evaded his creditors by hiding in the hearse, crowned the misfortunes of his later years.

To Edmund and William Burke he was most absurdly generous [which the Burkes appear to have availed themselves of at every opportunity, despite their professed concern for Verney]. Twice at his own expense he returned Edmund for Wendover, and William by arrangement with Lord Bruce, for Great Bedwyn. In 1766 he financed William's speculations in East India Stock, for which the Burkes lauded him to the skies: it was according to Edmund who took full advantage of Verney's naivety "marvellous in the conduct, marvellous in the motives of action" and William wrote of Verney's "wonderful goodness and friendship". In 1768 he lent the Burkes £6,000 towards the purchase of a property called Gregories, though it is not clear that the loan was in fact used for this purpose.

On another occasion Edmund Burke wrote:



Edmund Burke whose career  
Ralph (III) eagerly promoted.  
© National Portrait Gallery, London



*I am extremely anxious about the fate of Lord Verney ... It is past all description, past all conception, the supinities, neglect, and blind security of my friend in everything that concerns him. He suspects nothing, he fears nothing, he takes no precautions, he imagines all mankind to be his friend. But he was also ... an indulgent, humane, and moderate landlord, a great protector of the poor within his reach.*

Verney was more enterprising than judicious. He made speculative purchases in West Indian lands, was concerned in an unsuccessful venture for the manufacture of French cambrics at Winchelsea, and in 1766/69 he engaged in East India stock and interventions in the Company's internal affairs which ended in disaster. Most serious was his speculative venture in partnership with William Burke and an Amsterdam merchant Volkert van Jever, which left them with a liability of £47,000 the whole of which fell on Verney.

An interesting comment on the Burke-Verney relationship was published in *Notes and Queries* and can be [read here](#).

Other misfortunes befell the earl such as in December 1764 when the Verney's home in Curzon Street was broken into:

**On Monday Night some Villains broke into the House of the Earl Verney, in Curzon-Street, May-Fair, and stole out of the same, Plate to the Amount of upwards of 50l. which they carried off undiscovered.**

But a month later the offender, Edward Williams, was apprehended, tried, and convicted:

Yesterday 14 prisoners were tried at the Old Bailey, one of whom was capitally convicted, viz. Edward Williams, an old offender, for a burglary in the dwelling house of Earl Verney, and stealing a quantity of plate; there were six separate indictments against him. Six were cast for transportation; and seven acquitted, one of whom was Mary Bell, for the murder of Elizabeth Allen, spinster, with a pint-pot; and also James Tonkin, tried for setting fire to his Master's house in Salisbury-court, Fleet-street.

*Gazetteer and New Daily Advertiser* 22<sup>nd</sup> January 1765

Just one month later Williams was hanged at Tyburn:

This morning Matthew James, for forgery ; John Ward, for a robbery in Moorfields ; John Routon, for house-breaking in Chick-lane ; and Edward Williams, for robbing the house of the Right Hon. Earl Verney of plate, &c. were, pursuant to their sentences, executed at Tyburn. They all behaved with great penitence and devotion, particularly Williams, who, regardless of the numerous spectators, prayed in the most fervent manner from Newgate to the place of execution : Ward dying a Papist, turned his back on the Minister ; and Routon, near St. Giles's-Pound, pulled off his shoes and threw them among the crowd. After hanging the usual time, their bodies were delivered to their friends for interment.

*Lloyd's Evening Post* 11<sup>th</sup> February 1765

Accidents were reported such as the following:

Advice has been received in Town from Claydon, in Buckinghamshire, the Seat of Earl Verney, that his Lordship had met with an Accident by a Fall from his Horse, by which his Right Arm was broke ; that he had received several other Bruises, and that his Life was despaired of.

*James's Chronicle* 23<sup>rd</sup> October 1777

But then happily contradicted:

We are glad to contradict a paragraph in our paper of Saturday, which mentions Lord Verney's life as despaired of, from the accident he met with ; as we are assured by a Gentleman just arrived from Claydon, the seat of that noble Lord, that he left his Lordship in a fair way of recovery, and perfectly out of danger.

*James's Chronicle* 29<sup>th</sup> October 1777

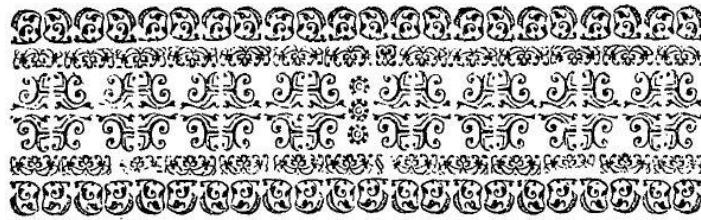
Throughout Ralph's final years property owned by him was sold off piecemeal as the following illustrations indicate:

To be SOLD by AUCTION,  
By Mess. CHRISTIE and ANSELL,  
In a few Days, on the Premises, at MIDDLE CLAYDON,  
the Seat of EARL VERNEY, in the County of  
BUCKS,  
By Virtue of an EXECUTION,  
SEVERAL Ricks of Hay, about 500 ton,  
Carts, Waggon, Horses, Cows, Sheep, Wheat, Dung,  
Live and Dead Stock, and other Effects.  
Notice of Viewing and Sale will be given on Tuesday  
next. [1015]

An Advertisement 3<sup>rd</sup> June 1783

THE SCHOOL opens again on Monday the 21<sup>st</sup> of July Inst.  
NOTICE TO CREDITORS.  
THE Creditors of the Earl of VERNEY, by  
Mortgage, Judgment, Bond, or otherwise, are desired  
forthwith to bring in their Demands to Peter Prevost, Esq.  
No. 11, Serle Street, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London.

Oxford Journal 3<sup>rd</sup> July 1783



21 July 1783.

*An ACT for Selling divers Lands and Tenements, and Shares of Lands and Tenements, in London, Middlesex, and Surry, of and belonging to Ralph Earl of Verney in the Kingdom of Ireland, Mary Countess of Verney, and Dame Henrietta-Maria Clayton, respectively; and for laying out the Money, arising by such Sale, in purchasing other Lands and Hereditaments, to be settled in lieu thereof.*



The death of Mary (Herring) Verney aged 75 was recorded for January 1791 in *The Annual Register*, Volume 33, p. 63.

**D E A T H S.**

Thursday last died suddenly at his Lordship's house in Curzon-street, May Fair, the Right Hon. Mary, Countess Verney, Lady of Ralph, Earl Verney. She was one of the daughters and co-heirs of Henry Herring, of London, Merchant, and aunt to Sir Robert Clayton, Bart. She was born 4th February, 1716, and married to his Lordship 11th September, 1740.

Mary's body was taken down to Claydon where it was buried on 4<sup>th</sup> February 1791. Her husband Ralph (III) died on 1<sup>st</sup> April 1791 (April fools day) and his death was announced in the London newspapers:

**L O N D O N**  
APRIL 2.  
Yesterday morning died at his house in Curzon-street, the Right Hon. RALPH Earl VERNEY, Viscount Firmanagh, Baron Verney of Belturbet, and a Baronet.—His Lordship married Sept. 11, 1740, Mary, daughter of Henry Herring, of London, Merchant, by whom (who died in February last), his Lordship having no issue, the title becomes extinct. His Lordship was Representative in Parliament for the County of Bucks.

And an obituary appeared in *The Gentleman's Magazine*, Volume 61, Part 1:

At his house in Curzon-street, Mayfair, aged 78, Ralph Earl Verney in the kingdom of Ireland, one of the representatives for the county of Buckingham. His Countess died Jan. 20. Ralph, who, on Sept. 11, 1740, married the daughter of Henry Herring, esq. of Mincing-lane, with a fortune of 40,000; but, in fact, it was much more. The last Earl had no issue, so that the titles are extinct. The late Earl was several times in parliament for Wendover and the

county of Bucks. At the general election in 1784 he was opposed in the county by Sir John Aubrey, who carried his election by about 25 only, owing to Lord Verney being then in France, and unable to give that personal attendance which would have insured his success. In 1790, however, his Lordship was again elected without opposition.

By the death of his father, and by his marriage, he was in possession of a noble estate, not less than £10,000 a year in old rents, besides a large sum of ready money. He bid out a great deal in altering the family seat at Claydon; but before he had finished it, he found himself unable to proceed. For many years before his death his affairs were in the greatest confusion, owing to some friends, who induced him to speculate in Change-alley. Some friends of a very different description had at last prevailed on him to let them undertake a settlement with his creditors, and had made some progress. Notwithstanding his distress, he would never rack-up his tenants in their rents. He was a man of great plainness, and steady in his attachment to the Rockingham party. Lady V. was a most excellent woman. She bore, her misfortune with the greatest magnanimity, and readily parted with her money, and even her jewels, at times when Lord V. was pressed.

The house in Curzon Street in which Ralph and Mary died was that sold to the Verneys by Ralph Palmer (III)'s widow Elizabeth (Peacock).

It should be noted that Mary (Herring) Verney's sister loyally named Henrietta Maria (1710-1774) did much better for herself. She married Sir Kenrick Clayton (1707-1769), MP for Bletchingley in Surrey. Their daughter Henrietta Maria Clayton (1738-1804) married Sir John Gresham and their daughter Catherine Maria Gresham married William Leveson Gower (1779-1851), first cousin of 1<sup>st</sup> Duke of Sutherland, from whence there are many descendants.





Titsey Place, Oxted, Surrey, the home of Mary (Herring) Verney's sister's descendants.

Below, two generations of the Verney family:



The Verney Family © Claydon House Trust

This painting, possibly by Charles Phillips (1708 - 1741), shows seated at a table drinking tea, Ralph (II) the first Earl with his wife Catherine Paschall, and seated next to her Mary Herring. Behind her stands her husband Ralph (III) the future

second earl. Behind them and facing away from the others toward a dark space is John Verney (II) while his wife Mary Nicholson looks toward him. Ralph (III) married Mary Herring in 1740 while his brother John died in 1737. The figure of Charon in his boat beckons in the background and tucked under John's arm is his hat, as if he is preparing to leave. Thus the painting was executed after John's death and in a sense commemorates him. In the far left margin an African male servant is seen moving away from the scene, carrying an object; perhaps the tray that was used to bring the tea to the table.

Phillips was painter whose short career is associated with rather stilted conversation pieces and portraits. Phillips's figures often lack presence and are awkwardly stiff; their poses selfconsciously arranged within a somewhat arid stage-like setting. Despite these shortcomings, he was popular with the nobility and counted among his patrons Frederick, Prince of Wales, John Churchill, 1<sup>st</sup> Duke of Marlborough, and Charles Seymour, 6<sup>th</sup> Duke of Somerset (whose mother later married John Ernle, the parents of Katherine (Ernle) Palmer).

### Mary Verney (1737 – 1810)

Ralph and Alice (White) Palmer's great great great granddaughter, Mary Verney, was born on 21<sup>st</sup> October 1737, five months after her father John Verney (II)'s death. Her birth is noted by her great aunt Betty Verney in a letter to her brother Ralph (II) dated 29<sup>th</sup> October 1737:

*I have received both my dear Brors. Letters and return all due thanks for letting me know Mrs. Verney [Mary Nicholson] is safely delivered, I heartily wish her, my Lady, and yourself, much joy in the little stranger, and hope it will be a growing comfort to you all. I congratulate my nephew Ralph [III] in particular [because he now became the heir to Cladon], and wish my two nieces [Elizabeth and Katherine (Kitty)] joy of their niece. [VL (2), p. 150]*

Mary Verney was baptized on 17<sup>th</sup> November 1737 at Holy Trinity, Clapham in Surrey.

*Sarah Daughter of Joseph Morris & Margaret his wife — — —  
Mary Daughter of the Hon<sup>ble</sup> Mr. John Verney & Mary his Wife —  
Elizabeth Daughter of John Bartlett & Anne his Wife —*

*Nov: 11.  
Nov: 17.  
Dec. 16.*

After she inherited the Claydon estates from her uncle, Mary Verney spent a great deal of time pulling the unfinished pile

down and trying to bring the estate's finances on to a more manageable footing.

*An ACT for Selling divers Lands and Tenements, and Shares of Lands and Tenements, in London, Middlesex, and Surry, of and belonging to Ralph Earl of Verney, in the Kingdom of Ireland, Mary Countess of Verney, and Dame Henrietta-Maria Clayton, respectively; and for laying out the Money, arising by such Sale, in purchasing other Lands and Hereditaments, to be settled in lieu thereof.*

[ 1758. ]

*Dublin-Castle, June 29, 1792.*

Letters Patent have been passed under the Great Seal of this Kingdom, granting unto Miss Mary Verney; Daughter and Heiress of John Verney, eldest Son of Ralph Baron Verney, of Belturbet in the County of Cavan, and Viscount Fermanagh, (afterwards Earl of Verney) the Dignity of Baroness Fermanagh, of the County of Fermanagh, and to the Heirs Male of her Body, the Dignity of Baron Fermanagh aforesaid.

Mary died aged 63 unmarried on 15<sup>th</sup> November 1810 at May Place in Kent.





Mary Verney © The Claydon House Trust

As far as we can tell the *ONLY* surviving direct descendants of Ralph Palmer and Alice White are those that descend via Margaret (Verney) Cave. Among these descendants are those of Thomas Cave 5<sup>th</sup> Bart's daughter Margaret Cave who married John Moses and whose daughter Jane Moses married Aubrey Beauclerk, 6<sup>th</sup> Duke of St. Albans. Their daughter Mary Beauclerk married George William Coventry, 8<sup>th</sup> Earl of Coventry, and in turn their son Henry Amelius Coventry married Caroline Sterling Dundas from whom are numerous descendants including the current Earl of Suffolk (see chart). Likewise there are many Cave descendants via Sarah the daughter of Thomas Cave (6<sup>th</sup> Bart.) and Sarah Edwards. And, it is believed, that it is only through these two Cave lines (Margaret who married John Moses and Sarah who married Henry Otway) that Ralph Palmer and Alice White have descendants.

At a glance - the Verneys' parliamentary careers.

Monarch	Year	Name	Constituency
Anne	1710	John	Buckinghamshire
Anne	1713	John	Amersham
George I	1714	John	Amersham and in his place upon his decease his son Ralph (II)

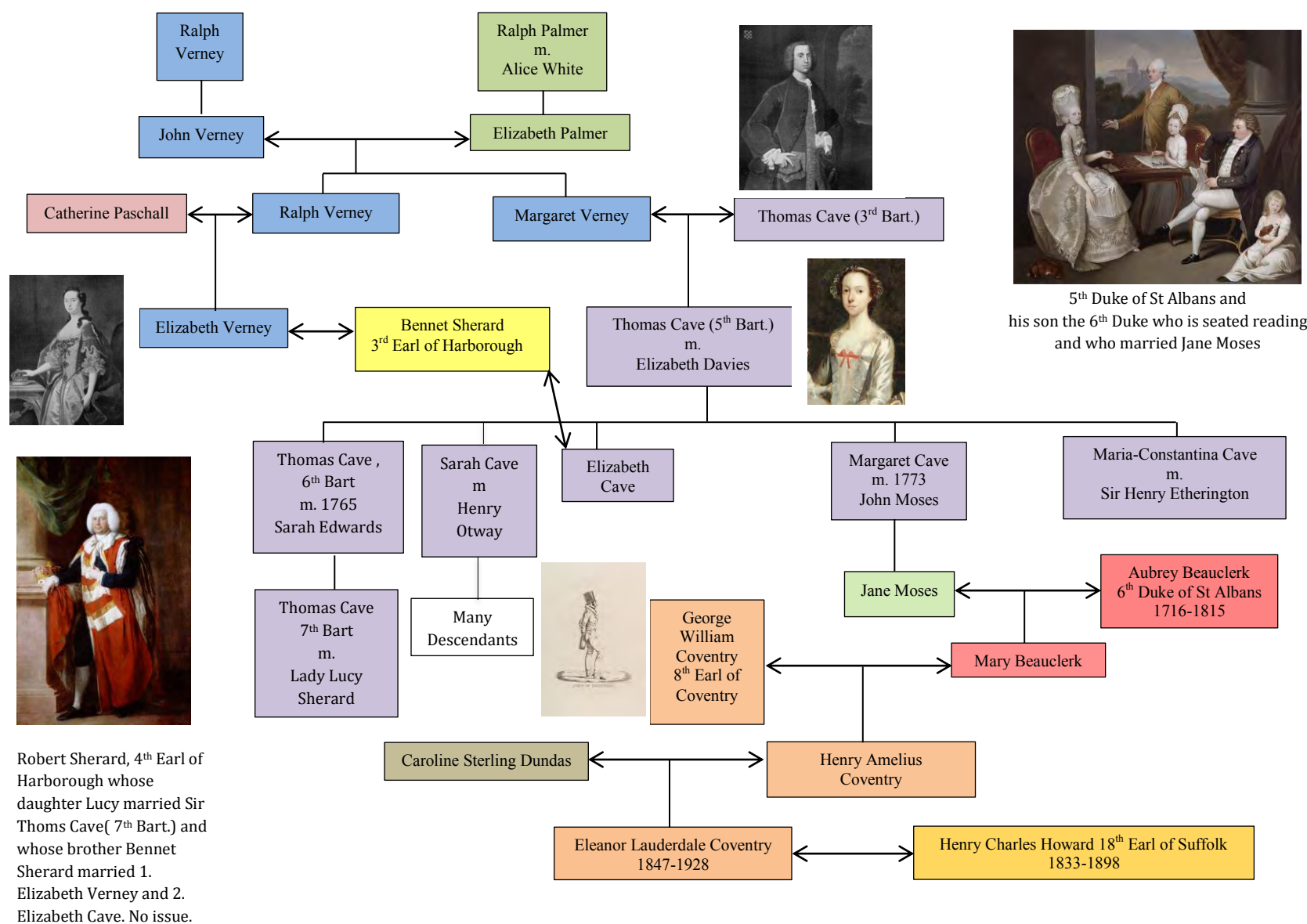
## The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea

---

George I	1722	Ralph (II)	Amersham
George II	1735	Ralph (II)	Wendover
George II	1747	Ralph (II)	Wendover
George III	1754	Ralph (III)	Wendover
George III	1768	Ralph (III)	Buckinghamshire
George III	1790	Ralph (III)	Buckinghamshire



## The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea





This group portrait depicts standing Aubrey Beauclerk, 2<sup>nd</sup> Baron Vere of Hanworth (later 5<sup>th</sup> Duke of St Albans), his wife Catherine, their son Aubrey, who married Jane Moses the daughter of John Moses and Margaret Cave, and daughters Catherine and Caroline.

### The Palmer-Verney Houses in Chelsea and the Chelsea Connection

Ralph Palmer (I) and his family settled in Chelsea in the middle of the seventeenth century at about the same time as his uncle Baldwin Hamey<sup>66</sup>. *A History of the County of Middlesex* (Vol. 12) states that Baldwin Hamey followed his nephew Ralph Palmer (I) to Chelsea although it would more likely have been the other way around. We know that Baldwin moved to Chelsea in 1665.

Two generations of Palmers lived at Chelsea, Ralph (I) and Ralph (II), but in 1746 Ralph (III) sold the Palmers' house to his cousin Ralph Verney (II) and Ralph (III) moved to the more centrally located Curzon Street. Some years later the Verneys decided to follow the Palmers to Curzon Street and Ralph Palmer (III)'s wife, the widowed Elizabeth (Peacock) Palmer, would sell her house in Curzon Street to Ralph Verney (III) and it was in this house that Ralph Verney (III) and his wife Mary died.

---

<sup>66</sup> Whyman states that the move by the Palmers followed an earlier move away from The City by Ralph Palmer (I)'s father in law William White (Whyman, p.69). I have not been able to establish such a move on William's part.

Elizabeth (Peacock) Palmer made the journey back to Chelsea where she died but in which house we cannot say.



Chelsea in the Eighteenth Century  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

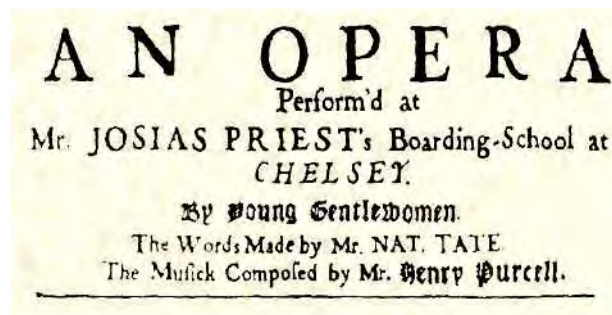
According to Whyman, Ralph Palmer (I) lived at 252-254 Fulham Road, which he purchased for £350 in 1671. The eighteen-room house had wainscoted walls, brass locks, tiles, and a 'piece of scripture' painted over the hearth.

Many of the social events held by the Palmers in their Chelsea home were attended by John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney including Christmas and wedding anniversaries and Elizabeth stayed there for three months after her first lay-in. John's children frequently stayed with their Palmer grandparents, even when John opposed their visits. The Palmers gave their eldest granddaughter Betty Verney such good instruction that she was educated at home with them.



Chelsea in the Eighteenth Century  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

Other Verney children were educated at nearby Chelsea establishments so that they could either stay with or be near to the Palmers. One of these schools was Josias Priest's which Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney herself had attended and which she and her husband visited on the occasion of the first performance of Purcell's *Dido and Aeneas*.



Mary (Molly), the daughter of John's older brother Edmund (Mun), started attending Josias Priest's school in Chelsea on 29<sup>th</sup> August 1683 aged eight years, along with her cousin Betty Denton. Both Molly's uncle John and her aunt, Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney, mention attending various events at the school in letters that they sent to Molly's father who was living at East Claydon in Buckinghamshire. And Mun relied upon John and Elizabeth to visit Molly and report on her progress.

John, along with Elizabeth, attended at Priest's school a performance of John Blow's *Venus and Adonis*, and on the printed



libretto John wrote the date of the performance: 17<sup>th</sup> April 1684. The next day he wrote a letter to his brother Mun:

*My Neece is well I saw her on Sunday for she dined at my Father Palmers. And this day she is to shew her art & skill in Dancing at the Grand Ball where (If I can spare time) Ile be purposely to see what progress shee hath made: which you need not question but is very large.*

On 21<sup>st</sup> April Mun replied to John:

*I pray give my humble service & thanks unto y[ou]r Father Palmer and his Lady for their Kindnesses and civilities to my Girle, and tho' I could not stay to see her Dance at the grand Ball, yet if shee Doth it Gracefully for the Time she Hath Beene at it, I shal bee Gladd to Heare it.*

On 24<sup>th</sup> April John responded to Mun:

*I received yours of the 21th and with it the Bagg of Pidgeons which you sent us for which both my wife & I give you many thanks and services: we were both at the Ball & opera last Thursday where we saw my neece dance & act some part in it, and truly she doth it very well & I wish you had seen her dance twould (If it be possible) have sett her a degree higher in your affections, she is a good Child & will doubtless deserve very well at your hands.*

On 28<sup>th</sup> April 1684, Mun wrote: *I received y[ou]rs of ye 24th ... and am Highly pleased with my Girle that shee Doth performe any thing that you approve of and Commend, I am willing to Hope & Believe shee will deserve y[ou]r Commendation, and then I shall Love Her Extremely.*

On several occasions John wrote to his brother about other balls in which Mary participated:

20<sup>th</sup> May 1685: *I have not been lately to Chelsey, but I have heard from thence & Pretty Miss is very well & tomorrow is the Greate Ball there. I wish you were then by to see how well she danceth.*

22<sup>nd</sup> April 1686: *This day (as was last Thursday) is the Grand Balle at Chelsey School, wherein your daughter is a great Dancer, my wife carryes as many of the Stewekelys as her Coach can hold, last weeke 4 of that family went to it.*

Music in the life of the Palmers was important and on the 7<sup>th</sup> March 1686/87 Ralph (II) at Little Chelsea writes to John Verney:

*Sir, I have gotten a very good Cremona violin, so that I would desire you not to put yourself to any trouble about sending for one.* [Historical Commission]



30<sup>th</sup> November 1687: *Brother, Tomorrow is a Grand Ball at Chelsey Schoole where I'm sure my neice will come off with honour.*

Other families also found Chelsea schools attractive places to send their children. After the death of his wife Francis North, Lord Keeper Guildford, turned his mind to the continuation of the education of his young family ... He sent his daughter Anne to the home of his sister Lady Wiseman<sup>67</sup> (Elizabeth North, later Countess Yarmouth) in Chelsea, *where also there was a good school for young ladies of quality, which was an advantage* ... the school in question was that run by Josias Priest and his wife. While at school, Lord North's daughter would have been a contemporary of Elizabeth Palmer's.

Francis's brother, Roger North, was a neighbor of the Verneys when they first moved to Hatton Gardens and he sometimes did legal work for the family. Another brother Dudley was in the Levant Company when John joined it in his earlier career. (See *Women, Religion and Education in Early Modern England* by Kenneth Charlton). There is also a North-Long marriage in a latter generation where the Long family is connected to a descendant of Richard and Hester (Palmer) Cradock's.



Chelsea in the Eighteenth Century with St. Luke's on the right.  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

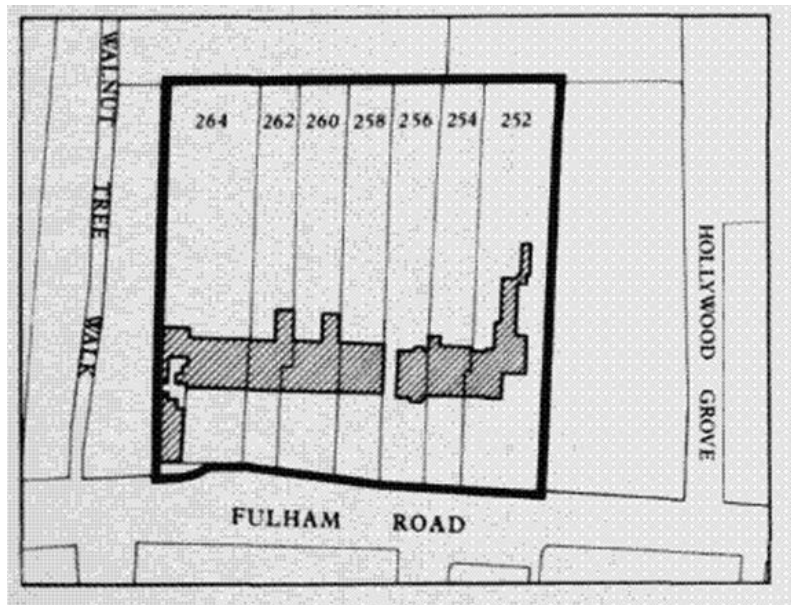
Another Verney-Palmer connection at Chelsea was the Cheyney family. An earlier Cheyney had married a Challoner. William Cheyney had recently married and the newly wedded Verneys and

---

<sup>67</sup> She had married a Wiseman who was related to Mary (Wiseman) Abell the stepmother of Mary (Abell) Verney who was in turn the mother of Molly Verney the subject of the exchange of letters between John and Mun above [See also The Wiseman Connection].

Cheyneys often dined at Chelsea together (see Whyman, p. 70) and later John and William would become political allies.

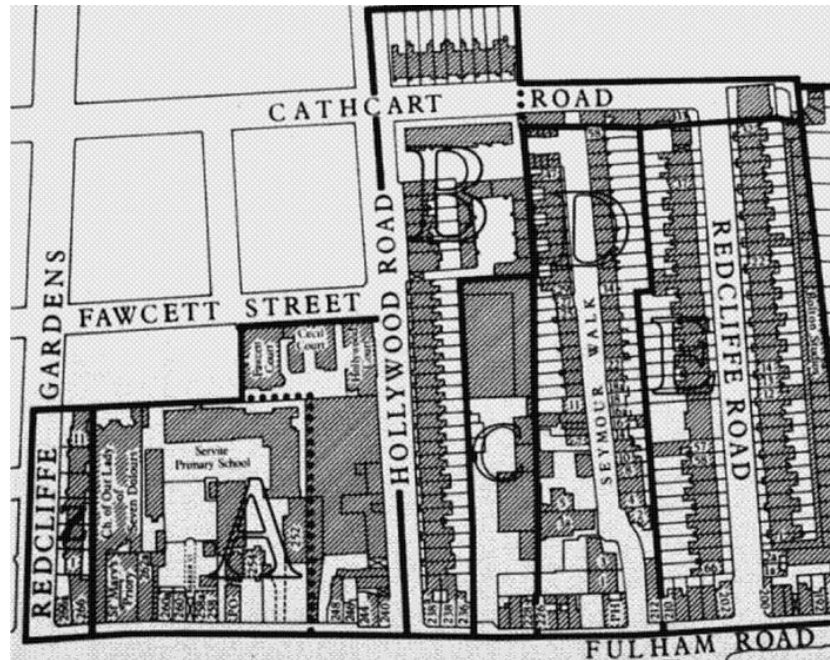
The following description of the Palmer's homes at Chelsea is adapted from [Survey of London, Volume 41](#)



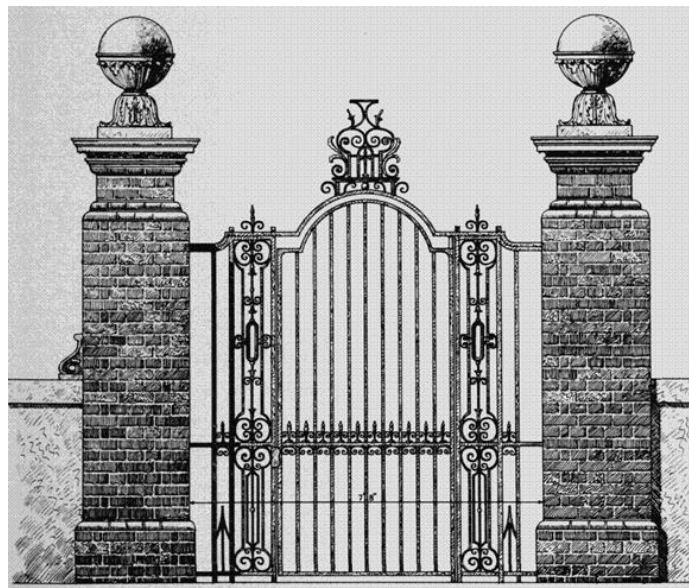
Between 1666 and 1670 the Palmer family initially occupied a house that was later numbered 258 (see map). The Palmers then moved to a house that occupied the sites marked Nos. 252/254 and they rented out no. 258. The house they moved to was a large brick house that was later divided into Nos. 252 and 254 Fulham Road. Before the Palmers took possession of 252/254, the house was owned by Thomas Maundy and then sold to Henry

Middleton, and to others in trust for him, in 1664. In 1666 the house was occupied by a Mr. De Visscher — a merchant of Dutch extraction, who died in 1669 and was the father-in-law of James Boevey, an owner of property nearby. After Visscher died Middleton took back the house and occupied it until he sold it to Ralph Palmer of Kensington, gentleman for £350.

By 1670 the Palmers owned both freeholds (i.e. Nos. 252/254 and No. 258), together with a five-and-a-half-acre piece of orchard and garden to the north. Henceforward Palmer and his descendants or their representatives occupied the larger house (ie the later Nos. 252/254) and let or sub-let the other (No. 258). Thus Ralph Palmer owned two pieces of property [now three] along what is today the Fulham Road between Hollywood Road [once known as Hollywood Grove] and Redcliffe Gardens [once known as Walnut Tree Walk] and where now stands [The Servite Roman Catholic School](#). The school which occupies a building referred to as The Verney House is shown on an Ordinance Survey map (1949-1962) below and is still numbered 252 today.



Ralph Palmer (1636–1716), the eldest son of a gentleman of property at Royden in Essex, lived here contentedly until his death, undisturbed by the proximity of a school and an inn. In 1679 he urged upon his future son-in-law [John Verney] the attraction of suburban owner occupancy *in any airy place, for it's a fine thing to sett rent free*. His fifteen-year-old daughter Elizabeth was in that year courted by John Verney.



The Gate to No 254/252, once owned by Ralph Palmer



The following year John and Elizabeth married. Elizabeth died in 1686 but the subsequent correspondence between Ralph Palmer and John and his father Sir Ralph Verney testified to a continuing friendship.



Chelsea in the Eighteenth Century.  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

In 1688 the Glorious Revolution broke out and on 10<sup>th</sup> January 1689 Ralph Palmer (II) writes to John Verney with some relief that the soldiers that had been quartered with them at Chelsea had left:

*.... I can tell you somewhat rather good news than bad, that the soldiers allotted these three weeks to our share marched on Tuesday, but others came in who quarter not upon gentlemen but innkeepers and shopkeepers. I hope we shall have no more, though I wish them well, for they are an affliction even to an afflicted people, which makes it proverbial that a bad peace is better than a just war.* [Historical Commission]

However although Palmer agreed with the purpose of the revolution he did not approve of some of the tactics used to recruit men. On 25<sup>th</sup> March 1690 he writes to Ralph (II):

*There is a great pressing for seamen, and several false press masters; one I saw pumped last night in the Temple, and others have gone near London into a carpenter's yard, and by scaring the workmen with colour of authority, have robbed the house. There is intelligence that the French fleet has landed men in Ireland, 'tis said 8,000, though that is but imaginary. Yesterday the Parliament addressed the King by way of answer to his speech, that they would support him with their best advice and assistance.* [Historical Commission]

3<sup>rd</sup> December 1705, Ralph Palmer (II) to John Verney:

*My Lord Wharton's great stable [in Church Lane], is converted into a play house, where we have all been to see great things, a fine Scaramouch, &c. performed by the Duke of Southampton's servants.*

Like many neighborhoods around London safety was a concern for the inhabitants and Ralph Palmer (I) writes to John Verney at Middle Claydon on 22<sup>nd</sup> October 1706:

*Here is a great house breaking all about London, and at Great Chelsea, two watchmen last week were almost killed by 4 rogues who had taken off a casement of Dr. King's .*

On Ralph Palmer (I)'s death in 1715/16, the property passed to Ralph (II), who continued in the house. (In 1700 he had married Catherine, the daughter of Sir John Ernle, who had lived next door to the east in 1685–93).



Chelsea in the Eighteenth Century.  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

Ralph Palmer (II), a barrister and *littérateur* (see *Bibliotheca Palmeriana*), occupied the house until his death in 1746, when it was sold along with the later No. 258, together with the five and a half acres of orchard ground to the north, to his nephew Ralph (II).

Evidently Ralph Verney (II) lived in the house until his death there in 1752, when it passed to his son Ralph (III) — initially, however, in trust for his sister Elizabeth, wife of Bennet Sherrard, third Earl of Harborough. Lord Harborough occupied, or had lately occupied, the house in 1759. In that year, however, (Lady Harborough being dead) Ralph Verney (III), as empowered by his father's will on a younger sister's consent, sold the house and orchard land. The buyer was a spinster, Diana Robson, of St. George's, Queen Square, Holborn. She



occupied the house later until 1775. In 1781–2 the big old Palmer-Verney house was divided into two, subsequently numbered 252 and 254.

### ***The former No. 258 Fulham Road***

The present No. 258 Fulham Road, the more easterly of a row of four, was owned in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries by the Palmer and later the Verney families. That house shared the same history of ownership as the more easterly detached house that was later divided as Nos. 252 and 254. Although thus associated with the detached house eastward (252/254), No. 258 was physically itself the easternmost of a 'terrace' of (originally) four big or biggish houses (264, 262, 260 and 258), of which the westernmost was latterly numbered 264 (see plan above), and all of which were probably erected in the 1650's. No. 258 can be first identified in 1666 and 1670–1 in the occupation of Ralph Palmer, he later occupied the detached eastern house (252/254).



A view of Chelsea Bridge  
© The Trustees of the British Museum

Subsequent occupants of No. 258, as tenants or sub-tenants of the Palmers, included Charles Knipe, perhaps the poet, from 1681 until 1686; a Mr. Gibbons and family in 1687; and the painter John Riley in 1688–90. Jonathan Richardson lived with Riley until his death in 1691 and it may have been this connection that brought Palmer and Richardson together (see their correspondence below). Richardson married Riley's niece Elizabeth Bray.

From 1691 to 1701 the house was occupied by Sir Bartholomew Shower, who had been Recorder of London under James II. Another lawyer, Richard Minshull, took it in 1706, but in c. 1714 assigned his lease to an alehouse-keeper nearby, who let it as lodgings.



Two of Ralph Palmer's tenants, left Sir Bartholomew Shower and right John Riley the painter whose 'close relation' Elizabeth Bray married Jonathan Richardson.  
© Trustees of the British Museum

This seems to have been less regretted by the Palmers than it might have been in a later age, as their relations sometimes stayed there. As owner of No. 258, Ralph Palmer (I) insured it in 1708, when a 'summer house' was specified among its appurtenances. This was an object of pride to the younger Ralph Palmer (II), newly succeeded in 1716, who spoke of it to his nephew Ralph Verney as: *a Noble Room 16 foot high and as wide standing by itself in the Garden.*

Ralph Palmer (II) began repairing No. 258 preparatory to letting it for private occupation. He was thankful the outgoing alehouse-keeper had left the wainscoting and marble hearth-stones behind as landlord's fixtures. By an outlay of £100 Palmer hoped to increase his rental by £20 a year. Palmer sends his nephew Ralph Verney (II) details in a letter dated 8<sup>th</sup> November 1716:

*I am extreamly busy doing necessary repairs to my next house [No. 258], which will cost me a great deal of money for nobody will take it without being put in thorough repair. It's a pretty place and I hope I shall not let it under £35 per annum. It has five rooms of a floor, and closets to every one, with a neat one over the porch and a pretty Ground to it, both Garden and Orchard, stabling for three or four horses, A Coach House, and special Cellars, and a Noble Room Sixteen foot high and as wide, standing by itself in the Garden. I propose to let it for a long term of years to encourage the tenant to expend the more upon it. I had a German with me to see it sent by a Foreigner he said at Court, but I have not heard of him since. I hope all your dear fireside are doing well.*

Finally, a relation took the house for a year or two and was *'so good a Tenant as to wainscot 2 Rooms'*, but then he ran away from his wife and Palmer did not find the long-term tenant he wanted until 1719, when it was taken by a John Stockwell, *first Clerk in Mr Smith (ye Teller's) office who marryd Smith the Organ maker's widow worth 4000 to him.*

The name of Stockwell continues at No. 258 until at least 1752. In the later 1750's the Spanish consul is said to have occupied the house. Like Nos. 252 and 254, ownership passed to Miss Robson in 1759, and then to Lewis Lochée in 1781.

The houses on the north and south sides of the Fulham road together made a little hamlet of their own, separated by fields from the small towns of Chelsea and Kensington and the other hamlets of Brompton and Earl's Court. The road to Fulham was its high street and in 1671 was called 'Little Chelsey streete'. Its isolation in 1680 is illustrated by the correspondence of John Verney (I), who lived for a time, with his wife, in his father-in-law's house at the later Nos. 252 and 254 Fulham Road. He 'commuted' to his merchant's office in the City but had an unpleasant choice of transport: *'by land tis unsafe for Rogues, and by water tis cold besides a good walke in ye dirt and darke (if not rain) from Greate to little Chelsey'*. In 1712 the residents seem to have succeeded in obtaining an order from the magistrates in petty sessions for a watch or policing service at Little Chelsea independent of the watch provided by the two parishes, *'which is on both sides remote'*.

#### The Great Storm of November 1703

In 1703, when John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's two daughters [Mary Lovett and Margaret Cave] were married and John became a viscount, the barometric pressure over England sank to a record breaking low and great winds were drawn across the country causing havoc and death.

The Palmer family and its Verney relatives were all affected and the following descriptions were sent by family members to John Verney who at the time was resident at his house in Claydon.

*There has been so Tempestuous A night that we were all afraid that the house would have been blown down upon us. Several Tops of our Chimneys blown down, and great part of the the tops of the house, that is tiles and bricks. We have been all up most part of this night, and such a fright what to do...* [Cary Stewkley, 27<sup>th</sup> November, VL (1), p. 146]

John Verney's aunt Elizabeth Adams writes on 30<sup>th</sup> November:

*I bless God we escaped with our lives, but our house is much damaged, part of the chimneys was down and some of our neighbours chimneys fell on our house and broke our roof, and we look every moment when the house would lie flat ... but God was most merciful to us and did preserve it.* [VL (1), p. 147]

*...It is said that wind has done more damage than the fire of London. The town is most dismally shattered scarce a house in it but has been damaged Our Square looks as if it had been bombarded...* [Dr. Denton Nicholas, VL (1), p. 147]

John Verney notes that: *In the late tempestuous night my damage was more than £500 at this place* [Claydon]. [VL (1), p. 149]

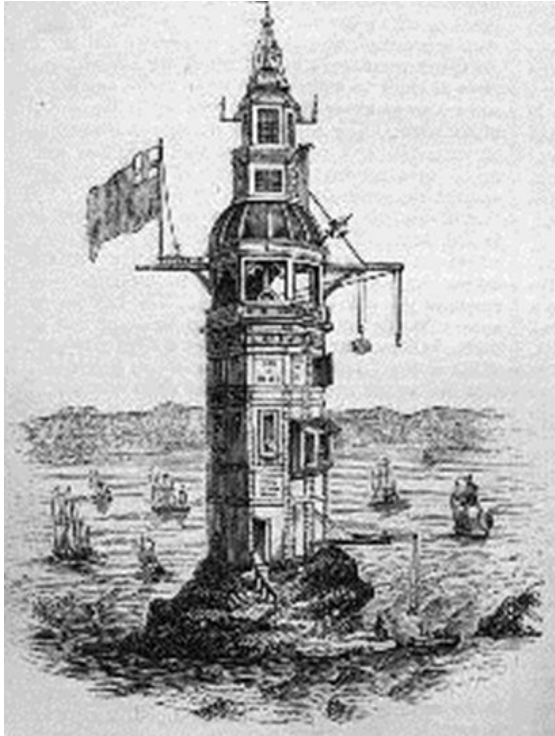
However, despite the furoosity of the storm Ralph Palmer (I) escaped quite lightly:

*I bless God we are all pretty well and safe in my house, not a tile missing, but part of my wall next the street down. This Miserable town makes a dismal sight, abundance of people killed.* [VL (1), p. 146]

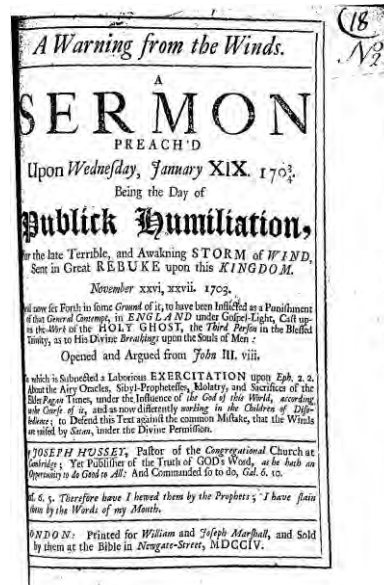
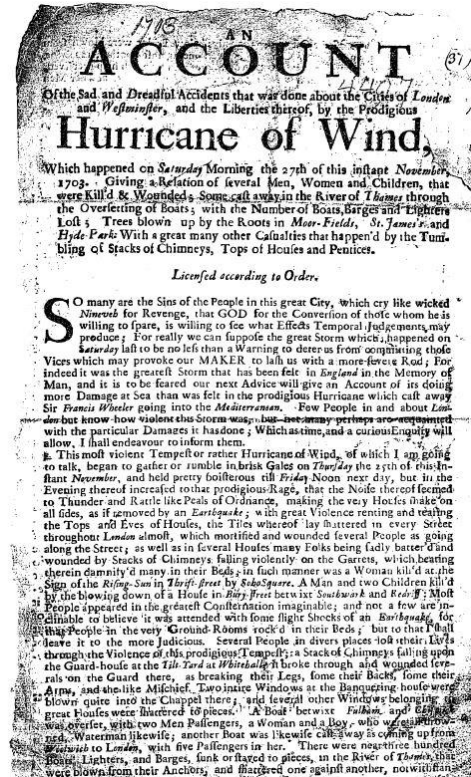
One of the 'victims' of the storm was the Eddystone Lighthouse that sat in the channel and which the storm swept entirely away. Soon after, Ralph Palmer's granddaughter's husband Colonel John Lovett would invest most of his fortune, including his wife's portion, into replacing the lighthouse with a much larger and more robust one (See section on the Eddystone Lighthouse above). Lovett's plans to replace the Eddystone Lighthouse were well under way by the time the storm swept the old one away and so in this he was much assisted by nature. Another victim was Charles Cave, Thomas Cave, the 3<sup>rd</sup> Bart.'s brother, who was drowned at sea. He had been on board a naval ship that sank along with many others in the Channel.

In the following section we look at the family of Alice (White) Palmer, Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's mother.



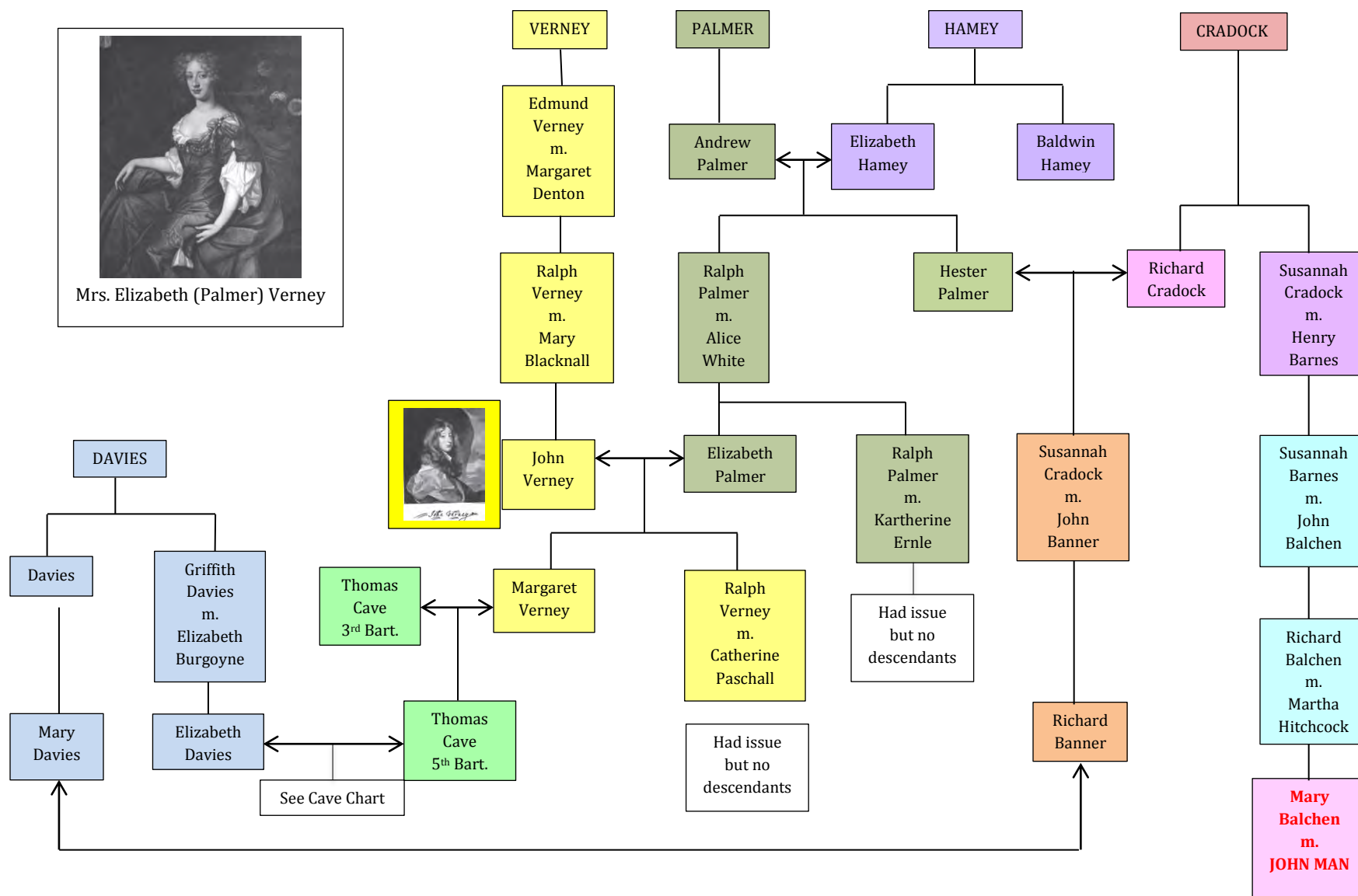


The original Eddystone Lighthouse, swept away in the Great Storm of 1703





# The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea



### The White, Churchill, and Chaloner families and how they are related, maybe

Besides the Verneys, the villages of Middle and Steeple Claydon contained three other families of interest: White, Chaloner, and Churchill, all of whom were related to Alice (White) Palmer, the wife of Ralph (I). None of these families were related / connected to the Verney family until the moment that Elizabeth Palmer married John Verney in 1680.

However, precisely how these three other families connect with one another is unclear. The genealogical records are scant and some of those that do exist are inaccurate and so what follows has to be, in part, tentative and somewhat speculative.

With regard to these three families we need to create enough genealogical connections to account for the following:

1. In his will of **1708** Ralph Palmer (I) bequeaths a small legacy to an *Ann Chaloner* whom he refers to as his niece (actually his wife's niece).
2. At Ralph Palmer (I)'s funeral his daughter Alice was accompanied in her mourning coach by *Ann Chaloner*.
3. In 1653 when Ann Chaloner (perhaps the mother of the above Ann) was evicted from the old manor house at Steeple Claydon; the first person to come rushing to her rescue was Captain William White.
4. Joseph Churchill married Ann Chaloner and he is referred to as Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's cousin and as Ralph Palmer (I)'s nephew.
5. The Churchills, along with the Chaloners, attended the funeral dinner at Claydon house after Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's burial.
6. Joseph and Anne (Chaloner) Churchill had two daughters: Phillis born in 1676 and Cornelia born in 1687. These two ladies are mentioned in the wills of Alice Palmer, the daughter of Ralph Palmer (I), and Elizabeth (Cave) Pilsworthy the daughter of Margaret (Verney) Cave.

To account for 1-5 the following chart showing the White family assumes: A) Alice (**White**) Palmer had an aunt Ann White; B) this Ann White married Charles Chaloner (A and B may explain 3 above); C) Charles and Ann(e) (White) Chaloner had a daughter Anne; D) This daughter Anne Chaloner married Joseph Churchill (this would make Anne Chaloner and Joseph Churchill

the cousin of Alice White not the niece and nephew and so we either have a problem or the solution to one); E) The sister of Alice (White) Palmer's father Anne White (Captain William White) married Charles Chaloner (accounts for 1, 2, and 5). Or we could also account for 1-5 if Captain White married a Chaloner who was a sister of Charles Chaloner.

Only by making these assumptions can we tie the three families together into one kinship relation; a network that is often referred to in the histories but never fully described. However given the tenuous nature of the evidence here presented we are prepared to revise these connections and the assumptions upon which they rest.

The evidence we have used to produce the White family chart below is in part based on *The History of Buckinghamshire, Volume 3* which shows the following marriage from the parish registry at Steeple Claydon:

**MARRIAGES: William White, S. T. P. and Alice Richardson, Anno 1613.** [STP = Sanctae Theologiae Professor (Professor of Theology<sup>68</sup>)]

From the same source there is the following baptismal record:

**William, Son of William White, S. T. P. Anno 1616.**

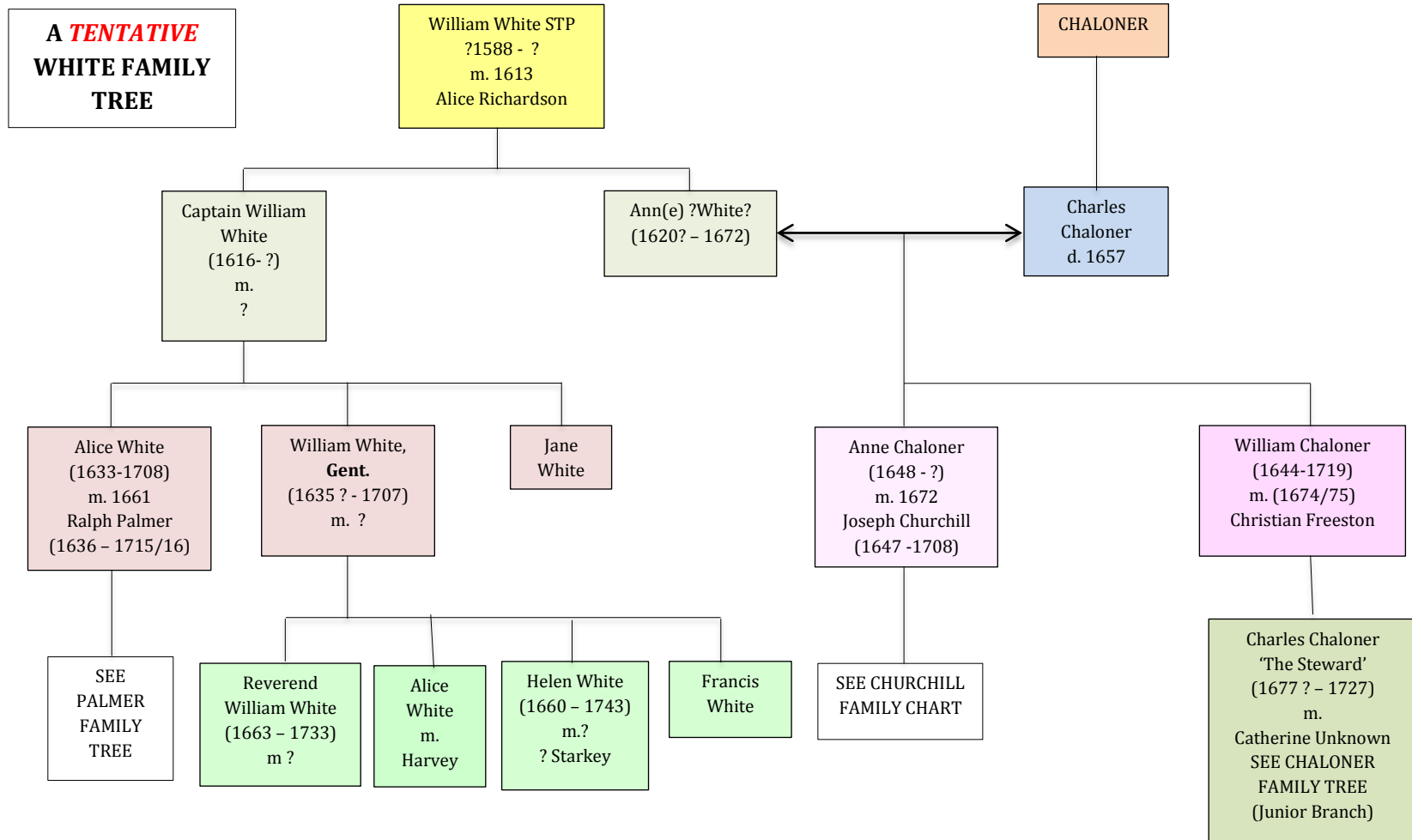
We assume for now William son of William White STP is the Captain White who rescues his sister Ann (White) Chaloner from being evicted (see Chaloner section below) and that he is also the father of Alice (White) Palmer. If [Captain] William was born in 1616 and his daughter Alice [Palmer] in 1633 then he would have been seventeen at the time of Alice's birth which is young but not impossible.

It is worth noting from the marriage record for the first William White (above) that he is endowed with a theological qualification (STP) which fits in well with the White family's record of clerical and theological interests (see historical section: The White Family). Likewise, the name of William's wife being Alice helps support the idea that these records show Alice

---

<sup>68</sup> There is one potential William White among *Alumni Oxonienses*. He is of Bucks, gent. Trinity College, matriculated 22 June 1593, aged 15 [born in 1578], BA 8 Dec 1596 MA 14 May 1601, BD 7 June 1608, DD 2 July 1612, licenced to preach 13 April 1619.

(White) Palmer's forebears. If this William [STP] was in his early 20's when he married Alice Richardson then he would have been born approximately in 1588. Such a birth date would also qualify him to be a son of either of Francis White Bishop of Ely mentioned on the monument to Mathew Palmer at Cripplegate or the bishop's brother John.





Whyman also states that William Chaloner, the debt-ridden owner of Steeple Claydon manor, who in 1706 would sell land to John Verney, was also 'a relation of the Palmers' (p.70). To account for this we have assumed that William's mother is a member of the White family.

As for the third Claydon family of Churchill, John Broad<sup>69</sup> states that Joseph Churchill 'claimed distant kinship' with John Verney, but Whyman is more specific stating that Joseph was Ralph Palmer's nephew (p.70), and thus a first cousin of Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's (p. 118). Our chart would have Joseph married to Elizabeth's first cousin once removed.

A marriage allegation record for Joseph Churchill and Anne Chaloner dated 27<sup>th</sup> August 1672 at Steeple Claydon has been found.

**Aug. 27 Joseph Churchill, of Steeple Claydon, Bucks, Yeoman, Bach<sup>r</sup>, ab<sup>t</sup> 25,  
& Anne Challoner, of the same, Sp<sup>r</sup>, ab<sup>t</sup> 24; at Islipp, co. Oxford.**

If our assumptions above of the kinship among the Whites, Chaloners, and Churchills are correct then Joseph married Anne (White) Chaloner's daughter; in which case one can treat Joseph as Alice (White) Palmer's 'cousin' using the term more broadly and inclusively as was often the case in the eighteenth century. We would reject Whyman's description of Joseph as Alice's 'nephew'.

In a letter written by Sir Ralph Verney (I) to his son John he describes Joseph Churchill as a Palmer kin:

*That morning he [Churchill] goes from hence to Chelsea, to his kinsman's house, where the young lady [Elizabeth Palmer] now is with her Father.*

Whyman goes on to say that it is this kinship with the Palmers that explains why the Verneys used Churchill to help them broker the marriage settlement between John and Elizabeth.

Whyman also states that with two brothers who kept shop in the Exchange in London, Churchill found it handy to dine at John and Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's house at Hatton Gardens when visiting London. A privilege not otherwise extended probably unless Joseph had been related.

---

<sup>69</sup> *Transforming English Rural Society*, p. 175

What follows is a description of the state of each of these three families: White, Churchill, and Chaloner, from the time that Elizabeth Palmer married John Verney on down. Earlier histories, where they exist, will be found later under separate headings for each family.

### The White Family of Steeple Claydon

The wall monument to Mathew Palmer at St. Giles Cripplegate included the following reference to Ralph Palmer (I)'s wife:

Alice (of ye family of that learned prelate Dr- Francis White,  
sometime Ld - Bp- of Ely)

How exactly Alice (White) Palmer's family connects with that of Francis White Bishop of Ely has so far eluded us. We entertain a number of possibilities in Part Two below under the heading 'Early White History' and in this section we examine just the White family of Steeple Claydon.

We have assumed above that Captain William White was Alice (White) Palmer's father. However Whyman describes William as Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's uncle (p.70) and hence Alice's brother. For now we continue to hold to the theory that the Captain (born in 1616) was the father of Alice (born in 1633) and that Alice had a brother, also William, whom we distinguish from the Captain with the suffix 'Gent'. However, we are prepared to revise this relationship if need be.

Captain William White played at least one critical role in the life of Steeple Claydon when in 1663 he came to the rescue of his sister (?) Anne (White) Chaloner who was being harassed by an unscrupulous attorney William Smith/Smyth and which we detail in the Chaloner section below.

As for William White, Gent, he is mentioned briefly by John Verney in a letter to his father Ralph (I) while John was courting William's **niece** Elizabeth Palmer. Apart from this, we have been unable to uncover much else about William except for the fact that: 1. he had four children (William, Francis, Alice, and Helen), 2. he died in 1707, and 3. he left a will that is summarized as follows:

William White, Gent, of Steeple Claydon wrote his will on 8th May, 1707. In it he mentions two daughters (Alice and Helen) and

a son (William); the testator refers to his daughter Alice as 'Alice Harvey of the parish of Stepney in London'. Witnesses to the will were James and William Chaloner and Elizabeth Hughes. Probate was granted in November 1707. The will being witnessed by two Chaloner brothers encourages us in assuming a connection between the White and Chaloner families.

### Helen (White) Starkey (1660 – 1743)

Helen was the daughter of William White, Gent and an as yet unknown mother. She makes an occasional appearance among the *Verney Letters* where she is referred to as 'Cousin Starkey'. Such a designation by the Verneys agrees with our assumption that Helen's father was William White Gent., and that he was the brother of Alice (White) Palmer and hence Alice was Helen's aunt. Alice's daughter, also Alice, refers to Helen in her will as her cousin.

Who Helen's husband Starkey was we do not yet know. He does not appear among the Verney letters and so we assume Helen was widowed quite early. There were no children.

Helen lived in a rented house belonging to her 'cousin' John Verney, and in a letter written to him on 26<sup>th</sup> May 1716 by his third wife Elizabeth (Baker) Verney, Elizabeth mentions that:

*The House Mrs Starkey lives in is ready to tumble, and they have workmen about it, and she desires you will please let her have a thousand of bricks to do the chimneys with, and she will pay Mr Challoner 20 shillings for them. I desire your answer by the next post because she wants the bricks very much.* [VL (2), pp. 42-43]

According to the editor of the Verney letters, when Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney moved to Chelsea their circle of friends at Claydon missed their company, especially the White family, and in particular Helen (White) Starkey.

In response to a letter from Catherine (Paschall) Verney at Chelsea, Helen writes back on 24<sup>th</sup> December 1721 that she is pleased that: '*... the Masters* [John (II) and Ralph (III) Verney] *are so well and pleased with their change of life which I am sure will make it more easy for yourself and my Lord*'. However she is annoyed with herself that she has not been able to complete a lace that she has been working on for Catherine, and blames the cold weather which makes working lace so difficult. She has also had to bargain with the the person supplying the lace *but took not notice of it and give her that* i.e. she paid

only what she (Helen) thought the lace was worth. [VL (2), p. 92]

Helen keeps Catherine (Paschall) Verney up to date with local gossip such as the following about 'Lady Dowager', John Verney's widow Elizabeth (Baker) Verney:

*4th March, 1726: I think Lady Dowager has undertaken a great work, I wish she don't regret it, it looks reasonable enough, it should be so ... A fine barrel of oysters has arrived and my Brother [William White] and self return our most humble thanks, Clark said there was a letter, but we have not got it, I never met with such a carrier. Doctor Fruen was with Mrs. Butterfield on Sunday, he gave some little hope of her recovery, but she continues very ill. They were so kind as to send me word so I went to him, and he has ordered me some little matters which he hopes as well as with the Spring will be of service to me.* [VL (2), pp. 155-156]

Helen was on intimate enough terms with the Verneys to fret over the future of Ralph and Catherine (Paschall) Verney's two unmarried daughters Elizabeth and Catherine (Kitty). They were approaching their thirties and Helen thought it time their parents were more actively involved in promoting their marriages. In response to Helen's criticism, their mother writes [no date given]:

*Dear Cousin, I thank you for your kind letter and I should be very glad to dispose of my children well. My Lord intends giving but half what you mentioned apiece to his daughters, but as I have had an estate fallen to me by my Sister [Mary Stone], and as my father made me an eldest sister, I intend to make Betty so, and am willing to make a handsome addition to her in reversion thereafter. But those things can't be so well fixed till we know who the gentleman is, and his proposals.* [VL (2), p. 231]. It would turn out that the gentleman in question would be Bennet Sherard, 3<sup>rd</sup> Earl of Harborough.

On 5<sup>th</sup> March 1730, Helen writes to Catherine (Paschall) Verney to complain that she is lonely at Steeple Claydon; many of their old friends being now dead. She says that her brother, Mr. William White, the Vicar, is in good health, and she goes on to provide some local gossip:

*Mrs. Verney [Betty] is still at Adderbury, but I expect her as soon as the ways are a little better, they are always passable through London. Mrs Busby designed for the town, and Mrs. Able [Abell] talked of it in a very little time. Mrs B. Able [Bridgit Abell (sister of Richard Abell MP)] has bought her house in town larger than her other and Mr Able will be with her when in town.* [VL (2), p. 98]

Betty Verney was a frequent guest of her cousin Helen's and while staying there would send her brother Ralph reports such as one on a dispute over who to place as vicar in the neighboring village of Addington. [VL (2), p. 137]

In a letter dated 15<sup>th</sup> September 1734, Ralph Verney (II) mentions that his daughter Catherine (Kitty) has had a riding accident:

*... Last Thursday before my Cousin Starkey's orchard in Steeple Claydon Miss Kitty's horse kicked up behind and tossed her over his head, put out two bones of her elbow, and bruised her knee, they were set again in a few hours and feels as well as can be expected.* [VL (2), p. 229.]

On 27<sup>th</sup> December 1721, Elizabeth (Verney) Adams, sister of Ralph (I) Verney, passed away on her eighty-eighth birthday leaving her two spinster daughters Margaret and Isabella unprotected and vulnerable. The latter had been parceled out as the gentle companion lady of Catherine (Paschall) Verney's sister Mrs. Mary Stone. But Mary now saw an opportunity to change her circumstances and wrote to her sister Catherine that she would like to part with Isabella Adams; if this could be managed with kindness. Catherine replies that she will: *... write to my cousin Starkey to know if she will take her.* [VL (2), p. 172-171]. Whether Helen did take in poor Isabella, we do not learn from the letters.

By 1743 Helen had reached the quite remarkable age of 83 but toward the year's end she began to fade and on 15<sup>th</sup> September Ralph (III) writes to his father:

*We expect Cousin Starkey's death daily. Mrs Hughes is Excutrix and she has left her goods to her. Her money is disposed of thus:- to Rose her late servant £12, to Hobbs and wife, Hillesden £10 to Mr. and Mrs. Ingram and two daughters 20 shillings each, £10 to me and £20 to bear her funeral charges ...* [VL (2), p. 208]

The editor of *The Verney Letters* takes up the story:

On 18<sup>th</sup> September, 1748 Ralph (III) from Claydon writes to announce to his father [Ralph (II)] the death at Steeple Claydon of their cousin, Mrs Helen Starkey. She was a kind woman, and had often given hospitality to Elizabeth (Betty) Verney and other members of the Claydon family. She had left several legacies written on tickets and stray bits of paper, and Lord Fermanagh wishes to know whether his father will claim the half-year's rent. Mrs Starkey's friend, Mrs Hughes was in the house:

*Some people came to fetch their legacies away then but Mrs. Hughes was advised against letting em have anything out of the house till she had settled her accounts and proceeded in a*



*regular manner. I wish you may get a tenant for the house, as tis a pretty place.* [VL (2) , p. 208]

Mrs. Helen (White) Starkey was buried at Steeple Claydon on 22<sup>nd</sup> September 1743.

#### The Reverend William White (1663 – 1733)

William was the only surviving son of William White, Gent. and thus the nephew of Alice (White) Palmer. He was born in 1663. He was a graduate of Oxford and thanks to John Verney he was the vicar of Steeple Claydon from 1715 until his death in 1733, aged 70.

The extract below from: [\*The History and Antiquities of the Town, Hundred, and Deanery of Buckingham\*](#) is of interest for some of the names of the earlier occupants of the position of vicar of Steeple Claydon and their patrons. For example, on the death of Richard Parre in 1597 a John White makes a claim for the position which is unsuccessful. The second incumbent listed, Adrian Bayley, is presented by William and Henry Fleetwood. Some generations later Joseph and Anne (Chaloner) Churchill's grandson Joseph Churchill would marry a Penelope Fleetwood.

In 1657 Edmund Fleetwood becomes the vicar. He eventually goes mad and his patron Mr. Chaloner searched for a replacement who *would live on the spot and, and bury, and christen, and do all those things*. However, by the time Fleetwood died the living was no longer in the hands of the Chaloner family but instead that of John Verney who appointed William White, no doubt as a favour to a 'relation'.

*Richard Parre* was instituted, April 10, Anno 1575, on the Presentation of *Edmund Broket*. On his Death one *John White* set up a Title to the Patronage, but his Claim was set aside. He, viz. *Richard Parre*, begun the Register. He was buried here, July 20, Anno 1597, and succeeded by *Adrian Bayley*, A. B. who was presented by *William* and *Henry Fleetwood*, Esqs; Nov. 25, 1597. He was buried here 15 May, Anno 1627, and succeeded by *John Aris*, collated by the Bishop of *Lincoln*, on a Lapse, Anno 1627. He died 29 Aug. Anno 1657, and was buried at *Middle Claydon*, where he was Rector, and succeeded by *Edmund Fleetwood*, Anno 1657. He continued Vicar 58 Years, and dying Anno 1715, in *Lancashire*, among his Relations, where he had lived several Years, was succeeded by *William White*, A. B. Vicar of *Padbury*, who quitted that Living for this, to which he became presented by the Right Honourable Sir *John Verney*, Lord Viscount *Fermanagh*, Anno 1715. He died and was buried in the Chancel, Oct. 13, Anno 1733, and succeeded by *George Frazer*, the present Vicar, Anno 1735.

*William White*, A. B. Vicar of *Padbury*, who quitted that Living for this [*Steeple Claydon*], to which he became presented by the Right Honourable Sir *John Verney*, Lord Viscount *Fermanagh*, Anno 1715. He died and was buried in the Chancel, Oct. 13, Anno 1733, and succeeded by *George Fraser*, the present Vicar, Anno 1735

Below from *Alumni Oxonienses: The Members of the University of Oxford, 1715 . . .*, Volume 4:

*William White* entered *Trinity College Oxford* and matriculated on 16<sup>th</sup> July, 1681, aged 18; he obtained a B.A. from *New Inn Hall, Oxford* in 1684; and an M.A. from *Trinity College* in 1687. He was vicar of *Padbury* 1687, rector of *Fleet Marston* 1711, and vicar of *Steeple Claydon*, (all) *Bucks*, 1715. See *Foster's Index Eccl.* (See also [History of Buckinghamshire](#), Vol. 3)

Early on in *William's* career, when still a young curate, *John Verney* wrote to *Ralph Palmer* (I) suggesting that *William*, being *Ralph's* wife's nephew, be given the living at *St. Luke's* in *Chelsea*, should that position become vacant. *Ralph* (I) responds on 17<sup>th</sup> October 1699:

*You writ about nephew Will White coming to Chelsey, if our Dr. King should die, but I think there is little hopes of that, for he is a lusty strong man, and more likely to bury all Chelsey before he goes. I hope you will remember him [White] when Mr. Butterfield dies for he is most likely to go first, I wish he were better provided for, but I think to some so near Town he would not be liked.* [VL (1), pp. 364-365]

Eight years later *Dr. King* of *St. Luke's* in *Chelsea* finally passed away and *Ralph* (I) notes on 15<sup>th</sup> June 1708 that:

*The Lectureship being vacant here, the two Competitors have been at Fisticuffs about it, which I reckon we may hear more of in the Observer.* [VL (1), p. 365]

In 1710 John Verney was still actively pursuing a position for William White and when one became available at Fleet Marston / Marsden he contacted his friend and neighbor Edward Lee the earl of Litchfield (1663-1716) as the living was at the earl's disposal. The earl replies to John Verney on 15<sup>th</sup> December 1710:

*My Lord – I had the honour of your Lordship's by this post, and am glad it happened in my power to pleasure your Lordship in giving this living of Fleet-Marston to the gentleman you mentioned [William White]. I have no knowledge of him myself, therefore shall wholly rely on you, that he is a good man, and not apt to be troublesome or unquiet in his conduct.* [VL (I), p. 369].

Elizabeth (Baker) Verney also supported William's candidacy, writing to John that she hoped William would get the position at Fleet Marston, which in the end he did.

Then the editor of *The Verney Letters* adds a line that would catch the attention of anyone researching the White family. She writes that this was a family that:

... had suffered both under The Long Parliament and at the Restoration, for whom Sir Ralph Verney had so great regard. [VL (2), p. 369]

However we are still searching for the evidence upon which this statement is based and for its full meaning.

A better position than rector of Fleet Marston was sought for William and Ralph Palmer (II) writes to his nephew Ralph Verney (II) on 14<sup>th</sup> May 1714.

*My cosen White's affairs have passed the Arch-Bishopal and Lord Chancellors Seal both, and I believe he had yesterday Institution, and he goes tomorrow for Ailesbury, where lives the Bishop's Something, that is to give him Induction, which happens well in his way. The Bishope of Lincoln [William Wake] gave him seven more questions (very easy ones God knows) to answer and sent him to his Secretary's Lodgings to do it, so they passed his Grace current ... My Lord [John Verney] continues very well, and I hear nothing more of his leaving London. Sir Thomas Cave talked of going home today. The Duke of Leeds shot one Mr. Bradshaw of the Temple, a man of £1500 a year, who is his son's steward, and to pay him monies for not paying before he could get it in, and Fled immediately to France (but the man is not dead), where he pretended to be a Malcontent and has taken out considerable supplies.* [VL (1). p. 373]



William Wake, Bishop of Lincoln  
© National Portrait Gallery, London

The bishop of Lincoln was a Whig while the Palmers and Verneys were Tories, which complicated matters. Ralph Palmer (II) to John Verney 30<sup>th</sup> June 1715:

*I give your Lordship the trouble of reading this because I was to wait on Lady Fermanagh to the Bishop of Lincoln, believeing your Lordship will be very well pleased to hear that we have obtained his promise not to take advantage of the Lapse, in case my cosen White's matters should not be all ready to gain him Institution before your 6 months are expired, which I hope will ensure him your Lordship's gracious benefaction, which is very obliging to him in particular, and next to Us all who are his Relations. The Bishop he was so kind to tell us that a Letter from your Lordship directed to himself*

*(that he may communicate to the Archbishop to facilitate the Dispensation) would be of great service, and as to the Testimonials subscribed by the Clergy, he says it will be better if the Layety subscribe 'em too, and the more there are and the better the Quality are subscribing, the better. The particulars of the Letter he hinted might be, how long he has lived in Steeple Claydon, the Love the people there and in the neighborhood have for him, his inoffensive behavior and what other merits he has. For as the Bishop observed to us, not doubting Us to be Torys, that the Archbishop (to give him his due) regarded nothing so much as the Service of the Cures, and spoke it with such an Accent and Aspect as if he thought we had no great Opinion of his Grace, tho' We are sure to command his Pastoral Care to him. It would be mighty proper too for your Lordship to touch upon the smallness of the Parish of Fleet Marston, and fewness of its inhabitants, if You please.*

*I cannot tell what detriment the public may suffer if we should have occasion to resort to him [the bishop] any more, for he was very Obliging to us that we are half proselytes to Whiggism, tho' at the present crisis should not be best to declare .... I hope this affair, my Lord, will go on smoothly to Cos. White's comfort and your Lordship's good liking . [VL (1) , pp. 373-374]*

Before his appointment as Vicar of Steeple Claydon William was a curate of that parish and there is a mention of him in this capacity in a line written by John Verney to his son Ralph (II) dated 20<sup>th</sup> July 1714.

*Last Sunday Senight W. White swooned in his Pulpit which hath much frightened his Sister Starkey.*[VL (1) , p. 195]

It would appear that when 'Parson Edmund Chaloner<sup>70</sup>' died in 17XX, the Reverend William White benefited:

*...I think our Rev. Mr. White gets ten pounds a year by Mr. Chaloner's death, and wish they would get some good Economy with it, too.* [VL (2), p. 70].

In 1715 Thomas Cave writes to his father in law that he has been engaged in trying to promote William by offering him as private chaplain to various peers:

*I this day requested two or three peers for a Chaplain's privelege, but to none effect, all being well full, that I could wish Mr.White without delay to become Mr. of Arts.* [VL (1), p. 340]

In fact William already had an MA so Thomas Cave was not so well informed as to his qualifications.

In May 1716 Elizabeth (Baker) Verney wrote to her husband John Verney that *... Mr. White's house at Steeple Claydon had like to have fallen down and the workmen is to pull it down that part of it next week. They have no luck ...* [VL (2), p. 42]

In 1733 the editor of *The Verney Letters* notes that:

The Rev. William White, about whom so much interest had been made, seems to have died insolvent as Vicar of Steeple Claydon, and his Successor, Mr. Fraser fared no better. [VL (2), p. 252.]

William was buried on 13<sup>th</sup> October 1733 in the chancel at Steeple Claydon. He did not leave a will.

A letter dated three years after the vicar's death refers to an unidentified 'Mr. White's house' written on 12<sup>th</sup> November 1738 by the Verney's steward Mr. Millward to Ralph II.

*Last Sunday in Churchtime, Mr. White's house was robbed some say of 60, it must be somebody that has known the house for they meddled with nothing, till they came at the Box, where the money was, which they broke open. One of Miller's sons as had been a servant there they took up, he now lives at Quainton, he comes over on a Sunday and was at church while the bells went, and when the Parson comes in he was observed to go out of the Church and did not come in any more ... Southam from Bottle Claydon was accused but they could not get proof of the fact so was acquitted, though it looked ugly as he was seen in Mr. White's grounds after the bell has gone.* [VL (2), p. 204]

---

<sup>70</sup> This would appear to be the son of James Chaloner b. 1635 (See Senior branch family chart).



William's wife's passing is noted by Ralph Verney (III) in a post script to a letter dated 21<sup>st</sup> June 1747:

*The post never came on Tuesday, so this letter did not go out. I forgot to mention Mrs. White was buried last Wednesday night.* [VL (2), p. 127].

Who Mrs. White was, we do not know.

#### Francis White

The second son of William White, Gent - Francis White - is mentioned in the *Verney Letters*, as one who *is to be put to apprentice to a chirugion [surgeon] in the City* and he too would dine with the Verneys when they first moved to Hatton Gardens [Whyman, p. 70]. Francis appears to have found a position as a surgeon to the Royal Africa Company however he fails to appear in his father William's will, which would suggest that he might have pre-deceased him.

#### Jack White

After the vicar William White and his sister Helen Starkey pass away there would appear to be remaining, according to *The Verney Letters*, one more unaccounted for member of the White family who is referred to as Jack.

He seems to have slid down the social scale a bit and had become a kind of assistant steward to the Verneys. Even so, he appears to have had some social pretensions, if only on paper, as noted by the following reference to Jack in a letter from Ralph (II) to the steward Mr. Millward dated 18<sup>th</sup> April 1738:

*I don't see how Mr. White makes out a title to a manor, but it lies on him to do; I have a grant of mine from King Charles.* [VL (2), p. 107]

On 12<sup>th</sup> August 1790 Jack White writes to Ralph (III):

*I hope in god these lines will find your Lordship in better health. My Lord I should be Glad if you please to send me a pound of Silk to mend the Covey nets for I used all the silk I have, for they are tore very much and so are the Silk flews also. I should be glad to have it very soon. My Lord, young Mr. Thomas Millward has got a pointer and a Shooting horse also. I should be glad if your Lordship Please to write to old Mr. Millward and desire his son not to kill the birds about home as they are but few, for I think it will be hard to me, to save the birds and he go and kill them; he may if he please go along with me a shooting when I go from home. My Lord, they have done a mowing in the Park and they make a full finish of all tomorrow, when I get a setting. I hope your Lordship will let my son have a Grey nag to ride when I go a setting. Mr. Oliver looked at the room in East Claydon yard to put the Partridges in, which will do well for them, there will be plenty of sun for the birds, which they like, there wants nothing more to be*

*done to it but the two windows to be lathed. From your most Faithful servant JACK WHITE.*  
[VL (2), pp. 300-301]

After this letter there are no more mentions of the White family of Steeple Claydon among *The Verney Letters*. Whether there are descendants of this family, apart from those of Alice (White) Palmer and her sister Anne (White) Chaloner, we do not know. Jack having a son suggests there might be.

### The Churchill Family of Steeple Claydon

We have already noted that in *Sociability and Power* Whyman states [p.70] that Joseph Churchill is Ralph Palmer (I)'s nephew and thus Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's first cousin [p. 118]. However we also made a number of assumptions above as to how the Churchills relate to the White-Palmer families that have led us to make Joseph's wife Anne Chaloner a *cousin* of Ralph Palmer's wife Alice. This is based on a possible marriage of Anne's father's to an as yet unidentified person whom we believe to be a member of the White family.

According to one source [Anne Chaloner was born on 16<sup>th</sup> August 1640.](#) However, other sources (such as their marriage allegation) have her born in 1648 and we are inclined to accept this latter date as the more likely.

Joseph Churchill was born in 1645 at Steeple Claydon, the son of Henry Churchill (1600-1652) and Phillis/Phyllis whose last name was probably Townsend, based on her husband's will (see below). According to his father Henry's will Joseph had four elder brothers: Tobias, Henry, John, and Thomas (b. 1641) and a younger brother William (b. 1648). Joseph's sisters were: Anne, Marie, Phillis (b. 1636), and Frances (b. 1650).

Joseph's elder brother Tobias Churchill, of Steeple Claydon, whose entry for Oriel College, Oxford, states that he matriculated on 27<sup>th</sup> October 1682, aged 16 (See Lipscomb's *History of Buckinghamshire*, I, p. 563. [35]).

### The Will of Henry Churchill

Henry Churchill of Steeple Claydon, county Bucks, gent. Dated 23<sup>rd</sup> May 1651 and proved on 10<sup>th</sup> February 1653/54.

I bequeath to my eldest son Tobias at his age of 24 my mansion house wherein I now dwell, with my close adjoining called Sand Furlong; a parcel called Peartree Hill abutting on the land of Richard Doggett, with the meadow adjoining called the lower part of Great Riffams; to remain, in default of issue to him, to my sons Henry, John, Thomas, Joseph, and William

successively. And I charge whichever of my sons shall inherit the premises to pay to my third daughter **Phillis Churchill** £10 yearly for her maintenance till her age of 21, and then a portion of £200. I give £200 apiece in like manner to my eldest daughter Anne Churchill my second daughter Marie Churchill and my fourth and youngest daughter Frances Churchill. I give to my son Henry at his age of 24 my close in Steeple Cleydon called Gabrielle Ground. To my sons John and Thomas my pasture called Bushy Close and the meadow called Cowmeade. To my son Joseph, my moiety of the ground called Boumheades. To my son Tobias my freehold land in the common fields of Leighton Buzzard, county Bedford, called Midsommer Plott, and 11 acres of copyhold which I purchased, and my will is that my wife shall surrender to him and his heirs my messuage and land and one cottage wherein the Widow Doggett now dwelleth, all in Leighton Buzzard aforesaid, and I charge these premises with the payment of £300 to William Churchill, my youngest son, at his age of 21, with £10 yearly for his maintenance meanwhile. I bequeath to my godson Henry Churchill, son of my brother Thomas Churchill of Clifton in the parish of Deddington, county Oxon, yeoman, £5. To my godson Henry Churchill, son of John Churchill, late of Steeple Cleydon, deceased, 10s. To the poor of Leighton Buzzard, 40s. at the discretion of the minister, churchwardens, and overseers of the poor. To the poor of Steple Cleydon 40s., one half in bread, the other in money. All the rest of my goods to my wife Phillis Churchill, whom I make my executrix; and I appoint my said brother Thomas Churchill and his eldest son Thomas, my kinsman, Joseph Townesend, son of my brother in law William Townesend of Princes Risborow, county Bucks, and my eldest son Tobias, my overseers, (signed) Henry Churchill. Will 23 May 1651:

Witnesses: William Fry, the mark of Henry Chamberlaine. Administration granted to the above said Tobias Churchill, the executrix [Phillis] named being then also deceased. Proved 10 February 1653/54.

The daughter Marie mentioned in Henry's will went on to marry Thomas Watson of Edgote, a grazier. In the marriage settlement, her brother Tobias acted as her 'trustee' as her father was dead. The settlement involved lands at Edgecote and was dated 8<sup>th</sup> December 1664.

[Extracted from *London Apprenticeship Abstracts, 1442-1850*  
Churchill Joseph, son of Tobias, Steeple Claydon,  
Buckinghamshire, yeoman, to John Dodson, 28 Nov 1684, Tinplate  
Workers' Company]

Traces of this Churchill family, apart from Joseph, have mostly faded.

Although the Churchill family was a large one, only Joseph is mentioned among *The Verney Letters*, no doubt as a result of his marriage to Ann Chaloner a cousin of Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney.

Joseph and Anne (Chaloner) Churchill had four children all born at Steeple Claydon: Joseph, who was born in 1674, Phillis born in 1676, John born in 1680, and Cornelia born in 1687.

The Churchills were major tenants of the Verneys and when Sir John stood for Parliament they were expected to have cast their vote for him, especially as they were connected through Joseph's wife Anne Chaloner to Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney, but in 1702 Joseph did not vote for John and John commented ruthly:

*I reckon when a freeholder rents land of me one voice is partly my due, though not altogether for my land.*<sup>71</sup>

John's aunt Elizabeth Adams was less forgiving but more cryptic:

*I thought better things of Mr. Bates, as for Mr. Churchill he brought that into the world with him. His father was a violent man that day, but men of his rank I do not so much wonder at, as all the rest.* [VL (I), pp. 163-64]

The Churchills, who were considered a 'middling sort', were ...a favoured group who performed useful services and received benefits in return from the Verneys. Whyman says that Joseph Churchill made himself indispensable to the Verneys and he wrote at least 22 letters to the family.

He served as the steward's estate advisor and proposed land purchases, appraised property, provided militia men, testified at law suits, and bought farm animals [Whyman, p. 20]. For example in 1681 Joseph was given £350 by the Verneys to purchase livestock from various fairs all over The Midlands. He accompanied Ralph Palmer (II) when he was sent by John Verney to estimate the value of the Paschall family's estate at Great Baddow.

The Churchills also socialized with the Verneys such that on New Year's Day 1696 Joseph and his daughter were entertained by Cary Stewkeley, (Lady Gardiner) John Verney's aunt [Whyman, p. 21]. They also attended, along with the Chaloners, a dinner at Claydon house after Elizabeth (Palmer) Verney's funeral.

Whyman [p. 102] states that Joseph Churchill, while out riding on his horse, was knocked down and killed by a coach when he

---

<sup>71</sup> *Transforming English Rural Society* by John Broad, p. 175

refused to stand aside<sup>72</sup>. He died on 11<sup>th</sup> December 1707 at Steeple Claydon.

The eldest son of Joseph and Anne (Chaloner) Churchill, Joseph, married Penelope Fleetwood on 27<sup>th</sup> September 1702. He died in 1756 aged 82 in Northamptonshire. Penelope's parents were Charles Fleetwood and Elizabeth Smith. The descendants of Joseph and Penelope (Fleetwood) Churchill are plentiful and the chart in the Churchill family section shows just a few of these.

One puzzle with the Churchill family that had long resided at Steeple Claydon is their remove to and resettlement in Northamptonshire during the eighteenth century. A separate section on these latter Churchills is given below [See also IGI batch No I04540-0].

### The Chaloner Family of Steeple Claydon

We begin the Chaloner family with Sir Thomas Chaloner (1564-1615) who, because he married twice, created two branches viz a senior and a junior branch. The senior is descended from Sir Thomas's first marriage to Elizabeth Fleetwood. The junior branch is from Sir Thomas's second marriage to Judith Blount (1604). (See the two charts below)

Below, Thomas Chaloner father and son.

---

<sup>72</sup> Whyman's source Note 66; 53-553 MC/JV, Feb 29 1708





Thomas Chaloner (1525-1565)  
© National Portrait Gallery, London: NPG D33373



Thomas Chaloner (1564-1615)  
© Trustees of the British Museum.

The senior branch was more often found at Guisborough in Yorkshire although they also had an interest in Steeple Claydon whereas the junior branch only had lands within Buckinghamshire. Thus the two branches tended to live apart from each other (the junior branch occupying lands at Steeple Claydon; the senior both but mostly in Yorkshire).

The eldest son of Thomas and Judith (Blount) Chaloner was Henry of the junior branch. The following entry is from *Alumni oxoniensis: the members of the University of Oxford, 1500 ....*, Volume 1:

Chaloner, Henry of Surrey, Esq. Brasenose College, matriculated. 16 Feb., 1620-1, aged 16; B.A. 15 Feb., 1622-3, eldest son of Sir Thomas by his 2nd wife, Judith Blunt. His brothers do not appear to have followed him to university.

He married Ursula Napier and references have been found to children although none have yet been identified.

Henry was an active Royalist during the Civil War and his role in it is given in more detail in Part Two.

His brother Charles was born in about 1605 and married an Anne unknown however it has been suggested above that she may well have been a member of the White family and in particular the

cousin of Alice (White) Palmer. Charles and Anne (White?) Chaloner had at least nine children all of whom are listed on the chart.

Charles died in 1657 but he did not leave a will, instead a memorandum of his intentions was drawn up. In it he leaves all his possessions to his wife Anne and he does not name any of his children as he expresses confidence in his widow that she will take proper care of them even though she was still young enough to remarry.

Memorandum that on or about the four and twentieth day of July in the year of our Lord God One thousand six hundred fifty seven [1657] Charles Chaloner late of Steeple Claydon in the County of Buck - deceased being sick and weak in Body but of good and perfect memory did make and declare his last will and testatment in ? or by word of mouth as followeth to the like effect (vizt) he being asked how he would dispose of his estate, Answered in the near like words, (that is to say) I give all my estate, whatsoever unto Anne Chaloner my Wife And he being again asked whether he would give nothing to his Children in ? his wife was a young woman and might marry again he answered in these or the like words (that is to say) I know my wife will be as careful of my children as can be And therefore I leave them unto her Dispose and do give all my Estate unto her. With these words he the said Deceased spoke with an Intent to declare his last will and testament in the Presence and Hearing of Credible Witnesses...

Upon the first day of February in the year of our Lord God One Thousand Six Hundred fifty seven Letters of Administration with the Will ..... annexed of Charles Chaloner late Of Steeple Claydon in the County of Bucks deceased is send forth to Anne Chaloner all the Goods Chattels and Debts of the said deceased according to the tenor of the Will of the said deceased she being first legally sworn by commission truly and faithfully to administer the same.

Ann lived almost twenty years after her husband, dying on 12<sup>th</sup> April 1672 and like him she failed to leave a will. Instead a memorandum was drawn up by her daughter Anne (Chaloner) Churchill and cosigned by Elizabeth Chaloner, the 'sister' of the widow Anne.

Anne Chaloner of Steeple Claydon in the County of Bucks Widow being weak in body but of perfect sense and memory did upon Friday the twelfth day of April 1672 declare in the presence of Elizabeth Chaloner her sister and Anne Chaloner her daughter of the aforesaid Anne Chaloner as her last Will and testament this will followeth It[em]: She gave to William Chaloner [her son] the lease of the parsonage and tythes --- with the hold of Edward Chaloner, Esq. And all her horses earth and plow and other things belonging to husbandry. It[em] to her children viz to Edward, to Frederick, to James, to Arthur, to Anne, to Sarah each of them a feather bed. Item to Anne Chaloner her

daughter fifty pounds, Item to Sarah Chaloner<sup>73</sup> her daughter fifty pounds. Item her linen to be equally divided between William, Anne and Sarah Chaloner. All the rest of her goods at the disposal of her son William Chaloner whom she did appoint sole and whole executor of her last will and testament.

Elizabeth Chaloner Anne Chaloner [Witnesses]

The eldest son of Charles and Ann (?White?) Chaloner was William who was born in 1644.

William married Christian[a] Freeston[n]. A marriage allegation reads:

1674-5 Jan. 13 William Challoner, of Steeple Claydon, Bucks, Gent., Bachelor, 30, & Christian Freeston, of Twyford, spinster 22; with her mother's consent, her father dead; at Twyford.

The marriage took place twelve days later on 25<sup>th</sup> January 1674/75 at Twyford in Buckinghamshire.

Their ages at marriage would have William being born in 1644 and Christian in 1652.

William and Christian (Freeston) Chaloner had three sons: the Verney's steward Charles, a parson William, Edward a naval officer, and a daughter Christian who married John Jordan<sup>74</sup>.

William Chaloner died in August 1719 and a bishop's transcript of his burial reads:

**Buried - William CHALONER, senior, gentleman, 7 Aug 1719.**

His widow Christian died in December of 1722 and a record of her burial reads:

**Buried - Mrs. Christian Chaloner, widow, buried at Preston, 30 Dec 1722.**

By the time of Elizabeth Palmer's marriage to John Verney in 1680 the Chaloners were a declining gentry family and in 1704-5 William (gent) sold the last of the Chaloner's manorial lands to

---

<sup>73</sup> Mentioned in Elizabeth (Betty) Verney's will.

<sup>74</sup> The marriage was transcribed as follows: Married - John JORDON of Broughton in the parish of Bierton and Christian CHALLONER of this parish were married by banns, 1 Mar 1715. The original transcription can be found here: <http://genforum.genealogy.com/challinor/messages/123.html>

John Verney. Others claim that it was William Challoner, knight of Guisborough in Yorkshire, who sold the lands to Verney.

When Ralph Palmer (I) died in 1715/16 a Mrs. Chaloner attended the funeral and sat alone with Ralph's unmarried daughter Alice in one of the coaches that accompanied the hearse to St. Luke's church, Chelsea. This would suggest a close relationship between the two ladies, however since we do not know the first name of this Mrs. Chaloner nor which Chaloner is her husband we cannot at this stage establish her identity.

Because there are no male descendants of this branch of the Chaloner family its history has not been well preserved and the records for it are poor. The chart of this junior branch is therefore somewhat speculative.

The image below is a detail from Thomas and Judith (Blount) Chaloner's monument at Chiswick parish church. They face each other in perpetuity over a skull and in his hands he holds what is probably the bible.



Thomas and Judith (Blount) Chaloner

Thus to summarize: We claim here that the Chaloners are related to the Palmers because Alice (White) Palmer's aunt Anne White married Charles Chaloner. Charles and Anne (White) Chaloner had a daughter Anne who in 1672 married Joseph Churchill.

### The Struggle for the Chaloner Lands at Steeple Claydon

What follows is largely based on John Broad's article: *Contesting the Restoration Land Settlement? The Battle for Regicide Lands in Steeple Claydon*. Records of Buckinghamshire (2007) Volume 47 (1).

Broad begins by stating that in the early years of the reign of Elizabeth I, the Chaloner family was granted two manors in the village of Steeple Claydon: the larger 'main' manor and the smaller 'rectory' manor. By his will Sir Thomas Chaloner settled the main manor on his eldest sons by his first marriage to Elizabeth Fleetwood: William, Edward, Thomas, and James. He settled the smaller rectory manor on his youngest sons by his second marriage to Judith Blount: Henry, Charles, Arthur, and Fredrick (Broad, p. 154). Thus the two manors at Steeple Claydon belonging to the Chaloner family were split between the senior and junior branches.

When Sir Thomas died in 1615, his eldest son Sir William of the senior branch inherited the main manor while William's younger half-brother Henry of the junior branch inherited the rectory manor. When Sir William died in 1634, without heirs, his next younger brother Edward of the senior branch inherited the main Steeple Claydon manor. However, Edward died ten years later while his wife was still pregnant so the manor then passed to his yet unborn son Edward.

Throughout the course of the younger Edward's minority (and for some time beyond) the larger Steeple Claydon manor was managed by Edward's uncles Thomas and James. James married and had a son Edmund (Mun). Thus Edward and Mun were first cousins. Mun Chaloner became a parson and makes occasional appearances in the *Verney Letters*. According to the DNB Edward Chaloner's younger uncle Thomas did not marry but other sources say he did; we take up this point later.

The way in which Sir Thomas had settled his two Steeple Claydon manors on his two eldest sons (Sir William for the senior branch, Henry for the junior) was such that the two eldest sons of each of Sir Thomas's two marriages did not inherit the entire rights to each manor but rather had a majority interest such that their younger brothers (Thomas and James for the senior branch; Charles, Arthur, and Frederick for the junior) each shared a part interest in their respective manors (the main manor and the rectory manor) which Broad describes as rather like owning shares in a company today. Thus when James Chaloner of the senior branch died his 'interest' in the larger main manor passed to his son 'Mun' Chaloner.

During the civil war the Chaloner family divided its loyalties, as had the Palmers, such that the senior branch joined the Parliamentary side while the junior branch chose the Royalist. Because the two branches were very actively engaged in the



causes of each side of the conflict, we have set aside a section below to give details of these.

His support of the losing royalist side left Henry of the junior branch in financial hardship and he was forced to mortgage part of his estate, and sell more to raise over two thousand pounds to meet the fines imposed on him by Parliament<sup>75</sup>. And, in doing so, Henry effectively passed control of the rectory manor and its lands over to his elder half-brothers Thomas and James Chaloner of the senior branch. (Broad, p. 155)

In 1650 Henry's brother Charles Chaloner of the junior branch took a lease of both the main and rectory manors from his half-brothers Thomas and James of the senior branch at a cost of £400 (Broad, p. 158). However Charles did not live long and in 1657 his estate went to his young widow Anne (?White?). We have noted above the 'memorandum' showing how Charles disposed of his estate.

When the monarchy was restored in 1660 the two parliamentary Chaloners, Thomas and James of the senior branch, were confronted with the stark choice of facing or evading a trial for their part in the events that led up to execution of Charles I. Thomas, having signed the monarch's death warrant and hence a 'regicide', wisely decided to go into exile so he fled to Holland. His brother James committed suicide by drinking poison prepared for him by his mistress. This however has been dismissed as 'an invention of the carrion vultures of the Restoration' (see - [\*The Life of the Great Lord Fairfax\* ... p. 364](#)).

After the restoration, the Chaloner's manorial lands at Steeple Claydon (both the Main and the Rectory) were confiscated by the Crown (even though Henry had supported the monarchy) and they were granted to the land-jobbing lawyer and rabid local Royalist, Sir William Smyth/Smith and his fellow London courtier and business associate Richard Lane. Smith was related to the Verneys having married Margaret Denton Sir Ralph Verney's cousin. (For Smith's entry in *The History of Parliament* click [HERE](#))

However, the Chaloners who remained at Steeple Claydon, i.e. the junior branch fought back against this grant and the dispute resulted in not only lawsuits but armed intimidation and

---

<sup>75</sup> In part because of his role as governor of Portsea castle (see Part Two)

evictions of Steeple Claydon householders by both sides between 1660 and 1665.

A major part of this conflict centered on Ann (?White?), the hapless widow of Charles Chaloner<sup>76</sup>, along with her eight children (see chart). However by 1661 whatever lands Ann's deceased husband Charles had once possessed of the rectory Manor had mostly been sold off to the senior Chaloner branch and the widowed Ann was now living in reduced circumstances with her large family in the village of Steeple Claydon. Even so Smyth pursued her relentlessly and was determined to have what lands Anne had left as well as to have her removed from where she was living along with her numerous children.

On 1<sup>st</sup> May 1663 Smyth succeeded in having Ann evicted but this was too much for the Chaloners and the family rallied in her defence. The first member to come to Ann's rescue was her brother(?) Captain William White whose actions were described in a letter dated 26<sup>th</sup> May 1663 and written by the parson William Butterfield to Sir Ralph Verney (I):

*We have great stirs at present at Steeple Claydon Captain White came down last Saturday night from London, discharged the tenants publicly in the church yesterday, from paying Sir William Smyth any more rent, from felling any more [trees], hath put Mrs. Chaloner into possession of the Manor House ... which puts both town and country into as much rejoicing as if it were a matter of more general concern here.* [Broad, p. 159]

The fact that it was Captain [William] White who so swiftly and boldly came to Ann Chaloner's rescue supports the idea that Ann was of the White family; and perhaps a sister of the Captain's.

25<sup>th</sup> May 1663 [\*House of Commons Journal\*](#) (Volume 8)

*Privilege. Resolved, &c. That William White, and \*Challoner, be sent for, in Custody of the Serjeant at Arms attending this House, or his Deputy; for their Breach of the Privilege of this House, in making a forcible Entry into the House of Sir Wm. Smith, a Member of this House, at Steple Claydon in the County of Bucks. And then the House adjourned till To-morrow Morning, Eight of the Clock.* [Further mention of White and Chaloner does not occur in the HCJ. The \* is in the original]

Unfortunately Ann's re-possession did not last long as Smyth returned with a posse of men and William Butterfield described the events that followed on 15<sup>th</sup> June 1663:

---

<sup>76</sup> Broad says that Charles was Henry's son but I think he is Henry's brother.

[Smyth] ... *demanded possession fairly, but was resolutely denied by the [Chaloner] Women. The word was given and his men broke in presently upon them without any resistance [they then] sent Mrs Chaloner her other son ... to Aylesbury to prison<sup>77</sup>, threw her goods forth into ye street, where they lie still, and turned her cattle out of ye grounds, searched for others that had assisted them in ye town, and by this means hath struck so much terror into ye affrighted people they all stand aghast and are scarce wist what they think.* [Broad, p. 159]

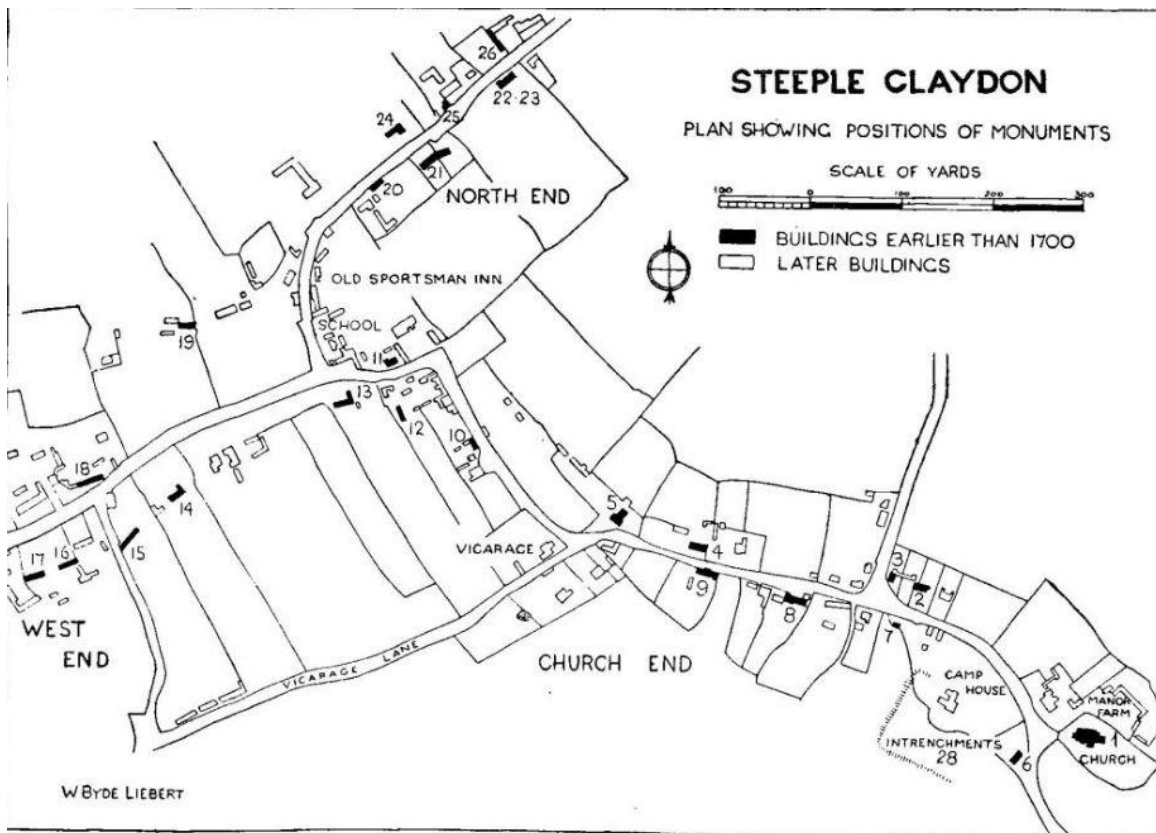
Eventually, after much legal wrangling, the Chaloners regained their land in 1669<sup>78</sup> and thereon proceeded to attempt to increase and rationalize the estate by buying or otherwise gaining control of the overwhelming proportion of freehold and copyhold land around Steeple Claydon. However, this did not come without a price as in so doing they incurred a mortgage of £3,000 that they owed to Ralph Palmer (I) (see Broad p. ?). Palmer's involvement would again support a familial connection between these two families and through the White family.

In 1680 the Chaloners offered to sell the whole estate to the Verneys for £12,000, but the Verneys refused and so they decided in 1682 to sell off the copyhold lands of Steeple Claydon piecemeal.

---

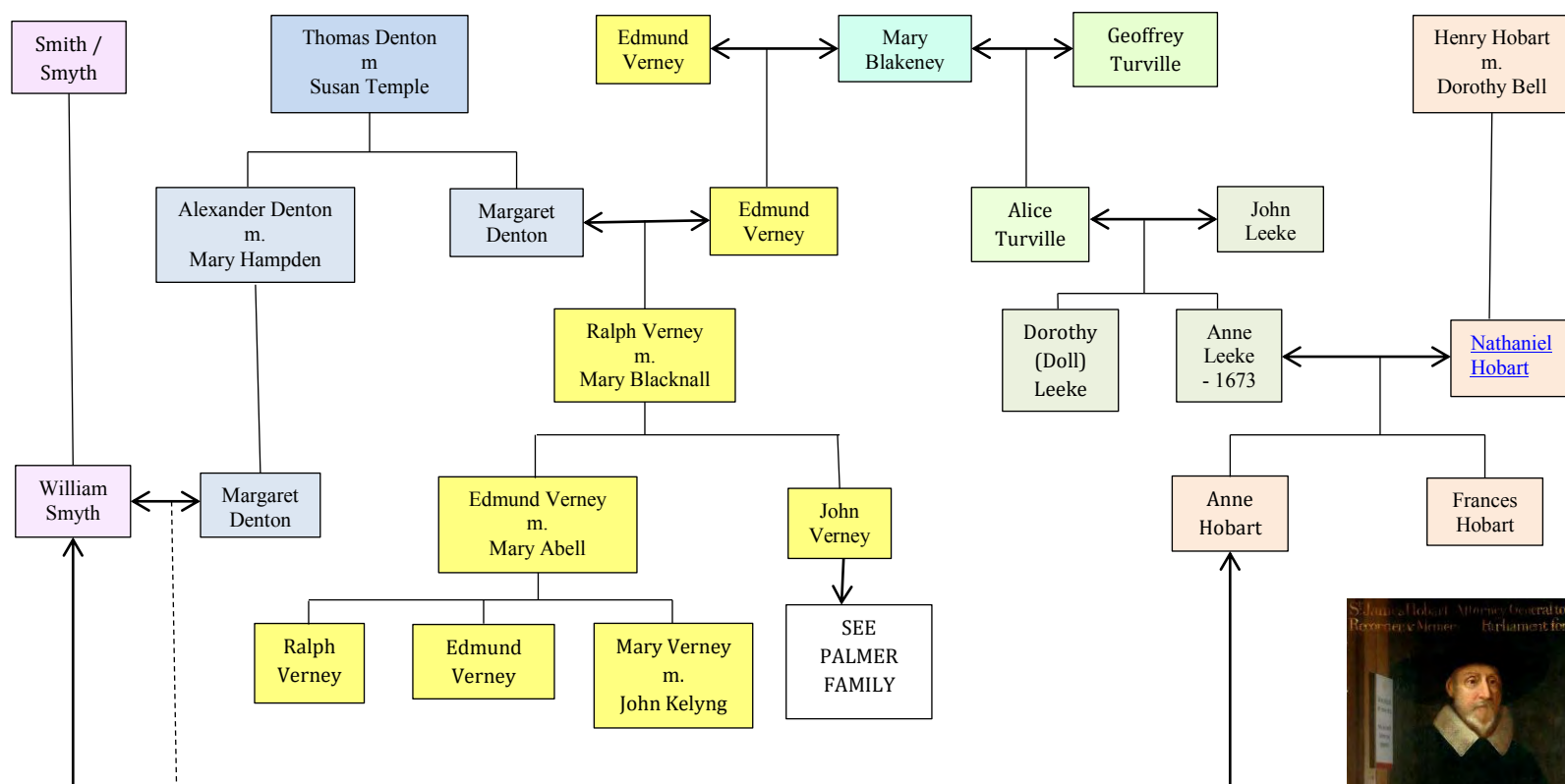
<sup>77</sup> Where they remained five months until 10<sup>th</sup> November.

<sup>78</sup> Broad, J. (1999) *The Fate of the Midland Yeoman (1620-1688)*. Continuity and Change, 14 (3), p. 337.



The chart below shows the connection between William Smyth who wreaked much havoc upon the Chaloner family and the Verneys via both the Denton and the Hobart families. Smyth first married Margaret, a daughter of Sir Alexander Denton (See [A History of Parliament](#)), and then Ann Hobart, daughter of Nathaniel Hobart (See [A History of Parliament](#)).

## The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea



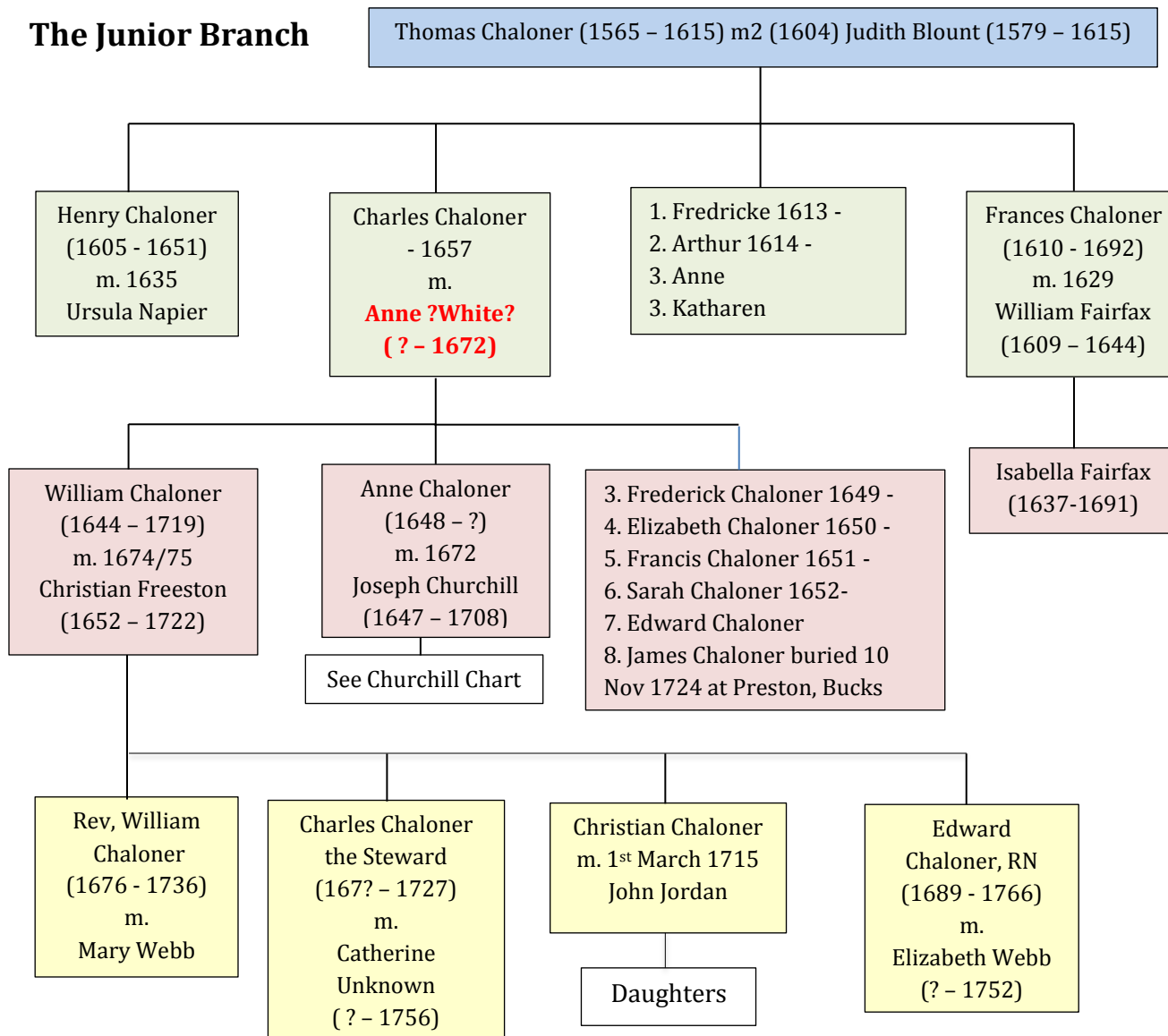
Smith / Smyth had descendants. One of his daughters by Margaret Denton married Peregrine King whose son was a well-known academic and writer William King.



Henry Hobart © Norwich Civic Portrait Collection



## The Junior Branch

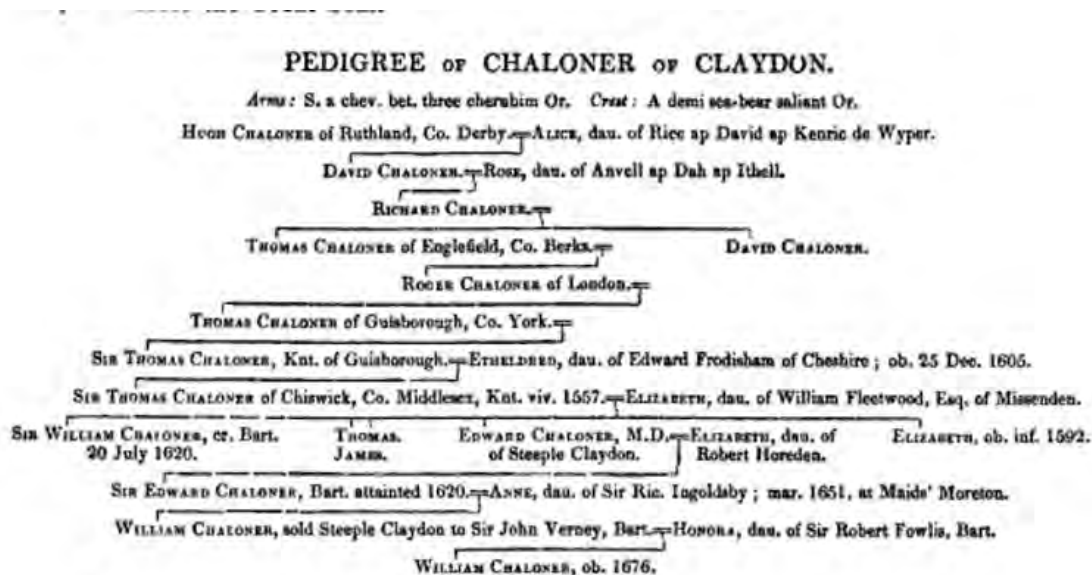


Lady Frances Fairfax the mother of William who married Frances Chaloner. © York Museums Trust

Some twenty years later the Chaloners sold the last of their estate in 1704 to the Verneys. The occasion was noted by Margaret (Verney) Cave in a letter to her father on 5<sup>th</sup> July 1704 in which she congratulates him on his *New bargain at Steeple Claydon, which I hear you have bought*. [VL (1), p. 142.]

But which Chaloner sold the estate? Was it William Chaloner of Guisborough in Yorkshire or William of Steeple Claydon?

In the *History of Buckinghamshire*, Volume 3, there is shown a pedigree of the Chaloners in which the pen ultimate member is a William Chaloner (1655-1715) who married Honora Fowlis and whose father was Sir Edward Chaloner (see below). In other words it shows only the senior branch and not the junior. The pedigree also indicates that it is this William who sold the last of the Chaloner lands at Steeple Claydon to John Verney.



However, the illustration above fails to show Thomas Chaloner's second marriage to Judith Blount whose grandson William was residing at Steeple Claydon at the time of the sale and who could have been the William Chaloner who sold the Chaloner lands to John Verney. It would seem more likely to this writer that it was the junior William not the senior one who sold the Steeple Claydon manorial rights.

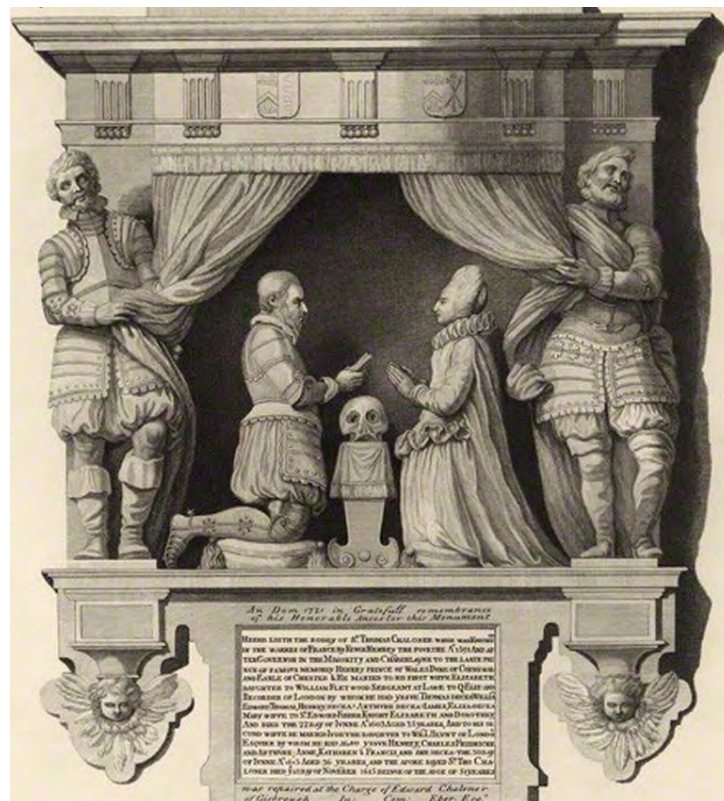
However, the evidence to support this is somewhat weak. First, it was the junior William who resided at Steeple Claydon whereas the senior Sir William resided in Yorkshire. Second, the senior William was **Sir** William the junior was **Mr.** and in *Earlier*

*Histories* it states that the lands were sold by **Mr.** William Chaloner, to Sir John Verney, not Sir William. (see: [A History of the County of Buckingham](#): Volume 4)

On the monument to William's son the parson (also William), it states that he (the parson) was the eldest son of William Chaloner, **Esq.** Lord of the Manor of Steeple Claydon.

We shall leave the conundrum of which William sold the Steeple Claydon manor to John Verney and turn to the lives of the three children of William and Christian (Freeston) Chaloner: Charles the steward, Edward the naval officer, and William the parson. Before doing so we show below the monument that their great grandparents erected to themselves.

On the South wall of the chancel of Chiswick church is the monument of sir Thomas Chaloner, whose effigies, and that of his wife, Judith Blunt are represented kneeling at a fold-stool under a pavilion, the curtains of which are supported by two armed soldiers. On a tablet beneath, the following inscription:



Here lieth the bodey of Sir Thomas Chaloner who was knighted in the warres of France, by kinge Henry the fourthe, 1591, and after governor in the minority, and chamberlayne to the late prince of famous memorey, Henrey prince of Wales, duke of Cornewall, and earle of Chester. He married to his firste wife Elizabeth, daughter to William Fleetwood,

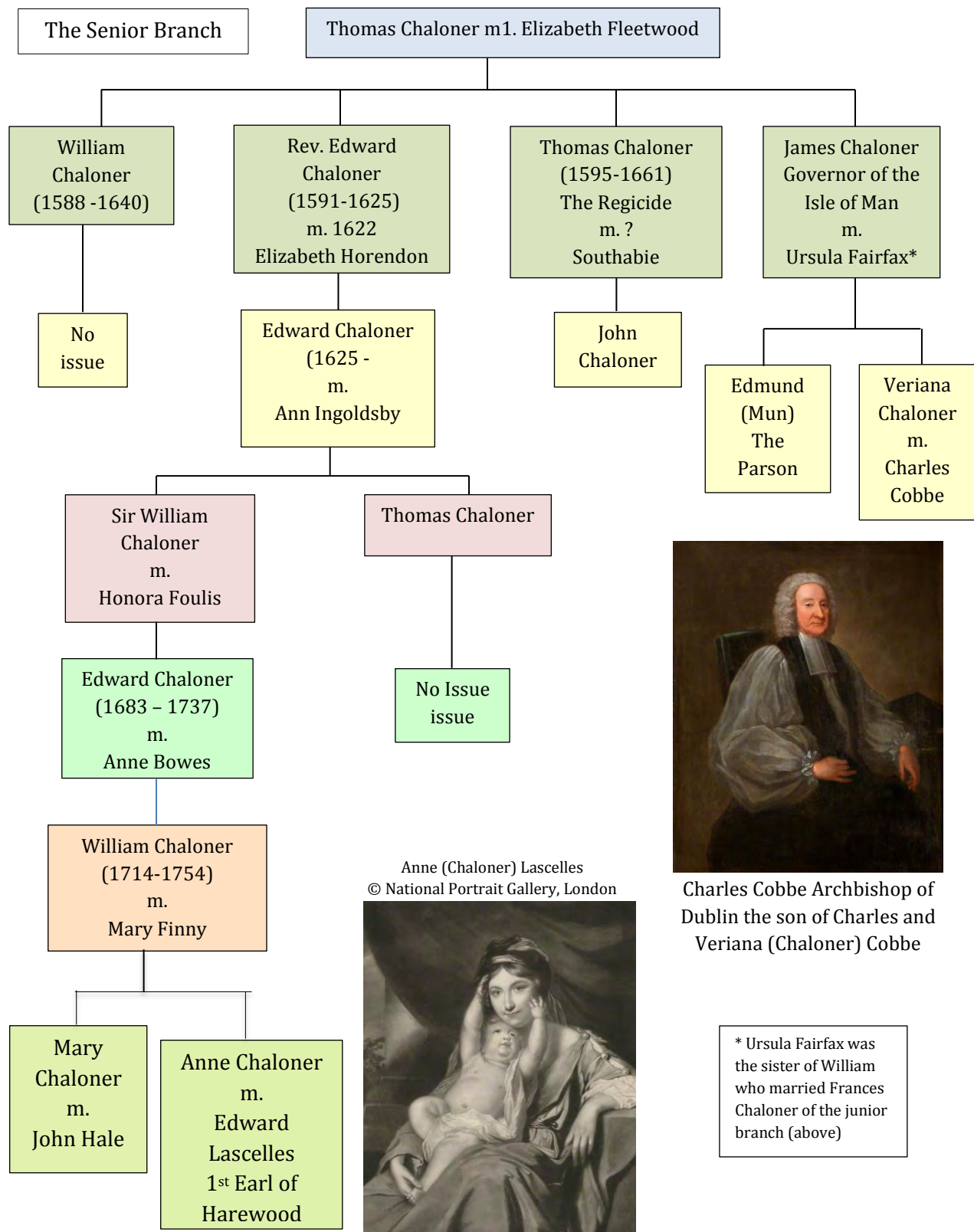
serjeant at lawe to Q. Eliz. and recorder of London, by whom he had issue, Thomas, deceased; William; Edward; Thomas; Henry, deceased; Arthure, deceased; James; Elizabeth, deceased; Mary, wife to sir Edward Fisher, knight; Elizabeth; and Dorothey; and died the 22 of June 1603, aged 35 yeares: and to his second wife he married Jude, the daughter to William Blunt of London, esquier, by whom he had also issue, Henrey; Charles; Fredericke; and Arthure; Anne; Katherine; and Frances; and she deceased the 30 day of June, 1615, aged 36 yeares; and the aforesayed sir Thomas Chaloner died the 18th day of November 1615, being of the age of 51 yeares. This monument was repaired, in the year 1721, by Edward Chaloner of Gisbrough, Yorkshire, esq. in grateful remembrance of his honourable ancestor.

Below Sir Thomas Chaloner, the father of the above Sir Thomas Chaloner.



Sir Thomas Chaloner (1521-1565)  
© National Portrait Gallery, London [NPG 2445]







There is one dangling genealogical issue not resolved and that is whether the regicide Thomas Chaloner ever married and if so if he had any issue, etc. The current DNB and other sources make no reference to a marriage but in the first edition of the DNB there is the following:

From a 'J. W. of York' to Thomas Chaloner, M.P. Richmond, 1646, giving an account of the sudden death, from drinking too much sack, of a gentleman, 'your wife's brother, Mr. *Sothabie*.<sup>79</sup>

Writing in the [\*Memoirs of the Verney Family\*](#) (Volume One), the editor states that in 1656 Thomas Chaloner the regicide built a schoolhouse at Steeple Claydon and settled £121 per annum for maintenance of the schoolmaster. However the school eventually fell into disrepair and a master was no longer appointed; until that is the middle of the nineteenth century when the building was restored.

In 1901 a hall was added and the building was re-opened as the Chaloner Library. Among those invited to the opening was the Rev. Walter *Sotheby* who presented a book to the Chaloner Library in memory of the connection between the Chaloners and Sothebys. Also in attendance was, according to the *The Memoirs*, Miss Henrietta Hale (see chart above).



Mary (Chaloner) Hale whose descendant Henrietta Hale contributed to the Chaloner Library. © National Portrait Gallery, London

On a web site devoted to the poet [Rupert Chawner Brooke](#) there is a section that describes a possible descent from Thomas the regicide.

---

<sup>79</sup> Dictionary of National Biography, Volume IX, By Leslie Stephen. But the current edition of the DNB does not mention a marriage.



Rupert Chawner Brooke – the poet © National Portrait Gallery, London NPG 4911

Origins of the Chawner family in Boylestone. In the 16th century the family of Mountjoy, whose family name was Blount, held Barton Blount, a hamlet close to Church Broughton. Judith Blount, a distant relative of the Barons of Mountjoy became stepmother of Thomas Chaloner (regicide), when she became his father's second wife. On her death land she held nearby Church Broughton passed to her stepson, Thomas. *The regicides son*, John Chaloner (1630), came up from Steeple Claydon, Buckinghamshire, where the Regicide had property, to take up residence on this property settled on him by his father, before his lands were confiscated, following the Restoration. John adopted the name Chawner to distance himself from his father's Roundhead connections. John and his son Thomas subsided into obscurity as country gentlemen and yeoman farmers until their family connections were forgotten, and the family fortunes began to rise. John died in 1695 and was buried in a family vault at Boylestone Church, Derbyshire. The property then passed to his son, Thomas Chawner (1654 - 1741), who sometimes now used the name Chaloner. In 1708, Thomas Chaloner (who is actually Thomas Chawner) is recorded as owning land in the parish of Boyleston, and he owned a good deal of land in Church Broughton as well. As his fortunes grew he acquired more land including Lees Hall and Sudbury Wood etc. He is also buried in the family vault at Boylestone.

### The Children of William and Christian (Freeston) Chaloner:

#### 1. Chaloner: Charles (167? – 1727).

Charles was the eldest of the four sons of William and Christian (Freestone) Chaloner. He married someone by the name of Catherine and they had two daughters baptized Margaret and Elizabeth. Elizabeth married Charles Webb and Margaret married William Harper

Even though there are quite frequent references to Charles's wife in *The Verney Letters* she is only referred to there as 'Mrs. Chaloner' and nothing else about her identity is revealed.

Charles Chaloner became the Verney's steward in 1705 on the death of the steward William Coleman. The two men came to the job from opposite ends of the social scale: William Coleman rose into it from a fairly lowly level while Charles Chaloner sank into it after his father William, the last Chaloner to be Lord of the Manor of Claydon, sold the ancestral lands to John Verney in 1704.

Charles was not trained for the task and John described him as a:

*... young man ... but raw and little acquainted with my business, which gives me great fatigue.*

He learnt his job as he went along, and when he died 22 years later the loss of *honest Mr. Chaloner* was described as irreparable.<sup>80</sup>

When Ralph Verney (II) succeeded his father 1717, Charles Chaloner remained in the role of family steward. And the position became even more important as Ralph (II) spent the majority of his time at Chelsea and was rarely at Claydon. The editor of *The Verney Letters* states that Ralph (II):

*... though not strong in health he had the good business ability and love of detail which had distinguished his father, and not a thatch was mended nor a tree lopped at Claydon without his knowledge and consent.* [VL (2), p. 94]

On 5<sup>th</sup> May 1718 Ralph writes a typical estate management letter to Charles in which he says that:

*... if I had thought of it in time, you should have given the lops of the lime trees at the Alms Row to some in the Alms-houses, and you may still do it if you think it best.* [VL (2), p. 56].

THE MAD DOG EPISODE: At a time when rabbiess was a common occurrence in the English countryside, loosing animals to the disease was a fact of life and one that Charles Chaloner had to face at the end of 1717 [VL (I), p. 281]. He writes to Ralph (II) on 21<sup>st</sup> November:

*Here came a madd dog and got into the park and bit the Great Dog and came into the house and bit several other dogs about the house. The Great Dog hath been very bad, but I hope something better again, he is kept Chained up; all the dogs have been blooded and I hope will help them.*

---

<sup>80</sup> *Transforming English Rural Society* by John Broad. p. 117

Ten days later he continues the saga:

*The dogs have been dun with black Soape and brandy according to your honour's order and the Great Dog in the park is much better. I hope it will cure the rest of them.*

On 3<sup>rd</sup> December Charles writes to Ralph (II):

*The great dog in the park went mad yesterday notwithstanding our dressing his ears with black soap and Latheirng it in with brandy; that he was first to be shot, which I am sorry for, because he was a very good dog for the park; I believe he was bit twice, because there was two mad dogs in the park.*

Given the cure it is not surprising that there was no stopping the spread of the disease.

Another letter from Ralph to Charles says that Ralph will:

*... send my children to Claydon, and you must provide meat and other necessities for the family. I would not continue the servants' board wages, but till the children get thither.*

Ralph is also sending a wagon ahead and the housekeeper Mrs. Challoner is asked:

*... to provide something handsome for the man to eat, and to lay him in the house, as he is the owner of the horse he drives. [VL (2), p. 57]*

Ralph Verney (II) to Charles Chaloner 13<sup>th</sup> December 1726:

*I met your brother Edward yesterday at my [step] Mother's [Elizabeth (Baker) Verney] he said he would go today into the counry for eleven days on horseback, to Drayton or to Mrs. Jordan's [Christian Chaloner] .... My wife would have two large pots such as Mrs. Chaloner used to buy to pot meat in, bought and filled with potted meat, made of the Bull, and let her buy what spice is wanted, and my wife would have a large piece dried as it used to be. I send down two dozen of bottles, that dozen which is sealed is Brandy for yourself, and the other dozen for Mr. Butterfield, which send to him with our service, there is a parcel of plums and sugar, and a dozen lemons for Mrs. Chaloner. [VL (2), p. 100]*

Ralph (II) had spent much of December 1718 with his Palmer uncle and aunt in Chelsea and needed to alert Chaloner to the fact that:

*If I don't come home by St. Thomas' Day you must consult my wife, and give the same money to every one in the Alms Houses as you did last year and dispose of the beef much after the same manner ... I am your Loyal Friend, Fermanagh. [VL (1), p. 281]*

This sending down of gifts at Christmas time was an annual ritual and on 22<sup>nd</sup> December 1738 Ralph (II) sends down one dozen bottles of the best Madeira to Mr Butterworth, another dozen to the Steward Mr Millward, a dozen of sack in quarts to Parson Green, a dozen pints of mountain wine to cousin Starkey, and six pints of the same to Mrs Chaloner. The postman receives a Christsmas box. [VL (2), p.180]

Sir Thomas Cave, 5<sup>th</sup> Bart., writing on 26<sup>th</sup> February 1710 notes that:

*By Mr Challoner of Steeple Claydon, who came hither last night to fetch away his Daughter, [Margaret] we perceive you left Claydon on Friday, ...* [VL (1), p. 280]

This socializaing between the Cave and Chaloner families would indicate that the Chaloners still retained enough social status to recieve invitations from those whose ranks they had fallen quite far from.

Charles Chaloner to Ralph Verney (II) 18<sup>th</sup> September 1726:

*Yesterday Goody Taylor bought one dozen yards of Lace for my Lady, which I paid her 18 shillings, The Archdeacon was here to visit the church last Friday betwixt six and seven of the clock at night, and he told the Church Warden that he will have a New church Bible and New Common Prayer Book betwixt this and Easter, but this what the old Parson put in his head, for old Mr. Butterfield had me to the church two days before he came, and showed me the Church Bible, and said that there must needs be a new Bible and I asked him why, and he said the Cover was worne out and when it was last bound in a place or two the leaves were put in wrong, but I told him those leaves might be put in right now, but then he said the print was so black; but the Arch Deacon says there must be a New Common Prayer Book because King George being put into the Prayer.* [VL (2), p. 136]



William Butterfield by Godfrey Kneller.

Note on the back states he is aged 60 1748 In the public domain. Christies Auction.



On 21<sup>st</sup> February Ralph (II) writes to Charles:

*I think you had better come to Chelsea and bring the money with you, since you don't think it safe to leave it at Claydon, while you go to Wasing .... You must make the Cooper take the mashing tub to pieces in the Brew House, and put it together again, but see he do it, or else he will make it less than it was which must not be, and he will put rushes under the hoop, if you don't watch him, to fill em out, I believe we must put in one new stave to keep it to the bigness it now is ... My wife would have a turkey and three fowls, dead, sent by the carrier. I hear Sir John Whitterwrong's is to be sold, could you hear of what value it is, I am your Loving friend F.*

Ralph wants some pictures sent from Claydon to his home in Chelsea and he instructs Chaloner that:

*They lie in the best Staircase, direct them upon the case, because if you drive into it you may hurt the pictures, my wife would have the little picture that stands upon the chest of draws in my father's chamber .... I believe the Pidgeons should be fed a days, for these that come are very poor, and this is reckoned a hard time for Pidgeons ... I don't believe this King [George I] touches any for the Evil and if Oliver come I daresay it can't be done. [VL (2), p. 94]*

Letters such as the above were frequently exchanged between Verney and Charles Chaloner. But then, after 1727, the letters received by Ralph Verney (II) in which accounts of trees felled in woods, of the state of farms, of new leases granted, of defaulting tenants, etc. continue but the signature changes from that of Charles Chaloner to one John Millward. [VL (2), pp. 176-177]. In 1737 John Millward married the daughter of William Butterfield's, the third Butterfield to hold the rectorship of Middle Claydon, and there would be more Millward-Butterfield marriages during the remainder of the 18<sup>th</sup> century.

According to John Broad, Charles Chaloner's last letters record:

**... his struggles to continue his duties while succumbing to what was probably the most potent epidemic of the eighteenth century. [smallpox?]**

Charles died in December 1727 and was buried at Steeple Claydon on the 17<sup>th</sup> of that month. At Steeple Claydon church there is a stone set in the floor that records the name of Charles, second son of William Chaloner and Christian his wife.

Charles's widow Catherine remained in her role as housekeeper and there is a passing reference to her on 12<sup>th</sup> May 1739:

*Dick Bates is to stay in Claydon House every other Sunday, that Mrs Challoner may go to church. [VL (2), p. 180]*

Steeple Claydon parish records indicate that Catherine Chaloner, widow, died in July 1756 and was buried on the 17<sup>th</sup> of that month.

As noted, based on Catherine's will and others, we deduce that Charles and Catherine (unknown) Chaloner had two daughters: Elizabeth who married Charles Webb and Margaret who married William Harper (see chart). The children of the former had no children but the latter had many.

### The will of Catherine Chaloner, widow of Steeple Claydon

Catherine Chaloner, widow of Steeple Claydon in the County of Buckinghamshire writes and signs her will on 30<sup>th</sup> December 1754. She gives legacies to the following: her grandson Charles Webb, eldest son of William Webb deceased of Steeple Claydon, twenty pounds. To her grandson William Webb, second son of William Webb deceased, twenty pounds. To her eldest granddaughter Elizabeth Webb, her bed and bedding, a bureau, a table, a looking glass, and a gold ring. To her granddaughter Catherine Webb, second daughter of William Webb deceased, one silver pair of tea tongs, one silver snuffbox, and two gold rings. To her granddaughter Mary Webb, the third daughter of William Webb deceased, she leaves one cypher gold ring and the sum of ten pounds.

She gives to William Harper her grandson and the eldest son of William Harper of Twyford Lodge in the parish of Twyford in the county of Buckinghamshire, yeoman, the sum of twenty pounds and a feather bed, one bolster, two pillows, three blankets, one quilt, one bedstead, and yellow arateen curtains.

To her grandson Edward Harper second son of William Harper the sum of twenty pounds. To her grandson Charles Harper the third son of William Harper the sum of twenty pounds. To her grandson Richard Harper the fourth son of William the sum of ten pounds. To her grandson Philip Harper the fifth son of William Harper ten pounds.

She appoints her daughter Elizabeth (Chaloner) Webb widow of Steeple Claydon sole executor of her will. The will was proved by Elizabeth Webb on 30<sup>th</sup> October 1756.

William and Elizabeth (Chaloner) Webb had two sons: Charles and William and three daughters: Elizabeth, Catherine, and Mary. The eldest son Charles Webb eventually became the steward to Ralph Verney (III).

William and Margaret (Chaloner) Harper had five sons: William, Edward, Charles, Richard, and Philip and no daughters. (see chart below). Margaret (Chaloner) Harper pre-deceased her husband (sometime before 1749) and he then went on to marry Ann King and to have at least four more children by her.

From Catherine's will and various other sources we can deduce that the Chaloner family must have married into the Webb family across two generations. Catherine's brothers-in-law William the parson and Edward the naval officer appear to have married two Webb sisters - Mary and Elizabeth - and Catherine's daughter Elizabeth married a William Webb.

### Will of William Webb of Steeple Claydon.

William Webb, of Steeple Claydon, Grazier, the son of William and Elizabeth (Chaloner) Webb, makes his will on 14<sup>th</sup> March 1777. He gives and bequeaths to his sister Elizabeth [Webb] Harper wife of Mr Charles Harper two hundred pounds. To his sister Catherine Webb Seven Hundred and Fifty Pounds. To his sister Mary Webb the sum of two hundred pounds. To his Kinsman John Coates the elder of Storkley (?) in the County of Bucks Labourer and William Coates the elder now living at or near Portsmouth in the County of Southampton the sum of five pounds a piece. He gives to his brother Mr. Charles Webb all and singular his stock in cattle and husbandry ready money and Bonds Mortgages and Securities, etc. He nominates his brother Charles Webb as his executor. William died on 29<sup>th</sup> April 1777 and the will was proved on 31<sup>st</sup> December 1777 by Charles Webb brother of the deceased and executor.

### Will of Charles Harper Gentleman

The will of Charles Harper, Gentleman, of Market Gibbon in the County of Bucks. He bequeaths to his wife Elizabeth [Webb] Harper all and singular his freehold and leasehold messuages, cottages, closes, lands, tenements, and hereditaments, etc. at Stoney Compton in the County of Warwick and now occupied by James Griffin. To each of his 'Harper' nephews and nieces i.e. William, Charles, Margaret, Catherine, Mary one hundred and fifty pounds. These being the sons and daughters of his brother Edward Harper deceased. To each of his three other Harper nephews (being the sons of his brother Richard Harper) viz: William, Thomas, and Edward one hundred and fifty pounds.

He gives to his nephew Charles Harper (the son of his deceased brother Edward) all the stock, Cattle Crops of Corn Grain and Hay and Waggon Carts Ploughs and Harrows and farming utensils

now being in and about the farm in his occupation at Hadham in the Counties of Bedford and Herts.

He gives to his brothers William Harper, Richard Harper, and Philip Harper the legacy of five pounds each to buy them mourning.

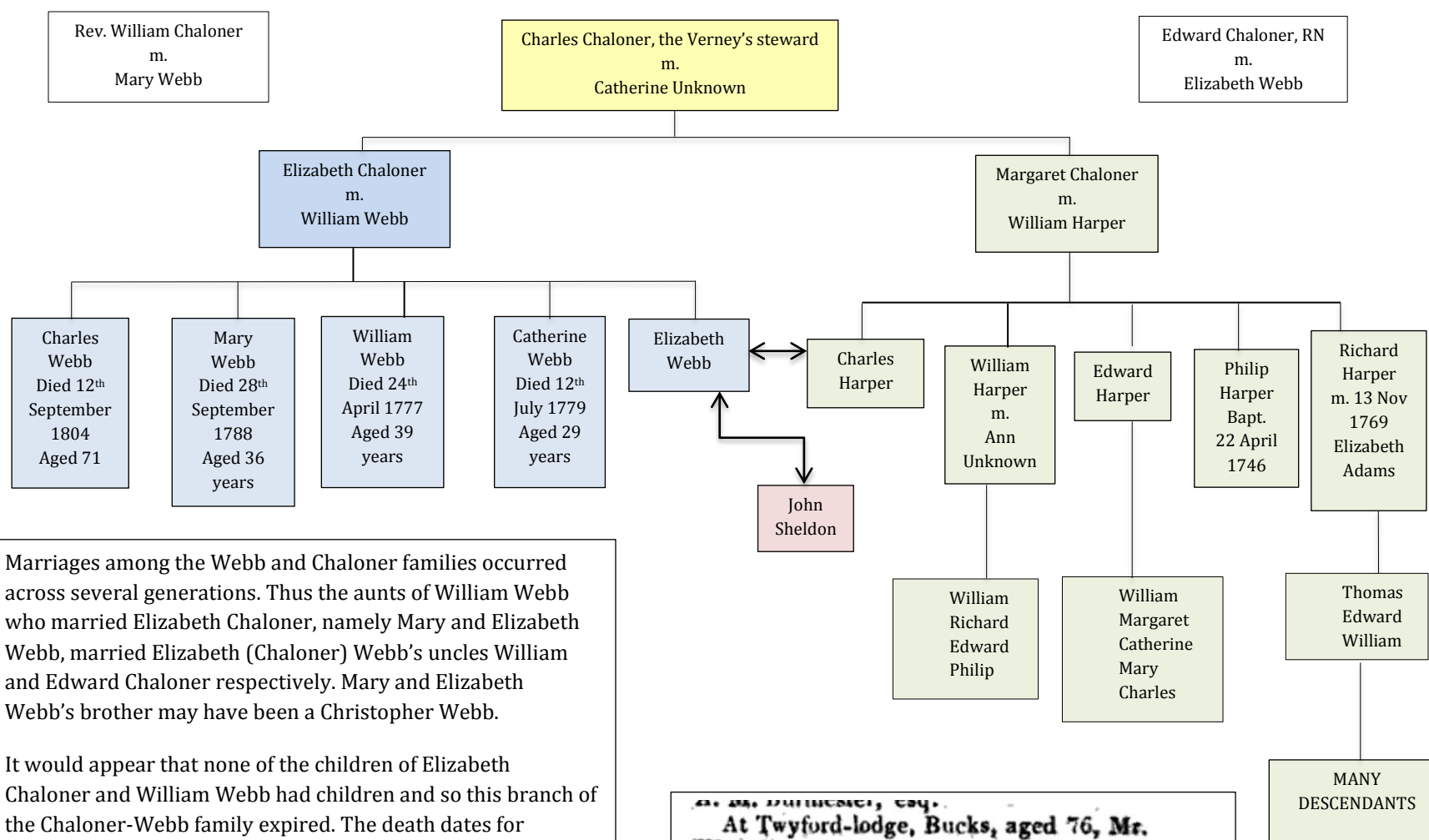
And as to his stock, cattle, corn, grain, hay wagons, carts, ploughs, harrows, and implements of husbandry and all his household goods and furniture and household plate china linen and woolen and all his ready money and money out at interest bonds, bills, notes, and the rest and remainder his chattels personal estate and effects of what nature kind or sort unto his said wife Elizabeth (Webb) Harper.

He appoints his wife Elizabeth, his brother Philip Harper, and cousin Charles Webb of Steeple Claydon, Gentleman, as his executors. Signed 16<sup>th</sup> July 1797.

Probate was granted on 30<sup>th</sup> July 1800 to Elizabeth (Webb) Harper widow, Philip Harper brother of the deceased, and Charles Webb the executors.

William and Elizabeth (Webb) Harper had no issue and after his decease Elizabeth went on to marry John Sheldon. Again there was no issue. The Harper family continues to flourish to this day.

## The Palmer Family of Roydon and Chelsea



Marriages among the Webb and Chaloner families occurred across several generations. Thus the aunts of William Webb who married Elizabeth Chaloner, namely Mary and Elizabeth Webb, married Elizabeth (Chaloner) Webb's uncles William and Edward Chaloner respectively. Mary and Elizabeth Webb's brother may have been a Christopher Webb.

It would appear that none of the children of Elizabeth Chaloner and William Webb had children and so this branch of the Chaloner-Webb family expired. The death dates for Charles, Mary, William, and Catherine Webb are from [History of Buckinghamshire](#) Vol 3 and can be found on a wall monument at Steeple Claydon church.

*At Twyford-lodge, Bucks, aged 76, Mr.  
Wm. Harper, an opulent grazier.*

Above from: *The Gentleman's Magazine*, December 1813



# William Chaloner, the Parson (1676 – 1736)

There is a baptismal record for a William Chaloner son of Willam and Christian (Freeston) Chaloner born in 1676 at Steeple Claydon<sup>81</sup> and which probably refers to this William. His entry for Lincoln College, Oxford reads:

1677. See Foster's Index of Court Reg.  
**Challoner, William, s. William, of Steeple Claydon, Bucks, gent. LINCOLN COLL., matric. 3 April, 1693, aged 16; B.A. 1696, M.A. 1699, rector of Drayton Beauchamp, Bucks, 1708. See Foster's Index Ecclesiasticus.**

A listing of the incumbents of St. Mary the Virgin, Drayton Beauchamp in Buckinghamshire includes:

William Chaloner, 1708, son of William, of Steeple Claydon, Bucks, gent. Lincoln College, matric. 3 April 1693, aged 16; B.A. 1696, M.A. 1699.

Upon leaving Oxford, Parson William Chaloner was given the benefice of Drayton Beauchamp the home of the Cheyneys. His name appears next to the year 1708 about half way down the right hand column.

CHURCH of S. MARY, Drayton Beauchamp. LIST OF VICARS & RECTORS.			
VICARS		Just.	Just.
Ralph	1220	George Brudenell	1602
Ralph de Hilpestorp	1223	Thomas Hiff	1507
Ralph son of Roger	1228	Humphrey Darrell	1530
Peter de Draitone	1233	John Loody	1547
William de Draitone	1269	Robert Grave	1562
Henry de Halyton	1274	John Lawton	1565
RECTORS		Richard Hooker	1584
Miles	1220	Edward Field	1585
Miles de Beauchamp	1269	Edward Fleetwood	1625
Richard de Draitone	1279	John Gerard	1630
Simon de Burncastre	1307	Robert Cheyne	1662
John Gerneyn of Chesham	1317	John Porter	1689
William Creton	1349	William Chaloner	1708
John Seint Pier	1359	Hon. William Carmichael	1737
Gilbert de Arcubus	1361	John Lockman	1740
John de Melfton	1381	Basil Woodd	1808
John Warmyngton	1398	Charles Samuel Woodd	1831
Thomas Drayton	1410	Thomas Nayler Bland	1838
John Pedewell	1416	William Hastings Kelf	1840
John Frank	1416	H. Harpur Crewe	1860
Roger Clegge	1435	Ernest John M. Causland	1883
Robert Bayly	1438	Ernest W. P. Betts	1887
John Merton	1441	Charles H. T. Ecob	1912
Robert Isham	1459	Henry John Burkitt	1918
Hugh Buns	1469	Charles W. G. Bayliss	1935
Henry Molyneux	1472	Wm. Auguste Wilson	1939
John Alyson	1485	D. J. Scurry Jones	1940

<sup>81</sup> *The History and Antiquities of the Town, Hundred, and Deanery of Buckingham* by Browne Willis, p. 273.

William makes a few very brief appearances in *The Verney Letters*. On 3<sup>rd</sup> October 1709 Elizabeth (Baker) Verney writes to her husband John:

*Poor Barton was buried last night, Mr. Chaloner preached his Sermon and he [Barton] lies in the Chancel at Steeple Claydon.* [VL (1), p. 189].

In another instance John Verney is annoyed with the parson whom he says:

*... owes me above a hundred pounds of interest; he says he cannot pay me any of it till after Michaelmas, by which you may see how difficult it is to get money.* [VL (1), p. 288]

[The editor of *The Verney Letters* gives the date of this letter as 1721, but that is an error as John died in 1717. Perhaps it was Ralph (II) who wrote the letter.]

Betty Verney writing to her brother Ralph (II) on 22<sup>nd</sup> September 1736 from Bath notes that:

*Parson Chaloner is here and his brother the Captain to attend him; he looks sadly but he has a great opinion that these waters will do him good.* [VL (2), p. 143]



Bath in the Eighteenth Century © Trustees of the British Museum

But William lived only a few months after his visit to Bath and he died on 24<sup>th</sup> December 1736 after which a mural monument was placed at the west end of the south aisle of Drayton Beauchamp church. At the top of the pediment was placed the Chaloner arms, and beneath those the inscription following<sup>82</sup>:

---

<sup>82</sup> *The History and Antiquities of the County of Buckingham*, Volume 3, by George Lipscomb, p. 336



[Arms: S. a chevron between 3 cherubs Or. impaling  
Gu. a fess between 3 owls, Or.]

Here lyeth buried the body of the Revd. Mr. William Chaloner, M.A. and Rector of this Parish. He was the eldest son of William Chaloner, Esq. Lord of the Manor of Steeple Claydon, in this County, descended from Sir Thomas Chaloner, Knt. a person famous in his generation; of whom very honourable mention is made in the Annals of English History, particularly in the reigns of Edw. VI, and Queen Elizabeth.

Here is likewise buried the Body of his dearly beloved Wife, Mary Chaloner, who departed this life August 5th 1726, aged 35. He, on the 24th of December 1736, in the 29th year of his Ministry, aged 60.

His beloved brother and executor, Mr. Edward Chaloner, Lieutenant of a Man of War, caused this Monument to be erected to his pious memory.

### The Will of William Chaloner

On the second day of July 1736 William Chaloner of Drayton Beauchamp in the County of Bucks Clerk being weak in body but of sound disposing mind and memory and mindful of his mortality wrote his last will and testament in manner following that is to say he commends his soul, etc.... He first wishes to be interred in the parish church of Drayton Beauchamp beside Mary his late wife.

He would like a handsome stone to be placed on the wall of the church at Drayton Beauchamp in memory of himself and his wife with the day of the month and date of the year when they were buried and both their ages. And as for his temporal estate he gives to his brother Edward Chaloner all his messuages, cottages, closes, lands, tenements, arable land, pasture, and woods enclosed and not enclosed in the parish of Steeple Claydon and also another estate lately bought of Mrs Sarah Carville widow at Broughton in the parish of Beriton in Bucks except for one annuity of ten pounds a year to be paid to his loving sister Christian Jordan of Broughton widow during the term of her natural life ... and he gives to his sister Jordan eight pounds to buy herself mourning. And he gives to his niece Anne Jordan one hundred pounds as well as the Green bed he commonly lies on and all the bedding thereunto belonging. And also to his four nieces Elizabeth, Mary, Susan, and Ruth Jordan (the other four daughters of his sister Christian Jordan) twenty pounds a piece.

And he gives to his niece Margaret Chaloner, the daughter of his brother Charles Chaloner, thirty pounds of goods and lawful money and his Gold watch. He gives to his niece Elizabeth [Chaloner] Webb thirty pounds being the other daughter of his brother Charles. And he gives to his sister [in law] Catherine Chaloner eight pounds to buy herself mourning. And he gives to his brother in law Mr Christopher Webb a Guinea ring. [This confirms that William married Mary Webb] And he gives to Mr Edward Martin the elder of Daners End a Guinea ring and a silk hatband and a pair of shammy gloves. He would like all the farmers and crafters in the parish of Drayton Beauchamp be invited to his funeral and have each of them given a good pair of gloves and he gives to seven neighboring clergymen including Mr. George Tippin of Shabbington if alive a Guinea ring a silk hatband and a pair of shammy gloves and he desires them to bear up his pall. And he gives to the poor of Drayton Beauchamp fifty shillings and to the poor of Steeple Claydon fifty shillings. To his servants who are still in his employ at the time of his decease, a quarter of a year's wages. And all the residue of his estate goes to his brother Edward whom he appoints sole executor but if his brother Edward (being lieutenant of a man of war) shall be out of the country at the time of his decease or is so distant from Drayton Beauchamp that he cannot come to have his body interred in due time then he desires his sister Jordan to see his body decently interred in the church at Drayton Beauchamp

The will was proved by his brother Edward Chaloner on 6<sup>th</sup> March 1736/37.

### Lieutenant Edward Chaloner, RN (1690 – 1766)

Edward Chaloner was born in 1690 and he died on 10<sup>th</sup> March 1766 aged seventy-seven. He married Elizabeth Webb but they had no issue and she died in April 1752 and was buried on the 20<sup>th</sup> of that month at Steeple Claydon. The editor of *The Verney Letters* writes that:

**The Verneys were very much mixed up with the Chaloners both in business and friendship, and especially with the naval Captain whose monument is in the Chancel at Steeple Claydon Church.**

However the editor is somewhat confused as to who the father of Edward is referring to him as the son of John Verney's steward 'Ned' [VL (1), p. 273] whereas he was in fact the son of William (Gent.), the last Chaloner to hold the manor of Steeple Claydon.

As with his brothers, the Verneys assisted Edward to find employment and John writes to Captain Butler RN of the *Dunkirk*, man of war, on 17<sup>th</sup> April 1711:

*It is needless to ask you to be kind to him [Chaloner] during the Voyage. Captain Butler is too much of a gentleman to be otherwise – but what I entreat of you is to prefer him to some higher post as opportunity offers.* [VL (1), p. 273]

Edward Chaloner aboard HMS *Swallow* writes to his brother Charles at Claydon 8<sup>th</sup> April 1723.

*Dear Brother – This comes to acquaint you that we are arrived safely to St Hellens near to Portsmouth, I took an opportunity to some time ago to write to my Lord by a merchant ship that left our Fleet, how I was made Lieutenant above sixteen months ago, and am the first Lt. on Board the Swallow, which I desire you will please to communicate to his Lordship, and humbly beg his interest of my being confirmed as Lieutenant by the Lords Commissrs. of the Admiralty, and beg you'll favour me with a Line to letts know how you and all your friends does.* [VL (2), p. 95]

The *Swallow* is one of the vessels shown on the painting of the Eddystone lighthouse commissioned by Colonel Lovett.

On 8<sup>th</sup> November 1726, Charles Chaloner informs Ralph (II) that he has received:

*... A letter from my brother Edward riding at the Essex coast ... he gives an account that the fleet lay at Re.... about four months and was not suffered to go on shore but lay at Danzich eleven days, where they were entertained by the King of Poland's son-in-law, with balls and plays.* [VL (2), p. 99]

A letter written on 9<sup>th</sup> September 1743 from Edward Chaloner to Ralph (II):

*I have sent your Honour in Closed [enclosed] the Book we talked of about Our Sea Instructions to Peruse; and hope it will be worth your Inspection. My Spouse joins with humble duty, &c.*

Ralph Verney (III) writing to his father on 21<sup>st</sup> July 1745 mentions that:

*Captain Chaloner dislocated his Knee Pan by a fall from his horse, the Surgeons at Birkhamstead did not give him any relief so he came to Winslow last Thursday & Turland gave him Ease immediately. I believe he returned home that day.* [VL (2), p. 212]

Edward died on 10<sup>th</sup> March 1766 and his monument at Steeple Claydon reads [in part]...



To the memory of Edward Chaloner Esq son of William and Christian Chaloner which William was this [Edward's father] ... he [William] was grandson of Sir Thomas Chaloner Tutor to Henry Prince of Wales Son of James 1st which Thomas was son of the famous Sir Thomas Chaloner that Great Soldier and Scholar, knighted by the Protector of Edward the Sixth as he was by Queen Elizabeth for his bravery and learning sent Ambassador to the Emperor Ferdinand and to Phillip Second King of Spain. This Edward Chaloner was Lieutenant in the Navy above 50 years and shewed his courage in his exertions in the Eastern, Western, Northern and Southern Seas. Nor did he want the gentle virtues of a good husband. He retired from the military to a private life for want of health and to prepare for a state of eternal peace. He died the 10th March 1766 in the 78th year of his age

However in [Magna Britannia: Bedfordshire, Berkshire, and Buckinghamshire](#) By Samuel Lysons it states something quite differently and wrongly:

In the parish church is a memorial for Edward Chaloner esq. thirty years a lieutenant in the navy, who died in 1766. He was grandson of Thomas Chaloner the regicide, great grandson of the learned Sir Thomas Chaloner, (tutor to Henry, Prince of Wales,) and great great-grandson of Sir Thomas Chaloner, grantee of the manor as above-mentioned. <sup>83</sup>.

The above by Lysons is an error as Edward was the grandson of Charles and Anne (?White?) Chaloner, and not Thomas the regicide.

Like his brother William's wife, Edward's wife Elizabeth (Webb) also pre-deceased him and Ralph Verney (III) mentions her passing to his father in a letter dated 23<sup>rd</sup> April 1752:

*Captain Chaloner's wife died last week and was buried at Steeple Claydon. Harper and William Webb came in a mourning coach with the hearse.* [VL (2), p. 245].

#### Summary of the Will of Edward Chaloner

On the Twenty fourth day of March in the third year of the Reign of King George III [1763] Edward Chaloner of Berkhamsted Saint Quester in the County of Bedford Esq (being a Lieutenant in the Royal Navy) and in sound mind and memory and understanding considering the uncertainty of life, etc ... wishes his body to be interred in the chancel of the parish church of Steeple Claydon near to his late wife and to be carried there in a hearse with four horses and attended by a mourning coach with four horses.

---

<sup>83</sup> Lysons, p. 544 and the same error is also found in *A General Armory of England, Scotland, and Ireland* By John Burke, Bernard Burke.

He wishes his Excecutor to spend twenty pounds to erect a marble monument to his memory and that of his late wife on the wall of Steeple Claydon Church on which he wishes the coats of arms of his and his wife to be put along with the time when they died and their ages and some other inscription relating to him and his family such as the Executor shall think proper. As for his temporal estate he gives to his loving [great] nephew Charles Webb his heirs and assigns all his land at Steeple Claydon and Broughton both in Buckinghamshire as well as his land in Berkhamsted St. Peter in the County of Hertford and at Studham in Bedford. He gives an annuity of twenty five pounds a year to his loving niece Elizabeth [Chaloner] Webb widow and the mother of the said Charles Webb to be paid to her during the term of her natural life by the said Charles Webb his heirs or assigns clear of all taxes and deductions whatsoever. He gives to his loving nephew Edward Smith and his loving nieces Elizabeth Smith, Mary Babb [?], and Ruth Fowler [?] the sum of fifty pounds a piece to be paid to them by the said Charles Webb [these are his sister Christian (Chaloner) Jordan's married daughters]. He also gives to his several nieces and nephews: William Webb, Elizabeth Webb the younger, Edward Harper, Charles Harper, William Harper, Richard Harper, and Philip Harper the sum of thirty pounds a piece to be paid to them by his executor. He gives to his good cousin Doctor Robert Furtlington [?] the sum of twenty pounds. To his niece Elizabeth [Chaloner] Webb widow his gold watch and chain his silver pint mug and silver salver with Robert Drew's name on it. Also his horse and chaise and harness and all things belonging to them and his 'poor little dog' \_\_\_\_\_. To his niece Mary Webb his yellow bed that he commonly lies in and all the bedding with two pair of pillows and his chest of drawers but not what is in them and also his small diamond ring. He also gives to William Wray and his wife; William Harper the elder and his wife, eldest daughter the said Elizabeth Webb widow. Also the said Edward, William, Charles, Richard and Philip Harper, William Webb, Elizabeth Webb the younger, Catherine Webb, and Mary Webb, Mary Babb [?], and Ruth Fowler [?], Mr John ? his Apothecary and his wife a Guinea Ring each. And he desires that the said William Harper senior, Edward Harper, William Webb, John Fowler and John Babb of Berkhamsted ... and the minister of Steeple Claydon they each may have a silk hatband and a pair of shammy gloves. Also he desires that Elizabeth (Chaloner) Webb widow, William Harper's wife, Elizabeth, Catherine and Mary Webb and Mr Fowler's wife may have each a pair of Shammy gloves He asks that his executor distributes three pounds worth of Bread among the poor of

Steeple Claydon. He gives to his Maid Servant and Man Servant or boy who may be living with him at the time of his death the sum of four pounds to buy themselves mourning and the manservant is to have a hatband and a pair of gloves And lastly he gives to his loving nephew Charles Webb all the residue of his estate not otherwise distributed in the manner stated above. He signs.

The will was proved by Charles Webb on 9<sup>th</sup> April 1766. However the estate was not administered until 18<sup>th</sup> April 1807 because Charles Webb died intestate and so the estate passed to his sister Elizabeth (Webb) (Harper) Sheldon wife of John Sheldon. As noted above, Elizabeth was formerly married to Charles Harper.

Occasionally in *The Verney Letters*, and also mentioned in various wills, is Christian (Chaloner) Jordan sister of Charles the Verneys' steward, William the parson, and Edward RN. She would seem to have had four daughters viz. Ruth who married a man named John Fowler, Mary who married a man named John Babb, and Elizabeth who married Edward Smith. Assuming some of these went on to have issue, then it may be that there are further 'Chaloner' descendants through this female 'Jordan' line as well as the Harper line.

HERE ENDS  
PART ONE